

Introduction

Reputation, Reputation, Reputation!

That's what he cared about.

Love , Respect and peace were not found at home.

He wanted us to walk straight while he was the opposite of straight.

If walls could talk they would be my witness.

Tears , sadness, pain , was what my mother experience everyday.

She tried by all means to hide it but beyond the fake smile I could see grief and sorrow.

She my was hero, my strength and joy.

She would sing lullaby for me every night when I go to sleep but immediately when she closed the main bedroom door, I could hear her mourning out of pain , violent sounds coming from there.

My sister would take me to her room and squeezed me tight and we would like listen to music on her laptop , sometimes she would take me for a ride at night.

I was not stupid I knew what was happening.

I was 8 years old that time and my sister was 19 while my brother was 15 years old that time.

As time goes things got worse!

I hated my father to the fullest, I even hated someone that looked liked him.
His presence made me want to vomit.

How can a man be so heartless?

A man of God?

What is Salvation kanye?

I even hated God!

Insert 1

"Luvano khawulezisa , soba late for icawa!" Yelled my mom looking upstairs.

My sister and I were finishing eating.

" Nani khawulezisani" Said my father looking at me and Thobile.

Luvano slowly walk down the stairs.

Luvano: Mama ndiyazicaphukela ezihlangu.

It was those sharp point white shoes.

Tata: uphangelaphi?

Luvano: (Mumbling) Andi....

Tata: Uthini?

Him: Andithethi

He said walking to the dining table.

Tata: Its already late , grab a fruit!

Luvano dragged his feet as we walked out the door .

We walked to the car sakhwela sonke.

There was silence in the car till we arrived at Church.

Some two ushers approach the car and waited for us to open the door, they were all smiles so I guess we should also smile , playing the pastors kids role.

They greeted us and took my parents Bible and my mother's bag and we followed behind them.

Luvano always took the back seat , unfortunately I and my sister we were forced to be at the praise and worship team.

It was still intersection , I don't want to lie, I didn't know what to pray for. I had no words to utter, tears just rolled out of my eyes, bendinesigaqa aphemqaleni.

" You are Alpha and Omega.

We worship you alone

You are worthy to be praised....

We give you all the Glory...."

I started to sing, with tears in my eyes.

I was hurting deep down , Brother Mzi took the song since I was crying. I could not help myself.

Bendiminxekile , ndisiva buhlungu. Thinking of what happened last night.

All I could see was the picture of my mother covering her face , begging him to stop but he wouldn't listen. Calling her stupid ,useless , simuncu somfazi.

Thobile gave me a hug , I could see she also wanted to cry but she held back her tears.

An hour later...

Pastor Silo (My father) was standing behind the pulpit with a mic in his hands, preaching.

Him: No body can serve God without love. We must love one other as Christ Jesus did...

I looked down as I was sitting behind him with the team.

He was making me angry, what does he know about love?

After church...

I greeted everyone then went to wait at the car. I leaned back with earphones on my ears .

Someone smack me on my thighs so hard that they even feel like they were burning.

I lifted my head to look ngomsindo.

" Hleleli ntoni aphe motweni? go join your age group , ungandibangeli isicefe!"

Said my father with a furious face then he faked a smile when he turned back to the people.

I rubbed my thighs as I was walking out, I locked the car handed the keys back kuMama.

I went to join the teenagers with a fake smile.

Lihle: Are you done with your maths assignment?

I nodded, we were at the same school.

Later on , we went back home.

My father was yelling at me , he even wanted to beat me for crying at church.

Him: Kutheni undijongisa?

Mama: Rhadebe yehlisa umoya

Luvano went upstairs looking pissed off.

Tata: Buliliswa yintoni?

Thobile: Behlelwe nguMoya

Ndingase mince, I hated Sundays kakhulu.

My father looked at me then he walked upstairs cursing.

We all released a breath of relief. My mother holding on her chest with one hand.

Few weeks later...

It was the beginning of winter, early April.

The weather was cold outside and kuchaphaza.

My mother came to fetch Luvano and I from school. Luvano was doing grade 12 while I was doing grade 8 .

My sister yena was doing Bsc at NMMU doing her second last year.

Mama: Molweni how was school?

Luu: Boring

Mama: Luvano you in grade 12 pull your socks okanye you gonna fail

Him: I don't care

Mama: Luvano mntanam , ungakulinge thethe nam kwelohlobo

Him: Xolo Mama

Mama: You better study ngoba Tatakho ufuna distinctions...

Luu: Mxxm...

Then he looked through the window

Mama: Wena Onika?

Me: School was okay then looked at the window as well.

Luu: Mama unyamezele ntoni?

Mama: Luvano please don't start!

Luvano: Can't wait to Go to varsity next year and I'm going to UJ

Mama: Your father would never approve that

Him: I don't give a f*CH...

My brother had anger issues his always aggressive.

Mama: Awunambheko wena

Him: Lityala likabani elo? Lelam?

We got home, Luvano went straight upstairs.

I slowly followed him , I got to my room and did my homework. I was not even hungry.

After doing my home work , I fell asleep.

Then I was awoken by a scream.

" Ndiyaxolisa Tata!" Shouted Thobile.

" Ndizokubetha iphume lenje isesuswini! Ufuna ujongisa ban ngabantu? Funa kuthiwe andikwazi uqeqesha? "

I jump out of bed ran down. Luvano grabbed me by the arm.

Him: Don't

He pulled me closer

" Uzoyomqomfa lomntana Thobile uyandiva? "

I was looking at my sister with tears in my eyes. I noticed blood that she was covered in blood ngezantsi as she was trying to get up. Luvano closed my eyes and took me to his room.

To be continued...

Insert 2

My father is heartless bathong!

How could he be so selfish?

I know sex before marriage is a sin but to kill an innocent baby is something else. I mean like Thobile was 24 years and old enough .

Hayi suka!!! She didn't deserve that. I wish He could burn in hell. I hated him with all of my heart ,after seeing what he has done to Thobile.

Luvano took me to his room , trying to distract me so that I may forget about what happened.

Him: PlayStation or Movies?

I looked at him

Me: I'm not a child anymore!

Him: I know

Me: Then stop treating me like one!

Him: I'm still older then you , so watch your tone young lady!

Me: I'm tired of this family! I'm tired of everything. I wish I was born from another family!

Him: You don't mean that right?

Me: I mean it! what kind of a father abort his own grand child? No this man is sick, he is mentally disturbed... I hate him!

Tears accept my eyes, Luvano held me tight

Him: Ma'Oni, don't cry ntwana...

I cried even more

He rubbed my back with his warm hands, shushing me.

His phone rang as he was busy calming me down.

He let go with one arm and reach for his phone at his back pocket of his jean.

Him: Hello...Ndilaphe ndlini...Baby I'm in a middle of something... Can I call you back later pharuza?... Yabonake ! I don't entertain madness!

He hung up the phone

He held me tight again

Me: Thandi?

Him: Ewe

Me: You gonna marry her?

Him: I'm still young to consider about those things

Me: Kodwa wenza izeka zeka naye?

He broke from my embrace

Him: Awuse! Uyithathaphi lento uyithethayo?

Me: Kodwa you said to her yesterday ubawela izeka zeka? I over heard you

Him: Kancane wena, kutheni ingathi vuthiwe nje? Entlek kutheni ingathi uyaphapha nje?

Me: Kodwa ndithetha inyani? Sex before marriage is a sin

Him: Says who?

Me: The Bible

Him: Even God had sex before marriage kuba ke ibible ingafuni uthetha izimanga kwathiwa uMariya umithiswe ngumoya. Poor Joseph kwafuneka ebambe amalahle.

I was shocked at what my brother said , my mouth was wide open.

Me: Bhuti!

Him: Yintoni?

Me: No

Him: Kodwa ndithetha inyani?

Me: Hayi you need serious prayers, FIRE!

I said as I was reaching out my hand

Him: Holy spirit!

Then he smiled showing his beautiful white teeth and dimples.

I sat on edge of the bed

Me: Is she gonna be okay?

Him: Masithembe

Me: I wish, he could die

Him: Be careful of what you wish for, because it may come to reality

Me: Who cares?

Him: Remember what the Bible says... About negative thoughts about someone else, or should I remind you?

Me: Asikho isidingo!

The door swing open after a while and we turned to look.

" Dinner is ready" Said mom standing at the door.

Luvano: I'm not hungry

Me: Me too

Mama: You know how your father is , please don't make things worse.

Luvano: We are coming

Mama: Okay

Luvano: So should we pretend as if nothing happened?

Mom looked down

Luvano: Uzonyamezela kude kubenini Mama? This man is breaking you and destroying you. I can see you not happy, uhleleli ntoni? Why don't you just leave?

Mama: Luvano ndiyakucela bhuti not now

Luvano: NCA NCA NCA

He stood up and grabbed me by the hand.

Him: Masambe

We went down stairs , Dad was already sitting at the dinning table. We took our seat and Dad blessed the food.

We ate in silence, all you could hear was the fork and knife and plates.

Dad broke the silence

Him: Luvano have you applied yet?

Luu: No

Dad: Ngoku ulinde ntoni?

Luu: I don't want to do Engineering, I want to do Law...

Him: Uzoyenza iLaw mhlawaze waphangela ngemali Yakho, as for now uzokwenza engineering.

Luu: Dad you being unfair

Dad: Do you know what is unfair? Is for you to repeat two grades, you supposed to be doing your second year now eUniversity!

Luu: Ingenaphi keleyo?

Dad: Ungandiqali

Luu: Xabekutheni?

Mama: Luvuyo!

He stopped talking and stared at his plate.

Dad: Yazi , andiyazi noba unyoko wayekucholaphi ngoba you nothing like me! All you do is bring me disgrace, you not worthy ...you not worthy to be called my son!

Luu: You right I'm nothing like you and don't even wish to be like you mbulali ndini!

Dad: Sundiqhela Luvano!

He grabbed luvano ngesixhanti

Luvano: Don't start what you won't finish...

Mama: Khaya...luvano...plea...se .

She was running short of breath, I searched for her inhaler and found it at the main bedroom.

I inhaled her the drug , she was looking up not blinking an eye. One hand on the chest.

Luvano stormed out of the house, while Dad went upstairs.

Me: Mama how do you feel?

Her: Be...better better

This was too much for me. I helped my mom to the bedroom, where Dad was laying on top of the bed.

Her: Enkosi Sisi

I left and to check on my sister who was sobbing.

Her: I need to be alone Onika!

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Please go sisi, I'm not in the mood.

She was really hurting and that broke my heart.

Few weeks later...

It was a Friday morning. The weather was cold outside.

I wore my tracksuit and tight my hair into a neat bun. Packed my school books inside my bag.

Then I went to have breakfast

Me: Molweni!

I greeted as I took my seat

Dad: Uleli njani mntanam?

Me: Kakuhle

Dad: Luvano , you can use my car for the day, Me and your mother we gonna use the same car

Luu: Okay

Dad: Don't worry you get yours soon

Luvano faked a smile, Dad and Luvano made peace after what happened that night.

Mom and dad left.

Luvano: This guy is sick

Me: Let's not talk about him please

Him: Okay!

We drove to school

Him: let's go and pick up Thandi

Me: Ezinyoka??

Him: It's not far!

Me: What if Dad finds out?

Him: He won't

Me: Okay xawusitsho

We picked up Thandi ko17 then we drove straight to school.

Luvano parked the car then sahluka.

Luu: See you after school

Me: Sure

I went to my friend Bulie , who was waiting for me

Me: Mchana!

Her: Pumpkin

We shared a hug. She was a yellow bone with very short hair.

Her: Dzamm umhle Bhuti wakho, Mona phantsi

Me: Bullet hayi, suka phana! He is 20 years old and wena unangaphi? 14?

Her: Age is just a number

Me: I'm so scared of uloyiko!

She giggled

Her: Uzoba nayo nini boyfriend?

Me: Boyfriend at the age of 13? Hayi Tshini!

Her: Sindisiwe kanene!

Me: Nangoku!

After school we went back home.

Mom and Dad were not back yet, I Went to my bedroom and Thobile was not home yet.

Luvano came to my room

Him: Ma'Oni , I need a favor

Me: Listening

Him: I'm going to fetch Thandi

Me: And then?

Him: She is going to spend the night here

Me: What? Dad is-

Him: He doesn't have to know

Me: Njani?

Him: I'm gonna fetch her now before Mom and Dad come back then lock her in my room.

Me: Yhoo

Him: All you have to do is to keep Mom and Dad away from my bedroom.

Me: How much?

Him: I'm gonna buy you BIS for two months

Me: Deal!

He smiled and blow me a kiss

Me: Psycho!

Him : Fuze wena!

He said walking out of the door.

To be continued...

Sorry about the errors, I'm tired to edit.

Insert 3

When I was done doing my homework, I went town stairs to the lounge, Gloria(House helper) was busy ironing our clothes.

Her: There is food in the kitchen

I shook my head as I throw myself on the sofa.

Me: I'm not hungry

Her: Okay sisi

I watched Trace , singing along.

Gloria: You young stars...

I giggled as I continued to weep my hair.

Her: You remind me of my daughter... she was just like you!

Me: was?

She looked away

Me: Gloglo?

Her: She is gone?

Me: Gone? Where to?

Her: Wasweleka

She said in a low tone, I felt saddened.

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Akhonxaki

Me: What happened?

Her: Seizure...

Me: Oh , okay

I didn't know what to say

Her: Bexhozula kakhulu...one afternoon when I came back from work, I found her laying on the floor hopeless.

When we arrived at the hospital it was already too late, my little girl was gone, she was gone.

A lump developed on my throat and I holding back tears.

Me: How old was she

Her: She was your age...Sometimes I miss her, miss her cute smile

Luvano walked in holding Thandi by the hand.

Luu: GloGlo, did I tell you that , le soft what what isentloko iyakufanela?

Me: Soft dread

Luu: Yeke! Soft Dread.

Gloria: Luvano ufuna ntoni?

Luu: Yayazi mosi...

Gloria: Luvano you playing with fire

Luu: Baby go wait in my room

Thandi walked upstairs, it was not her first time visiting us but its her first time sleeping over.

Luu: Please Gloglo..

Gloria: Okay, but ungandifaki

Luvano smiled and went up wih the stairs, half way he stopped and turn back.

Him: Mntase , ndicela wenzele Thandi into yokutya!

Me: Yathanda thuma kodwa!

Him: Khahambe nozikhhalazo!

I dragged my feet to the kitchen, I made her a sandwich and poured juice.

I walked to his room with a tray. I knocked at the door, Luvano opened at the third knock.

Me: Ina

He smiled

Him: Enkosi

Me: Whatever

I turned around

Him: Give me a signal when Papa monster is here

Me: Sure

I went back to the lounge but Gloria was not there.

I changed to channel 0 , immediately when I heard car doors bang outside, I changed to One gospel lifting my hands pretending to be worshipping.

Dad walked in together noMama

Him: Hallelujah

Mama: Jesus!

Me: Iyandivuselela lengoma!

Dad: (Singing) There is power in the name of Jesus

Mama: To break every chain to break every chain.

Yhuyu ndingase dikwe

Later on...

Mom set the table and served us food.

Mama: Vano bless the food

Him: Father blessed this food in the name of Jesus , Amen

Us: Amen

I immediately ate my food

Dad: Its 18:15 and Thobile is not back?

Mama: I'm sure kukho into embambileyo

Dad: Thobile is crossing the line again

Luu: Oh please Dad! Thobile is 24 year old!

Dad: Andithethi nawe

Luu: Nam ndiyakuxelela!

Thobile walked in and we all turned and looked at her.

Dad: Uvelaphi?

T: Looking for an apartment

Mama: Are you moving out?

T: Yes

Dad: Ngunotshe! Uzophuma ngomtshato apha, not the other way around.

T: I'm not asking you, I'm telling you! I'm Tires of this pathetic life! I'm tired of pretending! I want to live my own life!

She was holding back tears

Mama: Thobile calm down

Her: There is nothing to calm down about... I'm leaving!

I could see my mom hurting.

She went upstairs

Luvano: Onika let's go to my room

He pulled me by the arm

Dad was shouting

We entered Luvano's room and locked the door behind.

Thandi was laying half naked , she felt embarrassed and covered herself.

Me: Is she really leaving ?

Luu: Yes, please don't be mad at her

Me: I'm gonna miss her

Him: Oh kanene wena ngothanda uzibaxa izinto. She is not going to America!

Me: But still

Him: You will visit her often

Me: Promise me that you not gonna leave me too

Him: I'm going to varsity next year njena ntwana

Me: Mxm

Him: Promise to text and call you every day

Me: Pinky promise?

Him: Pinky promise

He kissed my forehead and he turned to Thandi.

Him: Ugrand?

She nodded

Him: Okay

We watched a movie at his laptop then later on wandigxotha.

Luckily Dad didn't notice anything. Luvano left with Thandi the following morning. But the strange thing I didn't see mom in the morning . I left for school without seeing Her.

After school ...

Thobile's car was parking by the school gate.

I just got excited , I don't know why.

Me: See you ngomso mchana

Bulie: Sure

We shared a hug

I walked to the car, opened the door and got in.

T: Ntondo!

I smiled

Me: Sisi

Her: Uphi uLuvano?

Me: Andimazi

Her: Okay

She started the car and I put on my seatbelt.

Her: How was school?

Me: Normal I guess

Her: You mad at me?

Me: Did you have to leave?

Her: I'm tired mntase, I'm tired to be told what to do and what to do.

Me: I understand

Her: I love you Onika , you are my younger sister.

Me: I love you too

We drove to greenacres and went straight to Debonairs. We ordered pizza

Me: Mmmmm

Her: Onika ngothanda ukutya!

Me: Yayazi mosi!

Her: Ummmm... Onika

Me: C?

Her: Please take care of uMama

Me: How?

Her: Show her love

Me: Okay

Her: Please Hlubikazi.

Me: I will...

Some guy joined us, he was good looking.

Guy: Molweni

We: Hello

T: Onika this is Masixole, my boyfriend

I nodded

T: Baby this is Onika my younger sister.

Masxi : Nice to meet you Loza

I smiled then said " Same here ".

Later on ...

Thobile dropped me home, dad's car was not parked outside. I assumed that he was not yet back.

I was in a good mood, I walked in all smiles.

Luvano was laying on the sofa, watching TV.

Me: Bhuti!

Her: Uvelaphi nawethu?

Me: Greenacres noSisi

Him: Hope you telling the truth

Me: Hayi kengoku!

Him: Zuthi nyayi!

Me: Uphi uMama?

Him: Upstairs

Me: Sleeping?

Him: She has a headache

Me: Headache?

Him: Please don't go check on her

Me: Why not?

Him : She needs rest

Me: Did he beat her again?

Him:

Me : Sies!

Him: It will break her heart if you go check on her. She don't want you to her in that condition.

Me: Mxxm!

I ran upstairs and throw myself on top of the bed, tears fell automatically.

Why is life so unfair?

To be continued...

Insert 4

One year few months later...

It was was early January. The summer holiday was nearly over, there was only few days for the schools to reopen.

I was so excited because I was going to grade10.

Luvano was gonna do his second year, he was studying at UCT in Cape Town.

He had a silver greyish Toyota Yaris.

Thobile was engaged, she was getting married on the 14th of June. I was so excited and couldn't wait.

Dad didn't approve the marriage idea at first but Thobile didn't give him a choice.

Because he cared about what people gonna say, he approved.

Well...

It was a Saturday morning, the sun was blazing outside.

Mom had a early Saturday class with her grade 12 class.

She was a teacher at Magxaki High.

Let me give you a short description of my mother.

She was light in complexion, with tick eyebrows and eyelashes.

She had a beautiful smile, a smile of a goddess.

She was a little tall with dimples, just like my brother and sister. I was the only one without dimples.

She was wearing size 36 and had long relax hair.

She was kind, loving and caring with a soft and warm heart. She was allergic to pork and loved Lamb.

She had false teeth with a L gold teeth at the front.

Enough about my mother.

Mom left the house and we were left with Dad.

Dad: Luvano didn't come back home last night

Me: Yhoo

Him: This boy needs serious prayers

Me : I guess

Him: Please don't be like your brother

Me: I won't

Him: I love you Onika.... I want the best for you guys

Me:...

Luvano walked in the door yawning.

Dad: Kwedini usukaphi?

Luu: Ubuzwa ngubani wena?

Dad: Luvano!

Luvano walked up the stairs, not giving a damn.

Dad: Luvano come back here now!

" Izakum wena! " He said as he reached upstairs.

Dad was flaming

Him: See what I'M talking about?

He stood up and stormed out of the room.

My phone rang, it was bulie

Me: Bullet

Her: dutyuuuu

I giggled

Her: what you doing today?

Me: I'm going to church at 3pm

Her : Boring... Let's go watch a movie at greenacres

Me: I doubt my father will allow me

Her : Haibo!

Me: I will try though

Her : please

Me: Don't get your hopes high

Her :Meet at the Mall at 12 pm

Then she hung up

I went to look for my dad. I found him at the study.

I knocked then opened the door.

My heart was beating so fast, my hands were even shaking.

I really feared my father, like bendimoyika nyani.

Her : What do you want?

Those words made even scared, my eyes were blinking uncontrollably.

Me: Ta... Ta

I started stuttering

Him: I don't have all day

Me: Can I... I go to... to green greenacres, with Bulie

Her: Don't you have important things to do?

I looked down

Him: What's so special eGreenacres?

I swallowed very hard, my body was feeling hot.

Me: We gonna watch a movie

He looked at me

Him: Movie??? Awuyi ecaweni?

Me: Ndi ndiyaya

Him: Okay

I didn't know what that meant,

I stood at that position without uttering a word.

Him: Anything else?

I shook my head and slowly walked out closing the door behind.

I went to lock myself at my room.

I was angry at my father.

I lay on my back looking at the ceiling, think all kind of rubbish.

After a while...

Someone knocked at my door. I pretended as if I was sleeping.

" What time are you going to greenacres? " Asked my father .

Mxxm this man Mara!

I didn't respond. "Onika! " he knocked again at the door.

Me: Ngo12!

I yelled

Him: Okay, I'm gonna take you

Me: Okay

I rolled my eyes as I replied , I reached for my phone and taxed Bulie.

Me: I'm coming

She replied with a excited face

Me: My father is taking me, will call you or sigqithe ngawe?

Her: No need my brother is taking me

Me: Fine

I lazily stood up and went to the bathroom. I took a quick but and applied some lotion.

I was not sure what to wear, so I wore my black dress with my gold sandals. I tight my hair into a neat bun.

Took my sling bag ndafaka tissues and my labello.

I put some perfume and tighten up my room.

Luvano was sitting at the lounge.

Him: Tshisaaaa, iyaphi indlela?????

Me: Greenacres

Him: Uyothini?

Me: Ndiyothenza!

Him: Ungandiqheli

Ndathula, Dad walked in

Dad : Are you ready?

I nodded

We walked to the car , sakhwela and we drove.

I called Bulie and told her that I was on my way. She told me that she was already there waiting for me.

We arrived there, Dad dropped me and gave me a R200 .

Him : Will come fetch you at 14:30

Me: Okay

We said our good byes then I walked inside the mall.

I met Bulie by Shoprite .

Her: Finally

We shared a Hug then we walked to KFC, bought a milkshakes. We went to buy tickets and popcorn.

Later on ...

We window shopping, we also bought some jewellery at Vibes.

Bulie's brother called saying his outside.

We walked to the parking , we approached his car.

Me: We gonna wait for my dad first

Bulie: No problem, let's me tell my brother.

She opened the door and talked to his brother .

Her: Ngena

I didn't ask many questions, I got in.

Her: Bhuti uti he will take you home

Me: Okay

He turned and looked at me

Him: Unjani Onika??? Kuyakhulwa Kodwa.

I was speechless, Wow that dude was handsome.

I smiled

Him: Did you guys enjoyed yourselves?

Bulie: Kakhulu bhuti Yhooooooooo!

Bulie went into details, ebalisela ubhuti wakhe.

He was light in complexion, tallish, he was a soccer player. Swag behamba nayo straight.

He looked me through the mirror

Him: Why you so quiet Onika?

I looked down, because I couldn't face him.

I giggled ndixakene nento.

Him : You still shy? Feel free baby girl I don't bite.

He made me shy more and put me in a awkward position.

We arrived eZwide and he dropped me in front of the gate.

Bulie : Will see you, when I see you

Me: Sure, I had fun though

Her: Same here

Me: Bullet

Bulie & PK: Dutyuuuu

I giggled, Bulie's brother 's name was Phakamani but they called him PK.

Me: Bye

PK: Sharp!

I opened the gate luckily I met dad by the gate.

Me:Ndiziswe Ngubhuti kaBulie

Him: Let's me take you to church then

I went to fetch My bible then went to church.

After church, we went back home.

I was not hungry so I went straight to my bedroom.

I couldn't stop thinking about PK. I know he was older then me. But when I think about him, my body experienced an unpredictable feeling.

I never felt this way before, what is happening to me?????

To be continued...

Insert 5

I woke up the following morning.

It was a sunny Sunday morning, another day that the Lord has made, for us to rejoice and be glad in it.

I opened the curtain and window, the sunlight filled the room as I inhaled some fresh air.

" Igama leNkosi malibongwe... (Singing)"

I was in a good mood, feeling super fresh and happy.

I went downstairs to join my parents in prayer.

Dad shared a scripture from the bible before we prayed.

Dad : Uphi uLuvano?

Me: Andimazi

Dad: Okay let us pray

We'll joined hands together as I sang a song of worship, then they backup singing

Him: Okay let us pray

We closed our eyes and bow our heads as we started to pray.

After the praying session.

We went to our separate direction and prepared to go to church.

I took out my black pencil skirt , black tank top and my turquoise blazer.

I iron my dress and took a long bath because time was by my side.

I slowly applied lotion on my body, while I was imagining about PK.

I dressed up , comb my hair into a neat bun.

I admired myself as I was looking at the mirror, smiling non stop.

I put on my black stilettos and took my Bible and note book.

I was so happy and don't ask me why ngoba nam andiyazi.

I walked down stairs, made myself cereal.

As I was eating, Luvano walked down the stairs holding Thandi by hand.

Oh Bawo, yaqala inkathazo Madoda, ndabamba amazinyo.

Dad was busy fixing his color with the help of mom.

I wish I could just vanish into thin air.

Dad saw Luvano and his facial expression changed immediate.

Luvano : Molweni

Tandi : Molweni

She was embarrassed not knowing where to look.

I could see dad boiling, I mean like enomsindo.

Luvano walked out the door together with his girlfriend.

Bhuti wam ke uyakwazi uphola aphe head office.

Mama: Easy myeni wam

Dad: What will people say? What will the church say?

Mama: Uphethwe sisStage

Dad : At the age of 22????

Mama : He will come around

Dad: He is gonna ruin my reputation

Mama : Reputation???? Is that all you care about? Khaya lethu ndidikiwe yilento yakho!

Dad: Don't raise your voice at me!

Mom: why?

Mom and Dad got into a serious argument.

Ndathi ndijonge leyo, Dad pushed mom against the wall.

I ran to mom

Me: Daddy please

Dad : Don't ever disrespect me like that, understood?

He was showing a scary look

Mom didn't reply

Dad: I'm the head of this house not the other way around!

He wore his silver blazer, " Masambeni! "

He said as he was walking out the door.

I helped mom to stand straight and help her carry her bag to the car.

Me: Are you okay?

She nodded feeling embarrassed

We got into the car and drove to church.

There was awkward silence in the car, my excitement turned to sadness.

We arrived at church and I put on my mask of pretence.

I joined the worshipping team , while my parents took the front row seats.

I smiled for my sister who was sitting at the left side row next to Masixole.

We sang praise, dancing, lead by the MC.

Minutes later...

My father took over, he started singing "Usathana akanawo wandla, akanawo, akanawo... "

He was smiling, rejoicing as if nothing happened.

Him: Hallelujah!

Church : Amen!

Him: Hallelujah, hallelujah, hallelujaaaaash!

Church : Amen!

And the keyboard was making a joyful sound.

Him: God is good!

Church : All the time!

Him: All the time!

Church : God is good!

Dad : Hallelujah...before I start preaching. I would like my daughter Thobile together with Masixole to come join me at the front.

Thobile and Mxolisi came to the front.

Dad told the whole church that Thobile is getting married.

Everyone made joyful sound, whistling enge senamatshamba uTata mntakabawo.

Me:(Singing)Lord you are worthy, worthy, worthy to be praised...

The church sang along full of excitement. Then he told them the date and wedding colours,

He preached afterwards.

After church...

We got home , Luvano was watching soccer.

Dad: Luvano undidelile wena!

Luvano : Xabekutheni ngoku?

Dad: Ungenisa amahule indlini yam

Luvano : Bendithe ndenzele flat phandle awavuma, so I had no choice

Dad: Sex before marriage is sin before God

Luvano : Do I look like a give a damm?

Mama : Luvano Silo!

Him: Xolo mama

Dad: If you don't obey my rules , then you give me no choice but to kick you out of my house

Luu: Kusekhaya apha, I'm going nowhere!

Mama : Luvano watch your tone

Him: Great!

He walked upstairs, cursing. I didn't like what my brother was turning to.

I also walked upstairs, I'm just tired of this dramatic house.

I called Bulie

Her: Hello mchana

Me: Unjani pumpkin?

Her: I'm good you?

Me: I'm fabulous, but missing you

Her: Yhoo, I miss you too

Me: Don't you want to come visit me?

Her: I would love that! Is your dad around?

Me: Yes

Her: Great, your dad is cool, I mean like really cool, except that he is strict. But further he is awesome, I wish he was my Dad. You very lucky to have a loving family.

Me: Yeah

That just broke my heart, people think we are a happy family, while we are the opposite.

Her: I will ask my brother to come drop me

My heart began to beat so fast, a smile automatically appeared on my face.

Me: Okay!

I jumped up, ran to my parents room.

I took a deep breath then knocked

Mom: Ngena

I opened the door

Me: Mama, Tata.

They attentively looked at me

Me: Bulie is on her way

Tata: Uzothoni?

Mama : Okay sweetie

Dad: Okay

Mom was staring at him.

I went to change to something comfortable, fixed my hair. I wanted to look beautiful.

Then I went to wait outside, pretending to be doing something. I just wanted to see PK.

They arrived later on after a while of waiting. My heart was beating non stop, I didn't know how to react.

Bulie got off then PK shouted HELLO Oniez!

I blushed yhoo

Me: Molo bhuti

Him: Bullet, call me when you done.

She nodded,

We walked inside, we sat at the lounge.

Watched a movie and chatted.

Dad went to buy us snacks, pretending to be the loving and caring father.

Ndabe ndimice, uLuvano angathethi into ephuma ecaleni.

Later on PK came to fetch Bulie and shame, he was not interested in me. That made me sad, he was treating me as his little sister Mxxxxxxxxxm.

To be continued...

Insert 6

Few day later...

It was a Tuesday morning, the first day of school.

The morning birds were making marvelous sounds outside, I could tell its a sunny day without checking through the window.

I stretched my arms as I yawned opening my eyes.

I reached for my phone, under the pillow and checked the time and it was 6am.

I stood up and made my bed, opened the curtain and window.

The sunlight filled the room, giving me hope for the new day.

I was excited because I was starting a new grade and couldn't wait to arrive at school.

I felt more happy when I was outdoors then when I'm indoors.

I went to take a bath and came back wrapping a towel.

Mom walked in as I was reaching for my body lotion.

Her: New Year, new beginnings. I must say, I'm impressed .

I smiled

Her: This is a sign that you growing up baby.

Me: Yabonake

Her: Ndiyancoma

Me: I'm turning 15 in few months and I must learn to do things on my own

Her: That's the spirit

Me: Yes

Her: Here....

She handed me my uniform

Me: Thanks

Her: You must learn to iron your own clothes

Me: you beat me to it njena! Stop doing it and I will do it.

Her: Okay xawusitsho

Then she walked out the room, I finished dressing up then took my school back and went down stairs.

Dad was eating breakfast

Me: Morning Dad

He smiled

Him: Good morning my princess, how do you feel?

I took a seat opposite him

Me: Excited yhoo

Him: This a new step to your future... Make me proud

Me: I will

Him: I can imagine you in 10 years to come... Dr Silo

He emphasized the last words, I was so annoyed because I never wanted to be a Doctor. I just put on a fake smile

Him: I love you and I want the best for you okay?

I nodded as Mom placed my breakfast in front of me.

Few minutes later...

Mom drove me to school, she dropped me in front of the gate.

Her: Have a blessed day

Me: Same to you mama

Then I placed a kiss on her cheek and she smiled.

She gave me a R20 note and said our final goodbyes.

I got off the car and started walking inside the school premises.

I looked around for Bulie but couldn't find her. I sat at our usual spot so that when she arrives, she can find me.

I plugged my earphones and started logging on to Mixit.

Someone tapped on my shoulder, I turned to look and it was some guy. I assume he was new because I never saw him before.

I unplugged my earphones and give him my full attention.

Him: Don't stare at me like that, you making me nervous.

Well I had a problem, most people were scared to approach me because bendithanda umfinga intshiya. It was happening naturally, I couldn't control it. So that is why I didn't have many friends, they thought ndiphakamile.

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: Well Hi.. I'm Simpiwe, I'm new here , May I ask what your name is?

Me: Onika

Him: Onika, well I come from Cape Town and I'm doing grade 10 this year. I don't know anyone here, so do you mind if I chill with you?

Me: Okay

He sat next to me

Him: So are you originally from here?

Me: Mmmm... Well I was born here but my parents are from East London.

Him: Wow, how is life this side?

Me: I don't know

He gave me a dead stare

Me: What?

Him: Awukho serious

Me: I'm always indoors, I only go out when I come to school or go to church. Him: Are you for real? Don't you like go out, I mean like with friends?

Me: I only have one friend Bulelwa and we hardly go out.

Him: Yhoo, are your parents strict lawei?

Me: My father is a pastor, so that explains everything

Him: Shuuu... Ndingafa

Me: Ja neh?

Him: By the way, which grade are you doing?

Me: I'm doing grade 10 as well this year

Him: Nice, which subject?

Me: Physics, Life science, Maths and Geo.

Him : Wow, same here!

Me: Wow

The bell rang and we went to assemble, ndimane ndibheka bheka hoping to see Bulie.

Later on we went to our classes. Simphiwe and I were in one class obvious Grade 10 B .

We didn't do anything the whole day, you all know the first day.

Bulie didn't come to school that day and I didn't not know why.

After school...

Simphiwe walked me to the gate.

Him: Mmm...are you taking a taxi or what?

Me: My brother or mom is gonna come fetch me

Him: Brother? How old is he?

Me: 22

Him: Oh... Is he studying or yaspana?

Me: He is a student, funde UCT

Him: Oh Wow

Me: I'm gonna miss him yazi, he is leaving next week.

Him: Ncoooo

I giggled

Luvano arrived

Me: Here comes my brother

Him: Okay... I guess, I will see you tomorrow

Me: Sure

Him: Can I get a hug?

Me: Okay sure

We shared a hug Luvano hooted and we broke from each others embrace.

Him: See you tomorrow

" Sure " I replied opening the car door. Luu: Bekufuneke ndilinde lonto yenu mna?

Me: Ntoyethu?

Him: Yhoo caba ufuna uyitsho ngokwakho

Me: Heee hayi kengoku bhuti

Him: Unamakhwenkwe Onika ngoku?

Me: HAYI!

Him: Yintoni lantwana kuwe?

Me: Chomi yam Bhuti

Him: If I find out there is something more nethi. You will curse the day you were born

Me: I already curse the day I was born njena

Him: "O" zubengunompendulu

My brother is over protective Yhoo what is worse I don't even have feelings for Simphiwe.

We arrived home, I did my daily routine then later on I called Bulie.

Her: Hello

Me: Malini ungazi Eskolweni?

Her: No man look, there was a personal thing that was holding me back.

Me: Listening

Her: Will tell you tomorrow

Me: Whatever

We chatted for a while then we hung up.

I went downstairs and joined My family for supper. We went to sleep later on.

Weeks later...

There were few days left for the wedding. I was the maid of honor and was very excited ukogqitha sisi wam.

I was behind her every step of the way, giving her my help and services.

I wanted the best for wedding, I wanted it to be special.

Well...

The big day arrived, I never seen my sister beautiful like that. She looked like an angle.

The decoration and venue was gorgeous Yhoo.

Everything went well and according to plan, it was indeed a beautiful wedding.

My sister was now living in Warmer park with his Husband. She hardly visited us ever since she got married. She wouldn't come once a month or once in two months, but I don't blame her because I would have done the same if it was me.

Couple of months later...

It was early spring and was a Monday morning.

The wind was blowing heavy outside making funny sounds.

I prepared to go to school and did my daily morning routine.

As I walk downstairs, I noticed my Mom crying, I rushed to her.

She quickly wiped her tears when she saw me.

Me: Mama are you okay?

She nodded

Me: Mama you can talk to me about anything please.

Her: I will be fine princess, just wait here I will bring you breakfast okay?

She said faking a smile, pretending to be okay and that really troubled my heart.

She later took me to school and gave me lunch money.

Bulie was already waiting for me at our usual spot.

I approached her, I greeted and and we shared a hug.

Her: Are you okay?

I nodded

Me: Why?

Her: You look pale

Me: No I'm fine

Her: Okay then...Mmmm by the way Uphi na iSpain (Simpfiwe)

She said fixing her uniform and hair

Me: And then?

Her : Yhoo hayi mfazi ndizothini ungazilungisi?

Me: Hahaha, shame maarn mchana sisono esisakho .

Her: Don't worry wena, uzondifuna ngenkani

Me: Hahahhh...Just come clean, and tell him how you feel. Maybe he feels the same, who knows

Her: Yhoo, ndizomqala ngaphi?

Me: I don't know, but try

" Try what? " Asked Spain

Bulie felt embarrassed

Me: She wants to try some new hairstyle

Her: Oh, andizingeni. Buy the way ,why were you scarce this weekend? I tried to text you all weekend..

Me: I was busy man

Him: Namatshamba

Me: Nyan bobanje

Two guys came to us

Guy1: Usatekethisa Spain?

Spain : Izinto ezinjalo

Guy2: Umisile mos, andinothi hayi ba ngadicelele Mxit contact yalosisi

Spain : Hayi Ntwanaz not apha

Guy1: Apho enext door

Spain : Tshini Nanku phamkwakho, uyasiva isixhosa khululeka.

Guy1 : Ei wena kanjani Mfethu!

Spain : Kancane , by the way Onie mfethu sodibana eclassin

Me: Sure

Him: Ugrand nantsika.. khabize

Me: Bulie

Him: Ya Bulie

Her: Grand

Him: Sharp ke baby girl.

he then winked at me then he left with his friends.

After school...

Mom just dropped me home that afternoon and left again.

I did my homeworks, studied for a while. When I felt tired of studying, I started practicing songs for the church choir and read the bible.

Spain called me and told me to login to Mxit. We were very close but not that close to be lovers. We shared almost everything. He was funny and he always finds ways to cheer me up when I was feeling down. He never judged me, he accepted me the way I was with my mood swings.

He knew how to handle me and trust me bekwazi.

You be honest I didn't have feelings for him not even a little bit.

Later on...

It was past 9 pm and mom was not home yet. That was strange, I could see dad panicking, leaving plenty of messages because her phone was on voicemail.

I went to sleep later on.

Spain called me around 12pm, telling me that he can't fall asleep. Well chatted for a long while and I was sleepy vah.

As I was chatting to him, I heard a noise coming from downstairs.

Me: Spain, I'm sleepy now see you tomorrow at school

Him: Haibo

I hung up and got out of bed. I walked closer to the noise, I listen as I reach closer. It was Mom and Dad arguing, yelling at each other. I slowly slide down and sat down. Dad started beating mom, calling her all sort of names. I bowed down my head in between my legs while tears automatically fell down.

My heart broke into million tinny pieces, my body felt weak, Mom was crying begging for forgiveness. Her cry was like bad music on my ears. I could hear the sounds of the tool he was using to beat her ,reaching her flesh, the sound made me to cry more . Her voice went lower and lower, getting tired of screaming. She came to a point were she was only moaning out of pain.

To be continued...

Insert 7

I heard Dad's footsteps walking upstairs.

I quickly crawled back to my room and Dad passed my room ehambela phezulu.

When I heard the main bedroom's door slam, I waited for few seconds then I rushed downstairs to check on my mother.

I found her laying on the floor, struggling to stand up.

Me: Xolo mama

I said as I helped her stand on her feet. There were blood stains on the floor and her hair was a mess .

She was moaning out of pain as we walked up the stairs.

Me: Ndibize amapolisa?

Her : No, I'm gonna be fine

Me: Okay

"Onika erumini! " said my father's bold voice.

I was so angry at him , I stared at him with anger.

Him: ONIKA

Me: Please... Don't hurt her

Tears were flowing uncontrollably.

I slowly walked to my room, ndimane ndibheka .

I woke up the following morning.

Life seemed useless and meaning less. I hated the bitterness and hatred I carried in my heart.

Sometimes I wondered why does God hate me so much? Why did he give me a father like this?

Yes he has wealth, fame and reputation, but what about love?? Isn't love supposed to be the greatest gift of them all??

I suppose if Money could buy happiness, I would be the happiest person alive.

If Money could buy , I would build a fountain of Love.

If money could buy anything, I would be the happiest person.

Unfortunately, Love is deep, it is priceless and it is rare to find.

I made the bed and opened the curtain and windows. I stared at the outside world for a while, wondering kuzode kubenini?

When I was done with everything, I went on my knees.

I started talking to God, with anger and confusion.

Me: Heavenly father.... I come to this morning with a heavy heart. Please God help me! Please take Him away. I don't need him, we don't need him. Please heavenly father, I know nothing is impossible with you!

"Onika you gonna be late for school "

Yelled my father, yerr... I hate this guy.

Me: Coming

I said in a low tone

I took my school bag and phone.

I plugged my earphones as I walked downstairs.

He was waiting for me holding a cup of hot coffee.

This guy Mara! He is so full of himself, he pretends as if nothing happened.

He finished the cup then he took me to school.

He dropped me off at school and took out a R50 note.

Him: Here

Me: No thanks, I don't want it!

Him: Onika about....

Me: See you later

I open the door and got off, I walked straight not looking back.

Bulie was waiting for me, looking so happy.

Her: Chomi

Me: Hey

Him: What's up?

Me: Nothing, why?

Her : No, man... Sometimes is bothering you

Me: Headache

Her: Drink plenty of water

Me: Okay, I will

First break...

"Onika wait "

I turned to look, it was Simpiwe.

Him: Ndicela undilinde

I waited for him

Him: What's going and please don't lie...

He looked me deep in the eyes.

Me: What's your problem?

Him: Yinxaki!

I rolled my eyes

Him: I'm going nowhere, until you tell me what's eating you

This dude can nag yhoo

Me: Okay!!!! Fine! Here is it!

I told him everything, with tears escaping.

He pulled me closer and held me tight.

My heart was beating fast and I was sobbing.

He broke from my embrace

Him: Onika, look at me

I looked down

He lifted my head with his index finger then he wiped my tears.

Him: If you need someone to talk to, I will always be available .

He kissed my forehead, ndithi singajongwe bethunani.

He then place a kiss on my lips.

Him: I'm here for you okay?

I nodded

We walked to the tuck shop, he bought me a muffins and juice.

After school...

Dad didn't come to fetch me, so I got a lift from PK.

PK: How was school ladies?

Bulie : Normal

PK : Oniez?

Me: Okay

Him: Don't you want Ice cream?

We both said yes.

So we went to KFC

PK : Don't you want anything else?

Bulie : Nope

Me: Nope

They dropped me at my house. Dad was not yet back.

I didn't want to go home, I wishing could rewind the day.

I opened the gate and greeted Gloria, who was busy watering the plants.

I went straight upstairs to check on my mother.

She has been hiding in that room all day, I guessed it was Dad's ideas. She didn't go to work that day and was not planning to go the entire week .

Her face was swollen and she was in lots of pain, you can tell by the way she moaned.

I made her something to eat then did my homework.

Simpiwe called later on time check, how I was doing. We chatted for a long while then Dad arrived later on.

He didn't even explain it apologise for not picking me up.

He is such an asshole, sorry to say that.

Few months later....

It was early December and my brother was back.

It was always nice when he is around and Dad was not beating mos when he was around anymore. They would just argue then phelele apho.

I was going to Gr11 the following year and was too excited vah.

Well...

Mom and Dad left me with Luvano.

They traveled to East London, bekukho Mphanga.

What a relief and a break from drama.

It was a Saturday afternoon, I went out with Simpiwe and Bulie.

We went to the movies , did some shopping.

I was really enjoying myself, we ordered pizza later.

PK came to fetch us later on.

Him: I can see you enjoyed yourselves

Bulie : You have no idea

PK : Lantwana ifuna ntoni kuni?

Bulie : Chomi yethu

PK : Zenibe namakhwenkwe ...nizondibona! And in sure Luvano will agree!

Bulie : Haike ngoku bhuti

PK : Mmmm

Bulie : Onika why don't you sleep over my house tonight?

Me: You know Luvano would never agree to that

Her: You never know, worse your parents are in East London.

Me: Will ask him then will call you if I'm coming.

Her: Great!

PK : You home alone Kanti?

I nodded

Him: I see

They dropped me home and left.

Luvano was not home and Gloria was leaving. I lay on the sofa and watched African Magic.

After a while....

It was around 8 pm and my brother was not back.

I received a call from a strange number.

Me: Hello

Caller : Is your brother home?

It was a male voice but familiar

Me: Ndithetha nabani?

Him: PK thethukuba awundiva?

Me: Sorry bendingakuva bhuti

Him: Uphi ubhuti wakho ?

Me : Andimazi he is not yet back

Him: Perfect...I'm outside, ndicela uphume

Me: Ingaba ikhona into embhi?

He giggled

Him: No, I want to talk to you about something.... I promise I won't take long

Me: Okay

I was shocked, what does he want

You be continued.....

Insert 8

I wore my shoes and walked out the the door.

His car was outside, so I slowly walked to his car then the front seat door opened and I got in.

Him: Hi

Me: Hello

Him: Do you mind if we go and park somewhere else.... Eish I just don't feel comfortable here by your gate

Me: Haibo njani bhuti

He giggled

Him: Please

Me: I didn't lock the house

Him: Mmmm...

He started the car and I looked at him.

Him: Relax, I'm gonna park few houses away

He stopped at the fourth house from our house.

He released a sigh, I was looking at him still confused.

Him: I'm sure you surprised why I called you here

Me: Ewe

Him: Andifuni ibengathi ndithatha amachance (I don't want it to look like I'M taking chances)...

Me: What are you talking about?

Him: I tried to fight it but ndohlulakala...

Me: Thetha Ngantoni bhuti? (what are you talking about?)

Him: I don't know how to put it...let me just tell it like it is, Ndiyakuthanda Mfethu

.

My heart started to beat some fast, I was not expecting this, I just didn't know what to say or how to react.

Him: Please say something

I just locked, my voice failed me and I couldn't utter a single word. Yangathi andikwazi uthetha, I was facing down. I just couldn't face him,

Him: Oni

He said in a charming voice, my stomach just felt butterflies. I never felt this way before, the feeling was magical.

What is this guy doing to me?

He lifted my head with one hand and made me face him.

His eyes were sparkling, he looked more handsome. My legs failed me, my entire body was feeling weak.

Him: I love you

If he only knew how my heart was beating for him. I really loved this dude, but I didn't want to seem weak or something.

Me: I have to get back home before my brother comes back

Him: Please think about what I just told you..

Me: You scaring me bhuti

Him: I didn't mean to scare you but that is how I feel about you and stop calling me that

I keep quiet

Him: You 16 Right?

Me: Turning 16 next year

Him: I'm only 23

Me: Seven years difference, you my brother's age

Him: So what??? That doesn't mean anything

Me: I have to go back home

He held hand, I quickly yanked it. It felt uncomfortable.

Him: Relax ...can I at least get a hug before you go????

Me: Bye

Him: Just a hug

Me: Okay

He stretched his arms for a hug, I entered into his embrace. Wow he was smelling nice, I just felt safe in his embrace. I broke from his embrace

Him: Bye

I quickly got out of the car and walked straight, I was walking fast .

I got home, the moment I closed the door. I took out a huge sigh, I smiled to myself. I was still smelling his cologne, I was still seeing his smile in front of me.

I sat on the sofa, smiling alone like a madwoman. I was going crazy, jumping up and down. He was on my mind, I couldn't think of anything else but only him.

I forgot about my troubles and pains, I was only feeling in love, love was just in the air.

I thought of calling Bulie but I thought again No, she doesn't have know now.

Luvano arrived later together with Thandi.

Her: Pumpkin

Me: Molo sisi

Her: Unjani?

Me: I'm good you?

Her : Heee.... What's up?

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: Awusagigitheki

Me: Le movies

Her: I hope you telling me the truth

Luu: Baby

Thandi : Mmmm?

He pulled he closer

Him: I have to go somewhere, I will be back now now

Thandi : Ndiyakwazi wena, unghamba Uye Tarven...

Luu: Soze mntuwam...

He planted a kiss on her lips

Me: Hello, I'm still here

He was tipsy

Him: Go and find yourself a man... Hlukane nathi

Only if you knew there is already one

My phone vibrated, it was a new message from PK.

"I'm thinking about you, can't get you out of my mind.

Just wanted to say goodnight , sleep tight vah? Please think about what I told you. PK Uyakuthanda. "

My heart started beating again, I couldn't stop smiling.

I walked upstairs, changed to my Pyjamas then tucked in bed, switching the light off.

I started rewinding everything that happened earlier, smiling and I started imagining our relationship.

My phone rang as I was in deep thoughts, it was PK. I cleared my throat then answered.

Me: Hello

Him: Wenzani?

Me: I'm sleeping you?

Him : Chilling with some friends, did you get my message?

Me: Ewe

Him: I mean it Onika, I love you.... Please give me a chance and I promise I won't break your heart.

Me: Ndoyika

Him: Woyika ntoni?

Me: I never dated someone before

Him: I understand... Please think about it baby.

Did he just call me baby? No man I love this guy.

Me: Okay

Him: Okay? What does that suppose to mean?

Me: I will think about it

Him: Please and please don't disappoint

Me: Will depend

Him: Okay, Goodnight baby. I love you

Me: Bye

I hung up

He called again

Me: Mmmm?

Him: I just called to inform you that I'm the one that called you

Me: So?

Him: I'm the one that should hang up not the other way around.

Me: You crazy

Him: I know

He giggled

Me: I'm waiting for you to hang up

Him: Okay.... Yima

Me: Mmm?

Him: Can I come see you tomorrow?

Me: I'm going to church tomorrow

Him: After church

Me: I can't

Him: Please

I kept on nagging

Me: Okay

Him: Thank you

We hung up after a while.

Simpiwe called later in and we chatted for a while then ndalala.

I woke up the following morning.

I was in a good mood, I was singing joyful songs. I cleaned the kitchen then prepared for church . Luvano was still sleeping.

I was wearing my best dress and stilettos. I looked so beautiful and I made sure of that.

I took a taxi to church then PK came to fetch me after church.

I he picked me up few houses from the church.

Him : You look stunning

Me: Enkosi

Him: Uqolile kulelokhwe

Me: Hayi kengoku

We drove to KFC and he bought some lunch. We ate in the car, I was feeling uncomfortable yazi.

Him: Umhle

Me: You making me blush

Him : I speaking the truth njena

Me: Stop it okay

Him : Okay

Satya sagqiba

Him: Do you want anything else?

I shook my head

Him: Onika

Me:Mmm?

Him: I love you

I looked down, he lifted up my head.

We looked deeply into each others eye, the next thing I felt his soft lips touching mine . I wanted to respond but the problem was I didn't know how to respond.

So I pulled back

Him: I'm sorry

Me: I want to go home

Him: Sure

He started the car

Him: I understand you have your fears but please trust me

Me: I do

Him: But?

Me: I'm new to this things...it all feels weird

Him : I understand... We will take things slow

I looked away

Him: Just tell me you love me

I looked down

Him : Onika

Me: I'm not sure if I'M ready for all this...

Him: I won't rush you... Take your time

We stopped at the usual spot

Him: I wish you can not go

I giggled

Him: Nyani, I enjoy your company I kept quiet

He came closer and tried to kiss me again, I pulled back

Me: Ha.ana...

Him: Just a baby kiss

Me: Bazothini abantu abagqitha ngendlela,?

Him: They should mind their own business

He planted a kiss on lips then we said our goodbyes by sharing a hug.

I got out of the car and walked straight home .

When I reached the gate I saw Dads car. My heart began to beat some fast, my entire body was shaking .

I was not expecting them so soon , ndizothi ndisukaphi? Because iCawa iphume u1 pm.

Wafa Umntu today!

You be continued....

Sorry about the errors, I'm too sleepy to edit.

Insert 9

My heart was beating so fast, I took a deep breath and opened the gate.

I opened the door and went inside, uvalo ngeloxesha lusitsho.

Dad : Iqale nini uphuma ngo3 iCawa? Or is it a new thing since was not around ?

I tried to stay calm as possible

Me: I went to visit a friend

Him: Friend? Friend yaphi?

Me: Young park...

His phone rang

Him : You have to report when you going somewhere understood?

I nodded then he answered his phone. What a relief.

Me: How are you mommy?

I asked taking a seat next to her.

She released a great sigh

Her: You don't want to know baby...

Me: It was hectic neh?

Her: You know... What is worse, we going back there this weekend for the funeral.

Me: So you gonna spend Christmas there?

Her: Hayi, we will be back the day before Christmas.

Me: Better!

Her: Don't you want to go with?

Me: No thanks Yhooo, kuyasetyenzwa pha!

She giggled

Her: Lazy girl.... I wonder who will marry you!

Me: Hahaha.... Please bring granny with

Her: Will depend

Me: Please, please, please

I showed a puppy face

Her: Will talk to your father

Me: Thank you!

Her: Mxxxxxxxxxm wena...

I went to my bedroom , I changed to comfortable clothes.

Simpiwe called...

Me: Hey you

Him: Someone is in a good mood

Me: Hahaha

Him : What's up?

Me: It's nothing wethu

Him: Mmmm...so what you doing for Christmas?

Me: We normally go out with family..wena?

Him : Christmas lunch with family and friends

Me: Nice...

Him: Don't you want to join us?

Me: Eish... I don't think my father will agree

Him: Okay it's cool

Me: My parents are leaving again next week they will be back Monday... So, why don't we go out Saturday

Him: That sounds like a good idea

Me: Good!

Him: I can't wait yhoo, I have been missing you

Me: Awufiki kum

Him: It's boring here at home, just can't wait for the school to reopen.

Me: I can't wait to be in grade11 and we have to be serious

Him : Yes, I guess we have to become nerds

We chatted for a long while then we hung up.

PK send me a message later on " Missing you like crazy... I hope didn't get into trouble with your brother... I love you "

I smiled

I replied " I almost got into trouble, my parents are back. But I got lucky, my father didn't overeat. "

My phone rang it was him

Me : Hello

Him: I'm glad you didn't get into trouble me: I was so close though

Him: I'm sorry but will make it up to you Me: You don't have to

Him: What you doing this weekend?

Me: Going out with some friend

Him: Ngubani lowo?

Me: Simphiwe

Him: Simphiwe waphi lowo?

Me: He is my male friend

Him: I hope there is nothing more

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: I love you Onika... Please give me a chance

Me:

Him: Please baby... We will take things slowly, step by step....

Me: Er....

Him : Please...

I didn't respond

Him: Please say something

Me: Okay

Him: What does that mean?

Me: What do you think?

He giggled

Him: Wow! I promise baby you won't regret this

Me: Okay

Him: Can I come see you tomorrow?

Me: No!

Him: Just for two minutes

Me : Ndizothi ndiyaphi endlini

Him: To the shop or something

Me: Okay

Him: Thank you

Me: For what?

Him: For allowing me into your life...

Me: Okay

We chatted for a short while then hung up.

I went to join my family later on for breakfast. We ate then I washed the dishes and went to sleep later on.

Following day....

I woke up early, I couldn't sleep because I was excited about my date.

All I think about was Phakami, he was in my dreams, mind and all I could hear was his voice. Wow this dude really got me going crazy.

I woke up, made the bed and opened the curtain and window.

I was in a good mood, at least there is something wonderful happening in my life. He made me forget about everything, I just felt free when I was around him.

Some fresh air filled the room then I went to the bathroom and did my daily morning hygiene.

When I was done, I went to the kitchen and made myself cereal.

I went to to lay on the sofa and watched some cartoons.

My phone Beebe, it was a friend request from Facebook.

I checked and it was Phakami Poni, I blushed then accepted the friend request.

He text me

Him: Baby

Me: Hi

Him: How you doing today?

Me: I'm okay, you?

Him: I'm cool, so what are doing?

We chatted and ndithi intliziyo yam bibhaka amagwinya.

Dad walked in

Him: Morning baby

Me: Morning

Him: See you later

Me: Okay

He left slamming the door and Gloria arrived after him

Her: Molo sisi

Me: Gloglo

Him: Unjani ntombi encinci?

Me: Ndiyaphila Akhonto mama wena?

Her: Ndiyaphila

She walked to the kitchen and I continued chatting with my man

" Onika bring your laundry " yelled Gloria

Me: Okay

I was so glued to my phone

" ONIKA!!!!!!! " Yelled Gloria

Me: Yes

Her: LAUNDRY!!!!!!

Me: Yhooo , okay

Her : Bring your brother's laundry as well

Me: Okay

I went to knock at Luvano's room

Him: Ndilele

Me: Bhuti Gloglo funa laundry yakho

Him: Eish.... Okay

He gave me the basket I took it and took mine ndazisa zantsi.

Later on....

My mom took me to the salon.

Her: Which hair style do you want?

Me: Something simple

Ndafakela straight back esi black, ndingase tsaleke maarn. Mama yena wafakela bonding then we went home.

Luvano was not home, so it was me and my Mom because Gloria left.

We watched some movie

Me: Mama

Her: Mmm?

Me: How old were you when you started dating?

She looked at me with shocked eyes

Me: I'm just asking

Her: Is there something you want to tell Me: No

Her phone rang, she checked at the caller ID then a smile appeared at her face.

Her: Have to take this

She stood up and went to take the call outside.

Wow that was strange but it's none of my business.

I focused on the TV, my phone rang and it was PK.

Me: Hello

Him: Can I come see you?

Me: Okay

Mom walked in

Her: Baby I will be back now now

Me: Okay

She took her cat keys and left in a hurry. GREAT!!!!!!

I quickly refreshed, I applied some makeup, mascara and eye pencil from my mother's room.

He text me that he was outside, I locked the door and quickly went to PK. He was parking at our usual spot, I got in the car.

Him: Awutsaleke

I felt embarrassed

Him: Iyakufanela Kodwa

He pulled me closer for a kiss

Him: Don't you know how much I missed you?

Ndimane ndibheka bheka, I was not comfortable what if someone see us?

Him : Are you okay?

I nodded

Him : Come here....

He pulled me closer again for a kiss, but this time he sucked my lips.

Ndothuka and pulled back

Him: Did I do anything wrong?

I shook my head

Him: What is wrong

Me: Kutheni undimunca inyeke?

I said looking down

Him : That's part of the kissing

Ndathula

Him: Relax, I understand.... When we have enough time, I will teach you

Me: Hayi inyeke zam zizophela

Ndatsho ngebhesi

He giggled

Him: No man.... Asoze

Me: Kutheni undihleka nje?

Him: Azizophela nyeke zakho!

We chatted for a while then he left afterwards. I went back home, luckily there was no one back yet.

Mom arrived later on, Dad was already back.

Dad : Velaphi?

Mama: I went to take care of something

Dad: What is that?

Me: Application forms

Dad : Zantoni?

Luu: Yerr, uyambuza umntu! Ubuzwa ngubani wena xawubuya ebusuku????

Dad: Awunambheko Wena Luvano!!!!

Luu: Ndifuzile!

Mom: Luvano!

Luu: Okay

He lifted his hands as a sign of surrender.

Luu : I'm out of here

Me: I will be upstairs....

I went upstairs and lay on my back as rewind everything. Smiling and laughing to myself. I felt goosebumps, I was over the moon. What I felt for the dude was strong, it made me react abnormally.

Does love make you feel like that?

Does love make you crazy like that?

Love is strange!

To be continued...

Insert 10

Few days later....

It was Friday morning, my Mom and Dad were preparing for their journey.

Mom: Luvano ungamshiyi yedwa umntana

Luu: Kodwa mna xandifuna uhamba ndizohamba.

Me: Will it be okay if I sleep over kuloBulie Saturday?

Dad: Why?

Me: Ndamazi ubhuti uzobuya ebusuku

Luu: And uNyansile

Dad: Luvano andiyithandi lento yakho yonxila ngobusuku!

Luu: Ngu December ngoku, come on!

Dad: Uyandihlaza Luvano kwedini

Luu: Ngoku ndithini ndingaseli?

Mama: Luvano nguTatakho lona uthetha naye kwelihlebo! Yayaphi intlonipho?

Dad: Akasanayo tuu and ayisandiboni lentwana!

Luu: Respect? What do you know about respect???? Lento ndiyiyo uyiyo nawe ngoba ndiyikope kuwe!

Dad : When I was your age I never spoke to my father in this manner! You are a disgrace!

Luu: Good!!! I'm a disgrace like you!!!!

Mama : Luvano stop it!

Luu : Why Mama? I'm tired of being told what to do and what not to do!!!! I'm no longer 17 year. I have grown up and I'm a man just like him!!!! If wayendifundise intlonipho, I wouldn't be talking to him in this manner! So he must handle me ngoba he turned me like this!!!!

" Luvano! " yelled my mother as Luvano headed upstairs.

I just stood there not knowing what to say or where to look. They just put me in an awkward position.

Mom and Dad left later on. They left me with R500 and told me to behave.

Me: Should I sleep over Kulo bulie?

Dad: Do whatever you want

He was still angry

Mama: But don't forget to go to church sunday

Me: Okay

I suppose that was a yes.

I reached for my phone and invited my friends over (Spain and Bulie). Then I went to Luvano's room.

I knocked several times before he opened.

Him: Ndiyakutyala?

Me: Ewe

Him: Mxxm wena! What do you want?

Me: Can I come in

He made way for me, I came in and he closed the door.

Him: Ndimamele

Me: My friends are coming over

Him: Ngobani abo?

Me: Spain and Bulie

Him: Oh, so mna ndingenaphi kulonto?

Me: Ndicela uyoithengela iSnacks....

Him: Ayihambi ngamanzi leMoto

Me: Haibo bhuti

Him: Uyahlupha kanjani!

Me: Enkosi

I held him tight

Him: Psycho!

Me: Hahaha

I let go of him

Him: You owe me a favor

Me: Ndimamele

Him: Thandi is coming over tonight but ndifuna ukuya Eshwemeni kanjani. So please keep her company.

Me: No problem

Him: Good!

I brother left and went to the complex.

Ndasheka ndivsa and wore my white knee dress and my blue sandals.

As I was busy tightening my room, my phone vibrated it was an incoming call from Phakamani

Me: Hello

Him: Baby, how are you doing?

Me: I'm okay, wena

Him: Moja , was just missing you... So ubusy Ngantoni?

Me: Waiting for Bulie and Spain

Him: Oh kanene, she mentioned it earlier that she is coming over your house .

Me: What she doing?

Him: Old'lady is taking her, so basa kamana inwele.

Me: Oh okay

Him : Ndizokubona namhlanje?

Me: I'm not sure

Him: Ndizoshaya iround later kwelocala

Me: Okay

Him: Thanda vah

Me: Nam ndakuthanda

We then hung up

Luvano arrived later with snacks nenyama.

Me: That's why I love you!

Him: Mxxm

Simpiwe and Bulelwa arrived.

Spain : We gonna watch soccer

Me: Soccer?

Bulie: Hayi Spain tshini

Him: Movie then???

We switched to M-net star, there was an interesting movie playing.

Luu: I'm out, see you later!

Me: Okay

He left and we were home alone

Spain : Wow, you have a beautiful house and it's Big.

Me: Thank you

Bulie : And your brother is handsome kodwa Madoda ...

I stared at her

Her: There is nothing wrong at looking through the menu

Spain : I'm still here!

We giggled

Me: Bulie I'm gonna sleep over at your house tomorrow

She smiled and screamed

Her: Nyani?

I nodded

Her: I'm gonna tell my mom! Wow can't wait!

Spain : Ndizobayi Moffie mna if andiqapheli

Me: Haibo why?

Him: Zintoni ezi nizenzayo nihleli nam?

We giggled

Him: Don't you have a play station? This movie is boring!

Bulie : Imandi leMovie

We argued then I went to fetch my brothers play station.

Me: Let's play

Spain : I'm first

Bulie : Nam!

I let them be and watched as they played then it was turn became Bulie had lose.

Later on sakhapha iSpain, wayokhwela ujikeleza.

Bulelwa's mom came to fetch her, she told her that I will sleep over there tomorrow and she was okay with that.

I was left alone and bored. Luvano came back with Thandi and left me with her.

Thandi : Bhuti wakho uyandidika sometimes

Me: Uzoqina

Her : I know he will be back at midnight...andimazi undizisela ntoni apha.

Me: At least he shows interest,

Her : Whatever...anyway , wena? Do you have a boyfriend?

I looked down

Her: Relax, I won't judge you....I also met your brother when I was 16.

Me: Hee sisi

Her : There is someone isn't there?

I giggled

Her : Tell me more

I told her everything

Her: Don't you love him?

Me: Yes

Her: I see nothing wrong... As long as he feels the same

Me: But he makes me feel uncomfortable sometimes

Her : Njani?

Me: Like, the other day uye wandimunca inyeke.

She giggled

Her: Kuphuzwa njalo kalok...don't worry kubanjalo kuye wonke umntu.

Later on...

It was past 8 and I was watching a movie with Thandi.

My phone rang and it was PK.

Me: Hello

Him: Baby I'm outside

Me: Okay

I hung up and looked at Thandi

Me: He is outside

Her : I'm also coming, I want to see him.

Me: Okay

Saphuma and we walked the short distance to where he was parking.

I opened the front seat door and got in, Thandi just leaned on the door.

PK : Molweni

Thandi : He is handsome at least.... Well hi I'm Thandi, her brothers girlfriend .

I'm here to warn you that if it happens that you break her heart, you will have me to deal with understood?

Pk: Understood!

Her: Good and don't take long!

Me: Okay,

Then she left

Phakami pulled me closer for a kiss then he let go.

Him: I missed you

Me: Nam

Him: I guess your brother is not home

Me: Ewe

Him: Good

He started the car and drove

Me: Where are you taking me?

Him: Wait and see

We drove to board walk , he parked his car.

Me: Why we here?

Him: Awufuni ubona kunjani apha at night?

He opened the door

Him: Izobona!

We got out of the car and he locked it. He pulled me closer to him and we walked around.

He was making funny jokes, sileqaleqana.

Me: You crazy

Him: I know dear!

After a while we walked back to the car. Him: Thandi should be panicking

Me: Hahaha she is probably angry

We got into the car

Him: Let's take the back seat, I want to show you something.

I did as he said

Me: Well?

Him: I'm gonna show you something, just relax

He came closer and our lips met, he started kissing me. I was nervous, didn't know how to respond.

Him: Just go with the flow and do what I'm doing.

Our teeth clicked and I felt embarrassed

Him: Don't....

I looked down and he lifted my head and started kissing me again.

I started enjoying the kissing and it felt good.

He broke the kiss

Him: See, you doing great!

Me: Yathanda undiqhoshisa wena

He giggled

Him: Ndifuna Lonto!

Me: Esheee

Him: Awulambanga?

I shook my head

Him: Ice cream?

Me: Ndiyayifuna

He smiled then we bought ice cream on our way back home.

Him: Khandiphe

Me: Kutheni ungazithengelanga?

Him: Uyavimba

Me: Eshee

Safika ngasekhaya and we parked.

Him: I had a great time

Me: Nam

Him: Let's take pictures

He took out his phone and we took pictures.

Me : Enough, the flash is damaging my eye sights.

Him: Okay , so ndizokubona nini?

Me: Ngomso, ndizolala koweni

Him: Ekhaya????

Me: Ewe

Him: Like uzo outer?

I giggled

Me: No man, sleep over kuBulie.

Him: Undothusile, bendizothi hayi hayi

Me: Why?

Him: You still young for ezozinto ...

I giggled

Him: Nyani, I don't want you to rush into those things. The right time will come

Me: I'm not rushing

Him: I'm just saying , so you gonna sleep over ekhaya???? Ndikubekele ntoni?

Me: I don't know, anything

Him: Okay

We chatted then we shared a kiss

Him: See yOu tomorrow

Me: Sure

Him: I love you!

Me: Love you too

Then I left , Thandi was so curious and I told her everything.

To be continued...

Insert 11

Her : Ncoo, this PK guy seems like a good guy

Me: He makes me feel good, he make me.... I just don't know

Her : I know that feeling girl, I have been there

Me: Uhmm sisi

Her: Mmmm?

Me : Please don't tell my brother

She giggled

Her : My lips are sealed

She said as she literally sealed her lips.

We chatted until my brother arrived.

Luu: Anisebabi, nizibonile?

Thandi : Asiyityanga lento uyityile

Luu: Yhuu ungandibethi, ndiyakoyika!

He said as he sat next to Thandi

Me: I'm off to bed

Thandi : Night baby

Luu : Good morning

I rolled my eyes and walked upstairs. I changed and wore my pyjamas then tucked under the blankets.

I log into facebook, I scrolled down liking people's pictures and status.

A smile slowly appeared on my face when I saw a picture PK uploaded an hour ago. It was a picture of me and him at the car , then he wrote " She made my night and I'm missing her already...

#Mybabe

#My_everyday_crush

#Sibahle_njena "

That post just made my night, this man just knows how to put a smile on my face.

The following day...

My phone vibrated, bendiyivela kude.

I searched for it and answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I said in a sleepy voice

Caller : Ncoo, I'm sorry for waking you up

It was Phakamani

Me: Why you up so early?

Him: O'lady kanjani

Me: She woke you up early?

Him: Yes, her car was not starting, so I had to go and check...

Me: Hahaha uzoba strong

Him: I'm gonna come fetch you, this afternoon

Me: Hayi, don't you want Luvano to get suspicious

Him: No, I understand.. So what time are you coming?

Me: I'm not sure

Him: Okay, will see you later

Me: Okay

Him : Thanda vah

Me: Love you too

We hung up

I went back to sleep because I was sleepy.

I woke up few hours later , I made the bed and opened the curtain and window then went to the bathroom and didn't My daily hygiene routine.

I was in such a good mood, Thandi was making breakfast in the kitchen, the aroma made my stomach cry.

Me: Mmmmmm

Her: Morning

Me: My brother must marry you

Her: Hahaha

Me: Andilambe ugqiba nini?

Her : In a minute

I waited for a few minutes then she served the food and it was delicious.

Luvano walked in, half naked , he headed straight to kitchen and came back holding a glass of water.

Thandi : You should slow down baby

Me: Nyani

Luu: Anisebabi ingathi ningoSlow down

Me: Nawe

Him: Khandithi speak nawe!

I rolled my eyes and focused on my plate

Him: Baby nam ndilambile

She brought his food then they went upstairs later on and left me alone watching TV.

I went upstairs later on and packed my pyjamas and an outfit for church tomorrow.

My phone rang and it was Simphiwe.

Me: Hey you

Him : Hope you didn't forget about today.

Me: I haven't

Him: Call me when you at Greenacres

Me: Okay

Him: see you now now

I giggled

Me: Okay

We hung up

I was not sure what to wear, so I took out my black skinny jean , gold and black shirt and black sneakers.

I took a bath and slowly applied lotion on my body.

I dressed up and wore my earrings together with watch.

When I was done with everything, I tighten up the room and packed my toiletries in the bag.

I went to knock at my brothers room.

Him: I'm busy

Me: I'm going to greenacres, will be back later

Him: Uzokhwela itaxi?

Me: Ewe

Him: Okay

I called Simphiwe and told him that I was on my way , He was already there.

I arrived there 30 minutes later, I found him at Edgars.

We shared a hug

Him: You look stunning

Me: Thanks

Him: So where from here

Me: I don't know

Him: You can't be serious

Me: Movie?

Him: Arg, let's do something different

Me: I'm listening

Him: Masiye New Brighton

Me: Entweni?

Him : I have a friend there

Me: Okay , then you gonna pay my taxifare

He giggled

Him: I don't mind

Sakhwela ke and we arrived at his friend house. He was home alone chilling with his girlfriend.

We greeted and he introduced me to them. They seemed friendly and full of life.

Me: So what's the plan?

Thando: Let's go and play poo

Me: Hahaha andikwazi

Spain : I'm gonna teach you

Me: Okay

We went to another room and there was a pool table.

Thandi and Spain started and we watched them play then Spain won the round.

Thando : I let you win

Spain : Hahaha, you keep on saying that, just admit it that I beat you

We giggled then it was me and Lisa.

I had no clue kubethwa abaphi, Spain showed me how to hold the stick, I struggled at fist then I managed.

Lisa took the first shot then it was my turn, Spain was helping me.

Lisa wafa one ball (Solid)

Spain : Look, you only gonna hit the strip ones not the solid or she is gonna play twice.

Lisa won the round

Spain : Don't worry next time you gonna win

Me: Yeah right

We chilled there having fun, they were making funny jokes, bendihleka ndiphume inyembezi.

Thando's parents arrived ,they were friendly people as well and understanding.

My phone rang it was Luvano

Me: Bhuti

Him: It's past 5 Ubuya nini?

Me: Eish, didn't check the time coming now now

Him: You better!

Then he hung up

Me: Spain I have to go, my brother is Angy

MakaT: Shame, don't worry I will take you home.

I took my phone and slingbag and we left.

She dropped me at my house

Her : Are you gonna be fine or should I get in with you?

Me: please

Her: Okay

The time was now 6pm, we got out of the car and we went inside.

Thando's Mom did her magic and my brother cooled down.

She left then I went upstairs

Luvano: Usaya kuloBulie?

Me: Ewe, I'm going to fetch My stuff

Him: Hurry up

I took my back and I rushed downstairs. We left and he dropped me off and went back home.

Phakamani was not around because his car was not parked outside.

Bulie: Kunini ndikulindile?

Me: I'm sorry

MakaB: I'm sorry ladies, I'm afraid you gonna be home alone because I'm going out

Me: Yhooo

Her: Don't worry Phakamani will be around

Me : Okay

She left us with lots of snacks and told us to behave.

We nodded

Her: See you tomorrow morning

Then she left

Me: Where is your mother going?

Her: Going out with her boyfriend

Me : Oh

We went to her room and we started chatting, catching up talking about girl stuff.

Someone knocked at our door

Bulie : Ngena bhuti

My heart started to beat fast, I didn't know how to react.

The door swing opened

PK: Nenzani?

Bulie : Siyazincokolela

Him: Oh...If you need anything I will be at my room.

He winked at me

Bulie: Okay

The he left

Bulie : Is there something you want to tell me?

I shook my head

Her: Are you sure sure sure?

Me: Ewe Haibo

Her: Okay

She took her phone wayicofacofa

Her: Explain this

It was that picture PK uploaded

Me: Uhm

Her : I'm waiting

Me: Well...

I scratched my head

Her: Well?

Me: I wanted to tell you but I was not ready

Her: Hayini lona

She covered her mouth

Me: Yabonake, that one of the reasons I didn't want to tell you

Her: I didn't see this coming

She clapped once

Her: UnoBhuti wam????

Me: Just stop it already

Her: It's shocking news... I can't stop

Me: Mxxm

My phone vibrated and it was PK

Me: Haibo

Him: Izapha

Me: Phi?

Him: Aphe roomin yam

I looked at Bulie

Me: Bulie akazoyivuma lonto

Him: Give her the phone

I handed her the phone,

Her: Hello... Hayi kodwa bhuti... Yhooo... Okay

Then she hung up

Her: Masambe siye kubhuti

We wore our slippers then we went at the back yard where is flat was.

Bulie knocked and he opened the door.

Sangena, I looked around it was beautiful and neat.

He took his laptop and gave it to Bulie

Him: You know the password mos

She nodded then she left.

I stood in one position, feeling awkward.

Him: Izapha or should I come fetch you?

Ndayokhwela ebhedini

Him: I bought you Ice cream

Me: Mmmm

He handed me the Ice cream

Me : 2L yonke? Uayayi baxa.

Him: Soyitya sobabini

Me:Okay

We chatted spoon feeding each other, cuddling.

We didn't finish the Ice cream, we got tired.

We got under blankets then he placed me on top of his chest.

I slowly fell asleep as he was chatting.

Ndothuka ekuseni, Yhooo I was scared of his mother.

What will she say???

Him: Chill babe, she is not yet back

We got up, sayendlini enkulu.

Ndafika ndalala again, because it was still early morning.

To be continued...

Insert 12

" Caba ubhuti ukusebenzisile straight last night " said Bulie's voice , disturbing me from my sleep.

Me: Go away

I said without uncovering the blankets

Her: Yhooo!

I woke up later on, it was around 8am too 9am.

I was alone in the bedroom, I stood up and quickly made the bed, I was gonna be late for church.

I took out my toiletries and went to take a bath.

When I was done bathing, I wrapped my body with a towel then cleaned the mess I made.

When I was heading back to the bedroom, I felt hands wrapping around my waist

.

That totally felts uncomfortable, I quickly yanked myself.

PK : I'm sorry

I felt embarrassed

Me: Please don't do it again, it makes me feel uncomfortable... What if your mother saw us?

Him: She is not yet back, anyways sooner or later she will have to know

I popped my eyes

Him : Yes, I love you Onika. I'm not playing games

He pulled me closer for a kiss, my heart was beating so fast ,my mind was on the fact that I was naked behind the towel and what if it drops?

I pulled back and cleared my throat

Me: I'm gonna be late for church

Him: Sure

I quickly walked in the room and locked the door behind me.

I dropped the the towel and gently applied lotion on my body.

" For the why kengoku? "

Yelled Bulie as she was trying to open the door.

I went to open for her

Her: Hayi ufihla ntoni?

She asked as she was entering

Me: Niks

Her: Hayi uneThings

Me: Hayi wethu

I finished lotioning my body then I asked Bulie where I can iron my dress, she showed me and I also iron her dress because she was coming with.

When we were done with everything , Phakamani took us to church.

Him : What time should I come fetch you?

Me: Ngo1

Him: Okay

Me: Why don't you join us?

Him : Ndonqena ukwethusa abantu

Me: Hayi ngoba ?

Him: When last did I go to church?..... I was still in Sunday school if I remember correctly.

Me: Uzintloni

Him: Haiskaaaaa bayaxoka abeFundisi... They just making money. Wawuvephi Umntu avuthelwe awephantsi?

I looked down, didn't know what to say

Him: I'm not saying your father is like them, ungandivi kakubi

Me: I know

Then there was awkward silence

He dropped us by the gate and then he left.

I didn't join the praise and worship team, because I was late, We took the back seat.

The service went well and Bekumnandi uTata engekho.

After church I greeted everyone then PK came to fetch us.

Him : How was church?

Bulie : Bekumnandi Yhooo

Him: Baby?

Me: Bekumnandi

Bulie : Hamba baby

She clapped once

Him: Suphapha!

I rolled my eyes then stared ahead

Him: See? You making my baby uncomfortable.

Bulie : Yhuu Andinongayihleki... Iyandihlekisa lento yenu

PK : Kudala uthetha ngoku khathule....

We arrived at home, Bulelwa's Mom was home.

Me: Molo Mama

Bulie : Molo Mama

Her: Molweni... How was church?

Me: Bekumnandi

Bulie also said the same.

Her: Anilambanga ?

PK : Yhooo

Her : Andibuzi wena

PK : Besendikuxelela ba nam Ndilambile

Her: Hehake

Okay let me describe Phakamani's mother.

She is light in complexion(Yellow bone) , with dreadlocks ezinde bezimfanela. She looked young for her age. She was always on point when it comes to dressing up. She was just beautiful, friendly, warm hearted. She was easy to approach, unlike my parents. You could talk to her with everything, she will make you feel comfortable and free with her beautiful smile.

Phakamani's Dad left and went to marry another woman. He is not supporting them, He doesn't even come to check on them.

Some fathers are unbelievable aren't they?

Well....

We helped to set the table then She served the food.

I said grace then we started eating, chatting in between.

After Sunday lunch, I helped Bulie with the dishes.

Her : So how does it feel?

Me: What?

Her: You know

Me: Know what?

Her: Okay... Last night, how was it?

Me: What are you talking about?

I was really confused

She gave me a hand signal for sex

Me: Sies,,, eeuw! Asizenzi ezizinto

Her: Uyaxoka!

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxxm Yagula wena

She giggled then we finished what we were doing.

Later on....

It was around 5pm, I was packing my stuff.

My phone rang it was Mama

Me: Mama

Her: Princess, how are you doing?

Me: I'm good you?

Her : I'm good, Uphi umakaBulie?

Me: She is at the lounge

Her : Go give her the phone I want to talk to her.

Me: Okay

I went to the lounge and gave her the phone. She talked on the phone for a while with my Mom.

When she was done talking, she invited me to the lounge.

Bulie was at the bedroom

Her: Onika

Me: Ma?

Her: Your Mom just told that she won't be here for Christmas..

Me: Intoni? Why?

Her: Things are hectic that side, so they will be back after Christmas.

Me: No,

Her: Please understand, you will be staying her till they are back

Me: Mama unjani na?

Her: Please pumpkin, your Mom loves you, that doesn't mean she loves you less okay?

I nodded, but really didn't understand. Why now? We never spent Christmas apart, this is gonna be my worst Christmas ever.

When I was done talking to her, I went to join Bulie.

Her : Bekubizela ntoni uMama?

I told her, she was excited because we gonna spend more time together.

I called Luvano and told him everything but he already knew.

Following day...

It Christmas Eve, the weather was hot outside.

Bulie's Mom asked PK to take me home, to fetch My clothes.

Lol only if knew what was going on.

PK didn't hesitate, he was just excited because we knew that we gonna take our own time.

Bulie stayed behind helping her mother with the deco.

PK: Baby

Me: Mmm?

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Just always keep that in Mind, Noba kungenzeka ntoni just know I love you

Me: Okay

We arrived at my house and Luvano's car was parked outside .

I opened the car door

PK : I'm coming with you

Me: Are you crazy? What if my brother suspect something?

He: He won't

He opened his door and got out, he followed behind me as we entered the gate.

I opened the door, Thandi and Luvano were cuddling at the lounge.

Me: Molweni

They turned to us

Thandi : Tshisaaaa.. Molweni

PK also greeted

Luu: Exe ntwana yam!

He stood up and they handshake

PK : Zikhiphani MrLuu?

Luu:Ndi Grand Mfethu lawai.... Zikhiphani waziswa nguwe sister wam?

Thandi was smiling mntakabawo endenzela intloni vah.

PK : Sister yam Bulie, so Old'lady asked me to take her here

Luu: Oh, ndiyakuva but no funny besigheid(Business)

PK giggled

Luu : I'm serious

PK : Sure

I rolled my eyes

Luu: Hola lee!

I went upstairs packed enough clothes for the few days then went back downstairs.

PK : Are you ready?

I nodded then he helped me with the bags.

Luvano : Are you okay?

Me: I'm gonna be okay

He pulled me closer to him

Him: I Love you

He kissed my forehead then held me tight.

Him : Please don't be angry at Mom...

I nodded then he accompanied me to the car.

Him: PK I'm watching you

PK: Mxxm wena

Then we drove

PK : Your brother will get furious when he finds out about us

Me: Do you blame him?

Him: Uzoqina kusemhlabeni apha

Me: I wonder Buzothini if Bulie was dating my brother

Him: Akuzoba mnandi kodwa that's life, ndizovutha ndiyeke.

Me: Phof that's life nyani

We drove to one of his friends house at New Brighton.

Me: I'm gonna wait in the car

Him: Nxilile , khaphume wethu

I got out then he locked the car.

Me: What if your friends judge me?

He pulled me closer to him, holding on my waist with one hand.

Him: You are my woman, fuck what other people say...

PK knocked at the door several times before kuvulwe.

A tall handsome guy opened the door, He looked at PK then at me.

Him: Rhaa ujinja PK ntwanaz!

PK : Salute nakuwe!

Guy: Sorry where is my manners? Molo Sisi, I'm CJ mpintshi ka PK estrong. Sinjenga mathe nolwimi. Kuthiwa ungubani kewena sisi?

Me: Onika

PK : Sicela ungena

He made way for us sangena.

We pent there more then an hour then sagoduka.

We arrived at home, Bulie and her mother were watching TV.

Mama: Yhuu benozenza ezimpahla andifuni nova!

We giggled

Me: My brother asked me to stay for a little while.

Her: Okay ndiyakuva sisi

I then went to put my stuff erumini then came back and joined everyone at the lounge.

PK left after a short while, saying he is going to visit a friend.

I felt a light headache then I went to sleep.

Later on...

My phone rang, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

PK : Merry merry merry Christmas baby wam!!!!!! Phakamani Uyakuthanda vah?

There was a noise at the background, you could tell use Tavern and drunk also.

Me: Merry

I said in a low voice

Him: Kutheni Ungathi Upholelwe nje?

Me: Undivusa ebuthongweni Kaloku!

Him: Xolo mntuwam vah, Xolo!

Me: Bye bye ndozela

Him: I miss you baby , ndifuna ukubona ofika Kwam

Me: Okay!

I dropped the phone, checked the time and it was 00: 07. I switched My phone off, I heard there were people talking at the lounge, I just ignored them and went back to sleep.

"Merry Christmas " Said Bulelwa's voice, disturbing myeni sleep.

Me: What time is it?

Her: 7am

Me: Merry

Her: Wake up

Me: let me sleep for few seconds

She pulled the cover

Me: Yadika vah!

Her: I know

Me: Mxxxm

Her: We having a Christmas lunch at 1pm, we expecting visitors

Me: Okay

I made the bed and went to the bathroom, did my morning hygiene routine then went help at the kitchen.

Mama: Merry Christmas

She gave me a hug

Me: Merry to you too

We pilled the veg then help to set the big table.

Mom left and went to fetch the cake she ordered. We chatted neChomi yam as we made the salads.

I felt PK's magical hands wrapping around my waist.

Him: Good morning baby

Bulie: Were is your manners Bhuti?

He turned me around and started kissing me.

Bulie : I give up!

I wanted to laugh but I couldn't, PK was kissing me.

He let go

Him: Baby indala lawai isentloko....

Me: Kodwa ndiyeza last week?

Him: Jonga inwele Uphumile

Me: Nxaki I don't have money to do my hair

Him: Money is not a problem, xawugqibile lento uyenzayo. I'm taking you to the salon

Me: Okay!

PK left

Bulie : Tshisaaaa Onika....

Me: What?

Her: Niks, it's fine go do your hair. Ndizogqibezela!

Me: Thanks

We left noPk. We arrived at the salon, ndafakela bonding ende colour #4 .

I was loving my new hair style, PK paid and was expensive because bekufuneke bakhulule esa straight back qala.

Shame Phakamani didn't complain at all.

We arrived at home nge past 12, Everyone was was getting ready.

Mom: Awusemhle ntombi

Me: Enkosi mama

Bulie : Mhle nyani!

I took a bath, because khange ndivase ngoku bendisiya esalon.

I wore my black tight dress with my gold sandals. I applied some make up(Mascara and eye pencil) finished the look with my gold earring.

Later on...

I switched on my phone and I had plenty missed calls, from parents and brother even PK.

I called them back, baqala bandingxolela why did I switched off my phone blablabla.

Lastly they wished me merry Christmas.

Well...

People start arriving, bringing presents with.

We all joined at the big table after everyone was back.

There was this cute guy, his name was Vuyo.

He was my age group 17 or 18 .

He was staring at me as we were eating.

Then later on after lunch, he came to me.

Him: Onika right?

I nodded

Him : So where you from?

I told him, we chatted, he was funny fool of jokes.

PK walked on us

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni apha?

Vuyo: Siyancokola njee Ta

PK : Onika uyabizwa endlini

I stared at him

Me: Okay

Then I left them there, xandifika endlini. Tshini bendingabizwa, bexoka Phakamani.

Ndithi since then oko endigadile ndingoyiswe.

Kunje ubanomntu Kanti?

To be continued...

Insert 13

The old people were drinking outside, dancing iyilonto.

Me: Bulie mchana lets wash the dishes

Bulie : Not now

Me: Uzoba mninzi umsebenzi ngomso ketana.

Her : Nyanisile bonanje

We went to the kitchen and started washing dishes.

Luvuyo walked him

Him: Can I help?

Me: Yes, take a clothe and help Bulie wipe the dishes.

Him: Cool

He started wiping the plates

Him: So Onika , You at the same school noBulie?

Me: Ewe, wena?

Him: Ndifunda eTyhilulwazi

Me: Sindawoni kanene?

Him: Ezinyoka

Me: Nawe uhlala khona?

Him: Ewe ko16

Me: Oh wow

Him: Uhlalaphi wena?

Me: Ezwide

Him: Awuhlali kude mos, I should visit you sometimes

Me: Hahaha ewe neh

Him: Yes, You also at the same grade as Bulie

Me: Yes, I can't wait ukuya kuGrade 11 yhoo

Him: Ndidlulile mna apho I'm just excited, I'm going to matrix!!!

Bulie : Awusadiki

Me: Uyadika nyani!

Him: Nizofika nani sanungxama!

We finished the dishes, Luvuyo sat on top of the counter.

Him: Ndidiniwe ngoku, at least ndincedile yabo!

Bulie : Mxxm

Satshayela and washed the floor when the kitchen was super clean, we went to sit at the lounge.

The music was loud we could not hear the TV.

Me: Masiyeni erumini kaPhakamani

Bulie : I will go and fetch the key

Me: Okay

Vuyo: Kutheni umbiza ngengama uBhuti?

Me: Ndiyazikhelela kuba engekho lapha

Him: Angakuva ke ngoba angaphambana

Me: Okay

PK walked in with Bulie, we was tipsy.

Him: Kwedini ungapliti lomntana

Vuyo: Haibo Ta

Him: Luvuyo!

Vuyo : Okay Ta

Him : Good, ndikujongile!

Bulie: Masambeni

PK : Ningamoshi izinto zam

Me: Eshee

He winked , I rolled my eyes.

We went to chill at PK's room

Me: Andihluthi kamnandi

Vuyo : Same here

Sakhwela phezukwe bhedin and watched a Movie on PK's Laptop.

Later on...

It was around 11pm, biseshushu into phandle.

Me: Ndozela mna ngoku, nindivuse xanihamba

Bulie : Okay

Ndangena phantsi kwengubo and slowly fell asleep.

Ndothuka enzulwini zobusuku ndifuna uchama.

I opened my eyes it was dark, I noticed I was still erumini kaPK. Ndaveske ndanombilini, I switched on the light.

Phakami was fast asleep phofu ungene ngezihlangu engubeni.

Ndaphaka went to open the door, I was scared vah, ndachama ecamkwendlu then went back inside.

I undressed Phakamini washeka nge underwear then ndagena nam.

Immediately after I switched off the light, Phakamani wrapped his arms around my waist and he released a huge sigh.

I slowly fell asleep again, I felt safe in his arms.

My phone rang the following morning.

I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

Spain : Not even a merry Christmas? I'm so disappointed.

Me: I'm sorry , I was busy

Him: Busy come on! I noticed lately you don't when time for me

Me: Please don't say that, I'm gonna make time for you

Him: It's true, when are you planning to make time for me?

Me: Er...

Him: Can I see you today?

Me: I'm not sure

Him: Mxxm

Me: Please don't be like that, we gonna spend time together

Him: Is there someone replacing me?

Me: No, there is no one replacing you. You are over reacting now

Him: When last did you call me or chat with me?

Me: I was busy Simphiwe

Him: Arg whatever!

He hung up

" Ngubani lowo? " Asked PK

Me: Simphiwe

Him: Simphiwe Waphi???

Me: Chomi yam

Him: Sekutheni ekuqangisa nje?

Me: We haven't spent time together, undiqumbele

Him: Ungumntu wakhe lento ezodemand(a) lonto?

Me: Hayi

Him: Hayi hayi, angandiqheli mna

Hehake

Me: We are just friends

Him: Nyends!

Hayi bethunani Unethontsi uPhakamani.

Ndaveske ndakhetha uthula

Him: Uyixelele lantwana that unendoda ngoku...your friendship won't be the same anymore . Andithi yekani ubaziPeto but funeka amazi STOP sign undawoni.

Me: Okay

Him: Good

Wakhwela phezukwam and started kissing me then he stopped.

Him: Kutheni umbi kangaka

Me: Ndifuze wena

Him: Hayi ndimhle mna Yhoo Ulate

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

Me: Jonga ndoyika uya endlini enkulu

Him: Old'lady Usalele

Me: Wazinjani ulapha wena?

Him: I know my Mother Kaloku, it's still past 7 now.

Me: Hambo jonga Kaloku

Him: Okay

Waphakama and left the room, he came back after a short while.

Me: And?

Him: Kusalelwe phana, ndivuse uBulelwa

Me: Okay

Ndaphakama ndanxiba sandals zam and fixed my dress.

PK : You look hot Kodwa

Me: Whatever, iphi kama?

Him: Wakhe wandibona ndikama mna?

Me: Mxxm

He pulled me closer to him and kissed me.

Me: Uzode avuke umamakho

Him: I don't care

He kissed me again, I pulled back

Me: Yagula wena

He giggled

Him: Ndifuze wena

I rolled my eyes then headed to the door

Him: Khaze ndiphuze for the last time.

We kissed for a short while then ndaphuma.

My heart was beating fast as I walked inside. I went straight to the bedroom passing Bulie at the lounge.

She followed me

Me: Why didn't you wake me up last night

Her: Ndithini xasithi uBhuti umfazi wakhe akayindawo?

Me: Ngondivusile

Her: Anyways Mama soze athethe, she is understanding

Me: Yhuuu asoze ayazi

Her : She will njena

Me: Andisoyiki!

Two weeks later...

It was early January, the schools were opening in few days.

I was excited and couldn't wait till they open.

Besingabonani kakhulu noPK because bekunzima, you know how strict my father is.

Luvano yena bengenaxesha lalonto yena, he would go out as he wish and come back ngelakhe ixesha.

I wish I was him sometimes!

Well...

It was Friday morning, the weather was chilly outside.

Mom was taking me out for shopping, we both wore our white dresses. Like Mother like daughter.

We went to greenacres and start shopping then we went to sit at Debonairs after shopping.

Some guy approached us

Him: Molweni

Mama: Hi

Me: Hello

Guy: Is this your youngest daughter?

Mama : Yes

Guy: She is beautiful just like you

Mama: Onika this is Joe my friend and Joe this is my daughter Onika the one I told you about

He took a seat

Him: Nice meeting you Onika

He was tallish with a bold voice, Dark in complexion enetuma. He was handsome I must admit, he was funny and talkative. I liked him andifuni uxoka.

We chatted there for a long while then we left, he accompanied us to the parking. They shared a hug with mom then we left.

Me: He is nice

Mom: I know

Me: I like him

Mom : Please do me a favor

Me: Listening

Her: Don't tell your father

Me: Why?

Her: He will get angry

Me: Is he your boyfriend?

Her: Zintoni ezi uzithethayo???

Me: I was just asking

Then there was awkward silence in the car.

We arrived at home, Dad was watching One Gospel.

Dad: Niyayenza into yobutha eTown

Me: Inkulu iGreenacres inxaki

Him: Ndilambile kemnake, libele undixelele ngeGreenacres

Mom went to the kitchen and made food for her husband while I went upstairs.

I was sleepy so ndalala

PK called later on efuna undibona shushu.

Me: My parents are home

Him: Just for few seconds

Me: Come back later when everyone is sleeping

Him: I will call you

Me: Sure

Him: Ndiyakuthanda vah

Me: I love you too

We hung up.

I went downstairs and joined My family for supper.

We ate talking in between.

I washed the dishes later on then went to sleep.

My phone rang later that night it was around 12 midnight.

Me: Hello

PK : I'm outside

Me: Okay, ndiyeza

Ndahlika ebhedini ndaphatha slippers Ngezandla. Tiptoe walking downstairs, ndavula kancinci ucango but I doubt bazoliva because they are upstairs. I took a deep breath then walked out closing the door behind me.

Phakamani was parking next to the gate this time. Waphuma emotweni

Me: The gate is locked

Wandincedisa utsiba ngapha kweyard.

Sangena emotweni , he drove and parked the car few houses away.

Him: I miss you baby yhoos

Me: I miss you too

Him: I hate this sneaking thing but I guess we don't have a choice.

Me: And we don't

Him: So ndizokubona nini kakuhle?

Me: I don't know

Him: Can I take you out tomorrow?

Me : I'm going to church tomorrow at 3pm

Him: So elam ixesha uzoba nalo nini?

Me: I don't know Phakamani

He was irritating now

Him: I'm sorry if it sounds like I'm putting pressure on you... I'm sorry, it's just that I wish I could see you everyday.

Me: You know that can't happen

Him: I understand

He pulled me closer and started kissing me. His touch was magical, he made me get goosebumps.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him : I'm gonna tell my mother about us

Me: No, it's too soon. Maybe next year Him: What is the difference?

Me: Please let's wait...

Him: Okay...

He pulled me closer to him, I laid my head on his shoulder. We chatted sothuka xayizi past 3 .

Me: I have go

Him: Already?

Me: Yes

He : Okay

We walked the short distance then he helped me jump inside again.

We kissed and said our goodbyes then I walked inside.

The light switched on, Ndaveske ndomelwa sis'rhama.

Luvano was staring at me, holding a glass of water.

Him: Velaphi????

He was dead serious, my body just got weak yangathi andikwazi uthetha.

To be continued...

Insert 14

Ndatanya ntanyaza mntakabawo. Wandijula ngalamanzi ebusweni

Him: Uvelaphi?

Me: Sungxola Kaloku

Ndixakane nento mntakabawo

Him: I will deal with you tomorrow morning

I released huge sigh, he walked upstairs ngezashori zakhe. I switched off the lights and walked upstairs, ndasula ubuso then ndalala .

The next morning...

I woke up late than usual, I was afraid of my brother and was not ready to face him.

I slowly made the bed and opened the window and curtain.

I yawned as I walked to the the bathroom. I did my daily hygiene routine then went back to the bedroom. On my surprise, I found Luvano sitting at the edge of my bed.

Him : Izanazo busukaphi ?

I swallowed very hard

Him: Onika!

Me: Be.. Be..

Him: Unamakhwenkwe ngoku?

Me: Ha... Hayi

My lips were shivering

Him: Buvelaphi ngelaxesha

There was no way out, I had to tell the truth.

Him: Utheni? Awukwazi uthetha?

He stood up, his facial expression made me scared.

Me: Ewe ndine O

His eyes popped

Him: Ngubani lowo?

I looked down

Him HEYII!

Me: NguPK

Him: INTONI!!!!????

He was really furious

Him: Phakamani??? No! You mean PK utye khaya???? Phakamani uyadelela kanjani. Onika andifuni uphinda ndiyibone apha laPoni yandiva?

Me: Ndiyamthanda

Him: He is older then you and sis'bethi laKaka! Onika you gonna break up with him andithandisi kuwe!

Me: Ko-

Him: If I see you near him, ndizokunyisa yandiva!

Me: Ndiyamthanda

Him: You still young Onika, go to your mates. Wazintoni wena ngothando?

I looked down

Him: I mean it Onika that Guy is not right for you, you deserve better then him... He is just not right for you, he is just after sex that's all. I don't want to see you hurting mntase .

He pulled me closer

Him: Did he tell you that he has a girlfriend?

Me: Nope

Him: He is dating another girl from motherwell...I heard rumours that she is also pregnant.

My heart broke into million pieces.

Me: You lying

Him : Just call him and ask him ngubani uAmanda.

Me: Why are you lying??? I don't believe you, Phakamani uyandithanda!

Him: Stop fooling yourself... Phakamani uno560 wakhe, he doesn't love you as he claims. I know him, he is just after sex

Tears started flowing because I really loved Phakamani.

Me: He lied to me.... Why didn't he tell me?

Him: Shiii

Me: He told me that he loved me...

He held me tight , brushing my back

Him: Promise me that you won't go back to that B*****

Me: I don't want to see him again !

Later on...

I was laying on my bed, my face felt dry ready to crack because of the dry tears.

I woke up ndalungisa ibhedi , I went to bath getting ready for church.

As I was applying lotion my phone vibrated, I went to check and it was PK. I just rejected his call and switched off my phone.

I just got furious , talking to myself like a mad woman.

When I was done with everything, I went downstairs. Dad was watching TV together with Mom.

Me: I'm ready

Him: Take a taxi baby or ask Luvano to take you

Luu : I'm gonna take you

Me: Enkosi

Luvano drove me to church

Him: Are you okay?

I nodded

Him: So when did you start dating him?

Me: It doesn't matter

Him : Did you.....

Me: Did what?

Him: Zekazeka?

I giggled

Me: No! Eeuw! He said I'm still young for those things. Eeuw that is disgusting!

Him : Mmmm...

We arrived at church he dropped me and left.

Church went way, but my mind was not there.

I waited for Luvano to come fetch me but he didn't appear .

I couldn't call him because my phone was at home.

I borrowed taxi fare at church and they gave me without hesitation.

Ndakhwela uJikeleza and went home, it was around 5-6 pm.

Ndafika endlini ndaya straight erumini, I just changed and wore my Pyjamas.

I didn't want to seem funny because I know my father doesn't tolerate such behavior.

I went to join my family for supper then went to sleep afterwards without switching my phone on.

Monday morning...

I was feeling a little bit better than Saturday.

I told myself that I won't date again until I get married.

So I woke up early that day, did my morning routine then dressed up in my school uniform.

I tied my bonding then went downstairs, my mother served us breakfast.

Dad: Excited?

I nodded while still had cereal on my mouth

Mom : We want to see you next year in matrix

Me: Nakanjani!

Dad took me to school and gave me lunch money then left.

I saw PK's car by the gate, I took a deep breath.

Bulie : Chomi!!!!!!

I faked a smile

Me: Hello

Her: What's up?

Me : Nothing

PK got out of the car

Him : Onika ndicela uzapha

He was leaning on the car door with both hands tucked into his pockets.

Bulie: Uzondifumana at our usual spot

Me: Okay

I walked closer to him

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni????

Me: Ngantoni?

Him: You have been rejecting my calls , why?

Me : Ngubani uAmanda?????

He closed his eyes for a second

Him : Shit

Me: I trusted you

Him: Ba-

Me: I hate you

He pulled me closer to him, Simphiwe passed us. He was looking at us in disbelief.

Him: Baby mamela

Me: Is she pregnant for you?

Him: Baby.... I can explain

Me: So it's true?

Him: Onika Just give me a chance to explain please

Me: Andifuni uva niks... I'm done

Him: Onika please, I love you!

I yanked myself

Him : Baby...

I just walked straight not looking back.

I was feeling heart broken again, he didn't deny it. So it is true!

First break...

I was walking out of class.

Spain : Onika

Me: Mmmm?

Him: Are you dating Bulie's brother?

Me: Not anymore

Him: But I saw you this morning

Me: We broke up and I don't want to talk about it

Him: Okay... But there is something I want to tell you

Me: Listening

Him : Ever since...

" Come on guys " yelled Bulie

Me: Got to go, chat later

Him: Sure

I rushed to Bulie and we went to buy something.

My phone rang it was PK, I just switched it off.

Bulie : Who was that?

Me: Just be honest with me, Who is Amanda?

She looked away

Me: Why didn't you tell me? Or at least try to warn me? Wandiyeka ndazenza isibhanxa

Her: They broke up chomi

Me: When?

Her : Few days ago

Me: So it's true that she is pregnant?

Her: I don't want to lie but I really don't know. What I can tell you is that my brother really loves you, yes he is a player bla bla bla kodwa since he started dating you he changed.

Me: I don't care anymore, we broke up

Her : What?

Me: Yeah, he lied to me wandenza muncu.

Her: Please don't say that

Me: Let's drop this topic please

Her : Okay

After school...

PK's car was parked outside the gate, he was talking to some guy.

Me: Ndizokubona Bulie

PK : Onika

He came closer to me

Me: Phakamani ndicela wohlukane nam please

PK : Just give me a chance to explain please

Me: There is nothing to explain, if it wasn't for my brother. I would have made myself a fool

Him: So Luvano told you this Shit?

Me: Just go

Luvano arrived, he quickly got out of the car.

Him : What is going on here

PK : Like really Mfethu????

Luu : Onika go wait in the car

I just stood there

PK : Luvano I love you sister without any jokes

Luu: Love?

He giggled

PK : Just give me time to prove myself

Luu: Time to impregnate my sister?

PK : Why would I do that? Am I a baby machine? I'm sorry mfethu, I know I have crossed the line but I love her

Luu: Just stay the fuck away from my sister if ufuna sivane

PK : I love your danm sister, I will do whatever to prove that to her even if it means we gonna be enemies

Luu: Stay away from her

He grabbed my arm and we got in the car.

Me: Like really?

He: Shut the hell up!

Ndathula immediately , he was really angry.

To be continued...

I'm sorry for the errors.

It's a mini I know!

(Mini Skirt) I'm busy guys please
understand.

Insert 15

We arrived home without uttering a single word.

Gloria : How was school?

Me: You don't wanna know!

I then walked upstairs full of anger slamming the door behind me.

Ndafika erumini ndazijula ebhedini and rewind what just happened at school.

Tears started to escape eyes, My mind wanted to forget him, while my heart still loved him.

I regret the the day I fell in love, because if I didn't non of this would be happening.

I slowly fell asleep until my mother's voice awaken me.

Her: Baby Kwenzeka ntoni?

She was placing her hand on my forehead checking my temperature.

Me: Headache

Her: Did you take any medicine?

I shook my head

Her: Okay, ndiyabuya

She came back with pain pills then she told me to take off my school uniform and rest.

I did as I was told and lay down for a while.

Later on...

I went downstairs and joined my family for supper.

Dad: How was school Onika

Me: School was okay

Luvano was looking at me

Mom: Haibo kutheni ingathi Upholelwe?

Me: I'm not

Dad : Upholelwe unjalo but ndikufuna kwa Grade 12 next year.

Me: I'm going there

This topic was so boring and irritating because my mind was not there.

After we finished eating, we prayed then sayolala.

My phone was still off and I was not even bothered.

Two weeks later...

It was a Saturday afternoon, I was preparing for church.

My phone vibrated , I checked the number it was PK.

I debated with myself, should I answer? No, Don't answer it.

I just grabbed my phone and answered Me: Hello

Him:(Released a sigh) Finally

Me: What do you want PK?

Him: Onika can I see you today?

Me: Why?

Him: You know why, just hear me out first

Me: You lied to me Phakamani and you still expect me to trust you again?

Him: Can we just meet just for few minutes please Onika

Me: No

Him : I know you angry but I don't blame you.... Please just hear my side of the story then you can decide from there

Me: It's not necessary, I have already moved on

Him: It is necessary, because I haven't moved on, I will be better once I talk to you please.

Me: Okay

Him: Thank you

Me: Oh please

Him: So what time?

Me: Come fetch me and take me to church

Him: What about your parents?

Me: I'm gonna wait for you at our usual spot

Him: Okay , What time?

Me: 2:30

Him: Sure

We hung up

I took a bath, applied lotion then wore my black and white dress, my black sandals then iron my bonding and styled it.

When I was done with everything I took my bible and sling bag ndayezantsi.

Me: I'm gonna take a taxi

Dad : Minus one problem

Luu: Sekutheni watsibela ukhwela taxi? I'm gonna take you

Me: Thanks but no Thanks.... Ndifuna ukhwela Jikeleza

Luu: Okay

Mama: Nayo mali yokhwela?

I shook my head

Her : Go to my purse and take from my wallet

Me: Okay

I took the money then I left it was already 2:30 , as ndijika ikona I saw PK's car from a distance.

As I approach the car the front seat door opened, I got in.

Him: Hi

Me : Hi

Him: I feel ashamed andikwazi nokujonga.

Me: No need to

Him: I should have been honest with you from the-

Someone knocked at the window, we turned to look and it was Luvano.

I just closed my eyes because he was yelling.

PK opened the door and got out, Luvano wafaka inqindi kuPhakamani.

Ndaphuma ngoko nangoko,

Luu: Awumameli NEH?

Phakamani was covering his nose

Me: Bhuti stop

PK : Andifuni ulwa nawe Mfethu

Luu: Then stay the hell away from my sister!

PK : Kanti yintoni ingxaki yakho Luvano?

Luu: If you know what is good for you, you will stay away!

PK : Ndiyamthanda uSister wakho Luvano!

He grabbed Phakamani wamdibanisa neMoto.

Luu: It was first Amanda now my sister? What the hell do you want from me?

PK : So this is all about Amanda????

Luu: Just stay away from my sister

Me: Niyandi jonginsa

PK : I didn't force Amanda to sleep with me,

Luu : She was my woman

PK : How were I supposed to know? Was your name written in her forehead?

Luu: Fuck you man!

PK : You being unreasonable, I only found out that day you saw us at the mall that she has a boyfriend.

Luu: Why didn't you dump her?

PK : She told me that she dumped you and She loved me!

My brother got mad

Luu : So you think you will get whatever you want?

PK : I mean like usabambe into eyenzeka years ago?

Luu: I loved her!

PK : I'm sorry bro, but I didn't force her into anything. She came begging not me!

Luu: Fuck you!

PK : Please let's make peace and move on!

Luu: Never!

PK : What happened between you, me and Amanda, it's history. Come on we were still in Grade 8 dude.

Luu: I will never approve your relationship with my sister libala!

I was just standing there feeling stupid

PK : You can't decide for her, she can make her own decisions

Luu: Fuck you uyandiva????

PK : Please man I'm begging you, for the sake la Onika.

Luu: Onika Masambe!

PK : Onika look me in the eye and tell me you don't love and I should stay away.

Luu : Tell him Onika

I wish I could but I would be lying

Luu: Come on Onika

I looked at Phakamani, I just couldn't

Luu : Then you have to choose between me and PK, if you choose him then you must know I'm not your brother anymore!

Me: You guys are sick you need serious prayers.

I left them standing there ndakhwela uJikeleza.

Arrived at church very pissed, but I didn't take my frustrations on anyone.

After church I went back home not in the mood for anything.

I just walked to my room and locked myself.

Later on...

I heard a noise coming from downstairs.

" Uyandimetshe! Kholiswa? "

Zabe zingena impama kuMama, I rushed downstairs.

Tata : Go to your room before Ndikudibanise Nawe!

I ran upstairs ndinomsindo.

I called Luvano and told him what was happening.

Yangathi belapha ecamkwendlu then there was a lot of noise coming downstairs.

Luu: Betha kum

He was standing in front of my mother

Dad: Luvano suka okanye uzolimala!

Luu: Andiyindawo, betha kum

Dad: Kwedini ndithi sukaa

Luu: Ndidikiwe Yilento yakho yobethana noMama

Dad : Xawugubani wena?

Luu: Luvano Junior Silo!

Dad: Well did your mother tell you that she is sleeping around?

Luu: Do you blame her???? Wena Kaloku uyambetha!

Dad: Phumani niphelile endlini yam

Luu: Phuma wena! Asiyi ndawo thina!

My father was so furious he grabbed Luvano and choked him.

Luvano defended himself wabamba uTata wamnyusa ngeDonga.

Wawumbi lombono, I will never forget that day.

Luu: Andoqeni ukunyathela but the fact is that you still my father. Please do yourself a favor and never touch my mother again or else you will have me to deal with Nxaaa!

He let go of him and walked upstairs my father stormed out of the house and left with his car.

I just went back to my room because bendingazazi ba mandithini.

Few days later...

It was a Thursday afternoon, I was sitting in my room doing my homework. Luvano walked in, I just ignored him ngoba besingathethisani.

Him: Onika

Me: Bhuti ndibusy

Him: I hate this tension between us, I'm leaving next week. So I don't want to leave things like this.

Me: What do you want from me?

Him: I want our relationship back

Ndathula , he came closer to me and turned my head so that I can face him.

Him: Onika you are my younger sister, I love you and I want the best for you.

I didn't utter a word

Him : I was only trying to protect you ntwana... I'm sorry for putting you in that awkward position ...please forgive me

Me: I'm sorry for allowing lento kaPK to come between, I'm sorry

He pulled me closer to him

Him: I love you ntwana and I want the best for you.

Me: I know...

He broke from my embrace

Him : Can I help?

Me: Not really, I have everything in control

Him: I forgot you are a genius

I giggled

Me: I'm not

Him: Okay xawusitsho

He then left after that, I finished my homework and went downstairs.

Mom was busy marking some papers

Me: Can I help?

Her: Yes please, take the grade 8 Maths memorandum and Mark their answer sheets.

I did as I was told and marked the papers.

Later on....

Mom went to cook and I followed her

Me: Show me how to cook also

Her: Okay

I didn't want to be a spoiled brat , I cooked that day with my mothers help.

Dad didn't join us for supper and I didn't care.

Next day...

Mom took me to school and gave me lunch money.

Her: I won't be able to come fetch you after school, you have to take a taxi home

Me: Okay Mama

She placed a kiss on lips

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

After school...

I left with Simphiwe walking to the taxi rank.

Him: Look who is taking a taxi today

Me: What is wrong with that?

Him: Nothing

Me: Awulambanga?

Him: Nope

Me: Ndilambile mna

He giggled then we went to Hungry Lion and bought something to eat.

We sat there chatting, eating and laughing then I went home later on.

Fika ndlini Ndakhulula and went to sit at the lounge, I was not in the mood to study.

Luvano walked in

Him: Masambe

Me: Siyaphi?

Him: You will see

Me: Okay

Him: When last did you hear from PK?

Me: Let's not talk about him please

Him: Okay

We drove to this car wash

Him: Undikhuphela eCar wash like really ?

Him: Like you had something better to do

I rolled my eyes and we got out of the car. They started greeting Luvano

Guy1: Uyija wena! Ubambe yona

Luu: Unxilile nguSister wam lona

Guy2 : Andinofumani noba zi digits

Luu: Phambene!

We went to sit at some wooden chair.

Xandisithi Phakamani was standing in front of us.

Luu: Exe ntwanaz

They hand shake, I was confused .

I looked at Luvano

Him: Just hear him out

Then he left

PK took a seat next to me

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

Him: Unjani?

Me: I'm good you?

Him: Ndiyazama

Then there was awkward silence

Him: I love you Onika

Me: You lied to me Phakamani

Him: I know and I'm sorry

Me: It doesn't matter anyway

Him: It does to me because ndiyakuthanda!

Me: What about Amanda? The baby she is carrying?

Him: I broke up with her because I loved you and for the pregnancy. I doubt it's me!

Me: You were sleeping with her njena

Him: She was not sleeping with me alone, after I found out she was cheating we started using a condom.

Ndathula

Him: Onika please give me a second chance, I love you please

Me: I can't

He touched my hand

Him: Please

He looked at me with pitiful eyes, I couldn't deny it I loved him.

He pulled me closer for a kiss, I didn't stop him because I wanted this as much as he did.

" Hayi kaloku Kancane I'm still here " yelled Luvano.

We giggled

PK : I love you

Me: I love you too

Hayi uThando bethuna!

To be continued...

Insert 16

My brother though, yathanda uzenza mdala kanjani.

PK : Let's take a walk

Me: Okay

Saphakama and we started leaving

Luu: Hayi niyaphi?

Me: Taking a walk

Luu: Hayi ndifuna unibona, phelelani apha!

PK : Like seriously bra

Luu: Yintoni lena nifuna uyenza?

PK : So uzosigada ngoku????

Luu: Funeke niphelele emehlweni am

PK surrendered and we went to sit where we were sitting.

Later on, Luvano took me home.

Dad was already home but mom was not yet back.

I greeted then went upstairs to my room.

I changed to my pyjamas, it was around 5pm, so I went back downstairs and started cooking because icacile umama uzobuya late.

Noko bendikwazana upheka but not perfect.

I made the easy stuff, pasta and mince.

Luvano : Ndaveske ndahlutha ndingekaty

Me: Ungapholelwa ndim

Him: Ukwazelaphi upheka wena?

I rolled my eyes

Me: Oh please, yakwazi wena?

He giggled and sat on top of counter

Me: Hlika Bhuti apho yamazi umama uzothetha non stop if angafika uhleli apho

Him: And unyanisile

He moved to one of the high chairs and swing around.

Me: Awozeli?

Him: Xabekutheni?

Me: You giving me pressure, andizokwazi upheka ulapha

Him: Unamatshamba

Me: Nyani

Him: Okay

He surrendered and walked out, then I focused on what I was doing.

Later on...

I set the table then called my brother and father to the table, I served them the food although they had doubts written on their face.

Me: Let us pray

We joined hands and I said grace.

Luu: At least I'm covered... I hope Tata your funeral cover is up to date.

Tata : Let me check my medical

Me: Oh please

They giggled then they started to eat, I didn't want to look at them because bebe zondi caphukisa.

They finished the food, that was a sign that they enjoyed the food.

Luu: Not bad

Tata : That was delicious..

I smiled

Me: Still need to check your medical?

They giggled , I took the plates and went to wash them.

I later went to sleep, Mom was still not back.

The following morning...

It was sunny outside, I did my morning routine then went to sit at the lounge, switched on the TV and watched style channel.

Gloria walked in

Her : Bring your laundry

Me: Okay Mama

I went upstairs and brought my washing bucket.

Gloria : Enkosi

I nodded and went back to the lounge.

Mom walked in the lounge wearing her gown and slippers.

Her: Morning

Me: Morning, when did you arrive last night?

Her: Ndibuye ebusuku

Me: Buyephi?

Her : I had a workshop

Me: Okay

Then we started chatting about general stuff wethu .

Few months later...

It was Monday morning, early July.

I received a call early in the morning, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

PK : (Singing) Happy Birthday day to you!

I didn't know he remembered, a smile slowly appeared on my face.

Me: I didn't know, you remembered my birthday

Him: Andilibali yonke into Kaloku mna, Someone is 16 today Happy!

Me: You don't know how happy you made me feel right now,

Him : That is my duty baby, to make you happy and to put a smile on your face.

Me: I love you

Him: I love you more

Me: I love you more than you love me

Him: I love you triple more than you love me

I giggled

Him: Can I see you today?

Me: I doubt if you gonna see me because maybe my family will want to spend time with me.

Him: Can I come when everyone is asleep?

Me: Okay

Him : See you later...

Me: Sure

Then we hang up, Bulie and Simpibe also called later on to wish me a happy birthday.

I woke up later, it was around 7am. I couldn't sleep anymore.

I made the bed, opened the curtain then went to the bathroom washed my face and brushed my teeth, when I was done, I walked downstairs.

On my surprise, My aunt was sitting at the lounge. I ran to her and hugged her I really loved her like nyani.

" Happy Birthday to you! " Started voices to sing. I turned to look, it was my mother, and brother singing while mom was holding a cake with 16 candles.

I couldn't utter a word, I was just speechless.

They came towards me

Mama : Happy Birthday princess

Dad: Happy Birthday mntanam

Luvano : Happy Birthday Ntwanz

They all have me hugs, I just wished my sister was her. I really missed her.

Mom : What's wrong?

Me: I miss Thobile

Mom: You will see her

Then she hugged me tight

Dad : Here is your present

I unwrapped it, Wow it was a laptop

Luu: Yatsho yaphumla eyam

I rolled my eyes

Me: Enkosi Tata

I gave him a hug

Mama : Here

I also unwrapped it, it was a two laptop bags and a printer.

Me: Enkosi, Now I have my own laptop and printer. Thank you thank you!

I kissed her

Luu: Ina, don't compare

Me: Like seriously

I unwrapped the present, Wow it was that expensive headphones I was saving for.

Me: Wow enkosi bhuti!!

I looked at them

Me: Wow, Bulie and Simpiwe will get jealous

Luu: You can use your savings for something else

Me: You are the best brother ever!

I hugged him tight

Him: Pheza ngoku uyandijongisa!

Me: Mxxm

Aunt: Ungandijongi mna, andiphethanga nix

Me: Don't worry your presence means a lot to me!

She smiled

Later on...

I invited Simpiwe and Bulie, my father was taking the whole family out for my birthday.

We went to celebrate my birthday at the beach.

I was so excited to see Thobile there, I hugged her not wanting to let go.

Luu: Yintoni nasibukelisa uKhumbule Khaya

T: Esheee

We giggled, that was one of the best days of my life.

We went to spur later on.

We ordered whatever we wanted, I really enjoyed myself.

Around 6pm , we went to drop Simpiwe and Bulie then we went home.

I was feeling tired, I went take a bath and wore only my gown, I wanted to feel free.

I then went to join my family downstairs.

UMakazi bengumntu othanda uhlekisa full of funny stories.

I sat next to her and placed my head on her shoulder.

Luu: Makazi busabalisa Kaloku

Maki : Yhoooo, kudala wandiqhata uKholiswa. Kalok ndifika utya ichewing gum and it turned her tongue blue.

Ndaqonduba ndiyayi bawela, ndabuza uyithengephi ,wandixelela and I asked ndizofika ndithi ndifuna ntoni? Wathi, Ithi ufuna ichew. Nam ndaya ndafuna lechew, ndasikelwa into emnyama.

I took it, ndayihlafuna apha endleleni, it was so bitter, ndanyamezela hoping it will turn blue. Akandihleka xandifika endlini, wathi " Sisi ayiyo" ndingesenamsindo!

Akayihleka uMama,

Dad: Usile Kholiswa

Mom : I didn't know ba uzobuya naleyana

Luu: Uzobane sono MAMA!

Ndithi Oko sihleka the whole night ezinto zika Makazi. We went to sleep later on.

Ndafika ndangena ndinganxibanga ezingubeni.

My phone vibrated after few minutes it was PK.

Me: Hello

Him : I'm outside

Me: Okay

I reached for my gown and wore it.

I tiptoe walking downstairs, when I reached the door I took a deep breath, my heart was beating so fast, I was scared , what if they notice I'm gone?, because kusandolalwa.

I unlocked the door and slowly closed it. Sancedisa nomntu wam unditsibisa sana, we walked to the car.

Him : Kutheni ingathi awunxibanga nje? Me: My body needs piece of mind

He giggled then pulled me closer for a kiss then he pulled back.

Him: Did you enjoy your day?

Me: You have no idea , I really enjoyed it

Him: Good...Close your eyes

Me: Why?

Him: Z

I giggled and did as I was told

Him: You can now open

Me: Wow, it's beautiful Phakamani, I love it

Him : Look at mine

I looked at it, it looked the same as mine but my was designed for the ladies.

Him: It was a set

I hugged him and planted many kisses on his face

Him: Uyayibaxa ngoku!

I giggled then he took my left arm wandinxibisa.

Me: I love it

Him: I knew you gonna love it!

We kissed a long passionate kiss, he pulled back.

Me: What?

Him: You turning me on

Me: I'm sorry

Him: No problem

We chatted for a while then it was time for me to go.

Him: Do you really have to go?

Me: Akho way

Him: I wish we can stay like this for a little while.

Me : NEH? But circumstances doesn't allows us

Him : I know ...

I went back home later on and nobody noticed that I was gone. I was really in love with my new watch.

I really didn't like school holidays because it was boring at home, I have to stay indoors all day and church was boring vah.

I just couldn't wait for the schools to open so that I can spend more time with my friends and my boyfriend.

To be continued...

Insert 17 (Mini)

Few weeks later...

The June holiday was over, it was back to school. I was excited like really excited, I could not wait to see my friends and spend enough time with my babe. Luvano had already gone back to Cape Town, I didn't want him to go but he had no choice.

Well...

Monday morning, it was cloudy outside and very cold.

I was sitting at the table with Mom and Dad eating breakfast.

Mom: Baby

She was referring to me

Me: Ma?

She cleared her throat and look at Dad who was looking at his plate.

Her : I'm leaving...just for a short period of time

Me: Uyaphi?

Her: I'm going home

Me: Makhulu is no more njena, uyakubani phana?

Her: I need time alone, away from everything

Me: I don't understand

Her: Please don't misunderstand me, I love you princess and kakhulu. But I need time to clear my mind, all the stress is to much.

Me: Can I go with you?

She shook her head

She placed her hand on top of mine .

Her: No, you have to go to school

Me: Ndizosheka nabani?

Her : Tatakho

I sulked

Her : Khayeke ufeketha Onika

Me: Andifuni usheka noTata mna!

Her : It's only few days

Me: Hayi kodwa

Her : I promise, I will call you everyday

Me: Okay

Her : I love you vah

I nodded, Dad was quite not uttering a single word

Mom took me to school late on.

Her : When you get home after school, I will be already gone

Me: I'm gonna miss you

Her : I'm gonna miss you too, come here...

She pulled me closer for a hug

Her : I love you

Me: I love you too

She gave me a peck on the forehead

Her : Bye

Me: Bye

I got out of the car, PK was waiting for me.

Mom left then I went to PK, He pulled me closer to him and kissed me with passion.

He pulled back, my eyes were still closed , he whispered " I missed you" in my ears. His voice was magical as if an angel was whispering on my ear, the sense of his breath made my whole body experience goosebumps.

Him: Let's spend time together day

Me: Kuyabanda njena

Him: sizoyohlala pha kum

Me: Ndizothi ndiphi KuTatam?

Him :Please come up with something

Me: Okay

Him : I'm counting on you vah?

I nodded

Him : See you later

Me: Okay, Uphi uBulie?

Him: I told her to wait for you inside

Me: Okay

We kissed then he left.

I found Bulie chatting with Spain .

Me: Molweni

Spain : Yintoni umuncwa phakathi kwabantu? Awunantloni!

Me: Hayi kengoku Simphiwe

Him: Only sluts do that

Andakhubeka

Me: So zama uthini?

Bulie : Oh please Spain, Mona yintoni?

Spain: Mona? andinamona mna, why would I be? I'm concerned about her, because she is destroying her life, that guy doesn't love her , he only wants to sleep with her and when he is done with her, he will dump her like trash!

Bulie : That's my brother you talking about

Him : I don't care, I'm so disappointed on you Onika! I thought you were a girl of dignity but I guess I was wrong...

Me: Like seriously

Him: I mean like, you opening your legs for older man, sies awuzithandi!

I didn't expect that from him, I was shocked. I mean like what the hell?

I couldn't utter a single word.

Bulie : Simphiwe please go

Him : I'm going!

He licked his tongue enyanye ephe busweni.

Bulie : Do not mind him

Me: I can't believe its Simphiwe saying all of this things.

Her: Mxxm, he is a jerk!

After school....

I called my Dad and told him that I have afternoon classes and I'm gonna take a taxi home later. He didn't ask to much, he just said okay. I thought he was gonna ask, How is it possible kodwa the school just opened? Her dissapointed me I guess.

PK came to fetch us, we drove straight to his house.

Bulelwa went inside while we to his flat outside.

The weather was changing, the wind was blowing and it began to rain.

Him: Awulambanga?

Me: Lunch bar

He giggled

Him: Ndithenge iPizza

Me: Mmmmmm....

I undressed ndasheka ngespencer namagusha.

Him: Choose a movie meanwhile, ndiyeza.

He went out, I took the laptop and the food, ndangena ezingubeni.

I chose a movie then started eating, wangena PK ebaleka.

Me: Shame umntu wam

Him: Ayinethi iyagalela apha phandle

Me: Yhoo, ndinga funi ugoduka kemnake kwezozithuba

Him: Nxilile

I giggled

Her undressed then wangena ezingubeni

Me: Awusabandi , suthi ncaa apha kum

Him: Mxxm unepolitics kanjani!

Me: Ndiryt

Him: Ubuzwe ngubani? Ngoba bendikuxelela

Me: Mxxm

He squeezed me tight

Him: Andizova ngawe

I just let him be

After a few minutes, we ate while watching the movie.

Him : I wish we can stay like this the whole night babe

Me: Same here

After the movie, I was sleepy.

Him : Kutheni ingathi uyozelela?

Me: Ndozela

Him: Soze undenzele lonto

He placed the laptop next to the bed and got on top of me.

Me: What are you doing

He started poking me, I giggled

Me: Stop

Him : Make me stop

I was giggling non stop, he stopped after a while.

He started kissing me , simane siyeka and chatting in between.

His manhood stood up, my heart started to beat fast .

Him : Relax, nothing is gonna happen

Wahluka and squeezed me tight. Both of our hearts were beating.

Him: Don't be scared, I won't force you into anything.... I'm gonna wait till you ready okay?

I nodded

He took me home later on. Luckily my Dad was not home yet.

Ndafika ndalala, thinking of my man.

To be continued...

Insert 18

A week later...

It was a Tuesday afternoon, I was coming from school.

Gloria was busy at the kitchen .

Me: Molo Gloglo

She turned and looked at me

Her : You back? What time is it?

Me: Zi too 3

Her : Oh it's late

Me: anything to eat?

Her : Sikhona iSonka

Me: Okay

I went upstairs and changed to something comfortable , then I went back downstairs.

I made myself a sandwich and went to sit at the lounge and ate.

I was not in the mood to study and there was nothing interesting playing on TV.

I went to sit outside and read a book, as I was reading, there was a noise across the street. It was children playing, I stood by the gate and watched. I got carried away , I opened the gate and went to join the crowd.

I could tell by their facial expressions that they were shocked to see me.

Me: Can I join you?

They all said yes.

Tsibiri tsibiritsa, tsibi tsibiritsa... Siya vora vora tsibiritsa, Siya vora vora tsibiritsa... Ndicela uzijonge ba awunantsente, uzijonge ba awunantsente!
(Singing)

I was really enjoying myself, we also played "Uduva" Lol I was running like there is no tomorrow. Kumnandi udlala nabanye abantwana kodwa.

My Dad arrived as I was playing, I stopped everything I was doing and rushed home.

Girl1: Haibo Uyaphi?

" Ndiyagoduka bye! "

" Yintoni ekufuna phandle? " asked my father as I walked in.

Me: I was bored

Him: Bored? Kodwa you in grade 11?

I kept quiet and looked down

Him: Sowu phekile?

Me: Hayi

Him : It 16:50, ulibonile ixesha phofu?

Me: Hayi... Ewe

Him: Bandikhe ndafika again uthe saa ingcodo phandle, ndizokubonisa abantu!

Then he walked upstairs, ndakhe ndajonga imilenze yam, hayi kodwa andinazo ingcondo.

I went to the bathroom, washed my face then washed my hands, ngoba bendibilile.

When I was done, I went to the kitchen and started cooking.

Dad walked in

Him : It's fine I'm gonna buy takeaways

Me: Sendiphekile

Him : Okay ke

He then walked out, I finished cooking then set the table.

I called my father and told him to come eat.

We sat there quietly, bendingenancoko naye, I just missed Mom in moments like that.

Him: Have you prepared for the trial exam?

Me: Ewe

Him: Ndifuna A bodwa kemnake Onika

Me: YOu can count on me

That topic was boring, he was talking non stop giving me a headache.

When we were done, I cleared the table and washed our dishes.

I then went upstairs and did my homework then studied a little.

After some few hours, I closed my books then took a bath and wore i my pyjamas.

My phone started to ring as I was putting on my pyjamas , I reached for it then answered.

Me: Hello

Mom : Hey baby, unjani?

Me: Andikho right, ubuya nini?

Her: Soon

Me: When is soon? I'm missing you

Her : Next week

Me: Ikude lonto mama

Her: Awusafekethi ingathi uyancanca

Me: Hayi it's boring here without you, come back home.

Her : I will come home don't worry

Me: Okay

Her : Did you do your homework?

Me: Ewe

Her : Did you cook?

Me: Yes, yes, yes... Ndenze yonke into

Her: Good girl, don't forget to sleep early

Me: Haibo mama, I'm not a toddler

She giggled

Her: You will always be a toddler to me even if you get married

Me: Seyi nguMama

Her: You will always be my little princess

Me: Mama

Her : Mmmm?

Me: Can I ask you something?

Her : Listening

Me: When can I have a boyfriend?

Her: Hayi hayi...angakivi uTatakho uthetha lonto.

Me: Why?

Her: It's a sin

Me: What is a sin?

Her : A sin is something that is unGodly

Me: Is beating your wife Godly?

Her : Onika please

Me: Hayi Mama, that man is a control freak

Her : Count your words Missy, It's your father you talking about

Me: He is not my father, why don't you let Joe be my father?

Her: Goodnight Onika, ziyando yikisa ezinto uzithethayo

Me: But Ma-

Her: Will call you tomorrow, I love you

Me: Ma-

She hug up, " I love you too" I said in a low voice kodwa akandiva.

I noticed that I had 9 missed calls, 4 from PK and 3 from Luvano .

I tried to call Luvano but he was not picking up, same applies to PK.

I putted my phone on the charger ndalala.

I woke up the following morning and did my morning routine then Dad took me to school, he gave me a R50 note.

Me: Enkosi

Him: See you later at home

Me: Okay

Him : Ndifuna ufika ugqibile upheka

Me: Okay

We said our goodbyes then I got off.

Phakamani's car was not parked by the gate as usual.

I took out my phone and tried to call him as I entered the school premises, the phone was ringing but ingaphendulwa, I tried several times it was the same thing.

Bulie was waiting for me at our usual spot.

Me : Chomi

Her : Chomi yam

We shared a hug

Me: Uphi uBhuti wakho?

Her: Mxxm khange avuke, Mom brought me today.

Me: Oh, he is not answering his phone , I tried to call him

Her: Yhoo

Simphiwe walked on us

Him : Molweni

Bulie : What do you want?

Her looked at me

Me: Just go Simphiwe, ayisekho into esidibanisayo, just go!

Him: I'm sorry Onika

Me: Just go, I hate you!

Bulie : Go!

Him : Okay, just know that I'm truly sorry and wish I could take back my words

Me: Mxm

Then he left

Me: Can you believe that?

Bulie : Mxxm he is a crazy

After school....

I walked to the taxi rank with my headphones on. I started at Hungry Lion to buy ice cream, I stood at the quay waiting for my turn. Someone tapped on my shoulder, I turned and looked. It was some guy , wearing a school uniform as well.

Andifuni uxoka he was cute, I removed headphones

Him: your bag is opened

Me: My bag?

He zipped it ndisalibele kubuza

Me: Oh, Enkosi

He smiled

Him : No problem

I looked ahead of me again

Him : Where did you buy your headphones?

Ndabheka

Me: My brother bought them for me

Him : They look cool, can I try them?

Me: Sure

I handed him the headphones , he plugged them and started to move his head with a smile on his face.

I bought the ice cream, he also bought something to eat.

Him: Where do you stay?

Me: Zwide

Him: Masambe but ndihlale Dwesi

Me: Okay

Him : This earphones are cool, I should get myself one

Me: R2000

Him : What? Your brother loves you hey

Me: Yeah

Him: Well I'm Baliso, wena?

Me: Onika

Him : It's nice meeting you

Me: Same here

We arrived at the rank and went our separate ways.

I arrived home, Gloria was sitting at the lounge.

Me: Molo Gloglo

Her : It's that time already?

Me : Yes

I went upstairs, did my homework and changed to comfortable clothes, then went downstairs.

Gloria was leaving , she then said goodbye as she was walking out.

I started to cook, wafika uTata ndigqibo pheka, it was around 5pm.

Me: Ndigqibile upheka

Him: Okay, I will first take a bath

Me: Okay

My phone rang as he was walking upstairs, it was PK.

Me Hello

Him : Unjani Mntuwam?

Me: I'm good you?

Him: I'm not good because Kchange ndikubone

Me: Nyani?

Him : Ewe Tshini, can I come see you tonight?

Me: No, I will see you tomorrow

Him : Please baby

Me: Andizokwazi

Him: Okay ke

Me: Bye

Him : Bye

Me: Qumbile kengoku

Him : No, it's cool .

Me: Okay

Andikwazi kemnake ucenga. We hung then I later served the food.

Few months later...

It was early December, My Mom was back and Luvano as well, but there was a tension at home, Mom and Dad didn't look happy. They were fighting everyday, they would yell, scream, shout at each other.

Luvano just didn't give a danm, he would only interfere when Dad was trying to lay a hand on my mother.

I was going to grade 12 the following year.

This atmosphere at home, was not gonna be healthy for me at all and will interfere with my books.

Why can't I have a normal family like everyone?

To be continued...

Insert 19

It was a Friday evening, my brother was out with his friends.

I was left with my dramatic, boring, annoying parents.

Mom was busy preparing food at the kitchen while I was forced to watch a gospel show. I had to smile and pretend as if I love what I was watching.

Dad: Onika

Me: Ta ?

Him: go fetch my bible

Ndaveske ndadikwa, who wants to read the bible on a Friday evening? My dad is a mood killer.

I went to fetch the Bible trying by all means to keep my face normal.

He talked non stop, telling me to keep my body holy bla bla bla... I mean like xabekutheni?

Mom served the food later on, I blessed the food then we ate chatting in between.

I cleared the table when we were done eating then I washed the dishes.

As I was busy washing the dishes, I heard a noise coming from upstairs. Mom and Dad were yelling at each other, I heard things breaking.

I dropped the cloth then I went running upstairs .

Him: Onika go to your room

Me: Daddy please

Him: AWUNDIVA NDITHINI?

he said in a loud, scary bold voice. I swallowed very hard my hands shivering.

Me: I'm not going anywhere! I'm tired Dad!

He grabbed me roughly, hurting me physically

Mom: Leave her alone!

Dad didn't listen, He opened my bedroom door wandilahla pha, I fell on the ground kabuhlungu njan.

Him: SUZI NGENA IZINTO EZINGAKUFUNIYO!!!! UNGUMNTANA INTO OYIYO!

Then he locked me inside, my head was hurting.

I places my hand where it was hurting the most, closing one eye as a sign of pain then tears followed.

As I was listening to the pain, I heard my Mom screaming, crying for help. My hands were tight, I could not help my mother, that made me cry even more.

I wanted to call Luvano but my phone was downstairs.

I closed my ears leaning on the door, I could not take it anymore. Dad was beating the hell out of her. The way she was crying, I had to close my ears because I could not take it anymore, the sound of her crying voice was unbearable , it was too much.

After something like forever, there was silence. I stood up and knocked at the door hoping he will open but unfortunately he did not.

Ndazicenga and went to bed without undressing only removed my shoes.

I covered my whole body and started crying again non stop till ndabiwa bubuthongo.

"ONIKAYO!....ONIKA.... " yelled Luvano banging on my door. I slowly opened my eyes, my face felt so dry, It was morning already.

Him: ONIKA VULA

I cleared my throat, rubbing my eyes

Me: Okay!

I said as I slowly got up, I dragged my feet as I walked towards the door, I stood in front of the door ready to open but it crossed my mind that benditixelwe kanene.

Me: Tell dad to come open for me

Him: Open for you? Why? Did he lock you up?

Me: Ewe, last night

Him : Why?

Me: He was beating Mom

Him : INTONI??????

He asked in a furious voice

Me: Yes, I tried to stop him but he did not listen.

I said in a low tone

Me: Bhuti

There was no response

Me: Bhuti!

Still no response

I banged on the door, then I realized that he was gone, ndiphume nini mna kengoku??

I turned around and slowly sat on the edge of the bed.

" Voetsek kwedini! Ndinguyihlo! " said my father's bold voice in a yelling tone.

I stood up and listen again.

" AwunguTata wam wena! " replied Luvano's voice then there was a violent noise. I heard screams, Gloria and Mom , begging them to stop. I could tell that it was a serious fight between Luvano and Dad. The noise that was coming from downstairs was really bad. I wanted to come out but could not.

Mom: Oh yhini Nkosi enofefe!!! Luvano stop..... you killing him

Gloria : Vava, oh yhini Khamxolele ...uyambulala.

Luvano : THIS IS THE LAST WARNING! IF YOU DARE TOUCH MY MOTHER AGAIN, I SWEAR I WILL KILL YOU!

Hayi I hate my family, I hate everything about my family, I hate my life.

Why is life so unfair? Why was I born in this family?

Tears slowly escaped my eyes as those thoughts crossed my mind. I wish I was born from another family where I would be like every normal child, play with others, learn by mistakes and cherish what I have.

Hours later...

Someone knocked on my door.

Me: Kutixiwe!

Mom: Vula Kaloku sisi

Me: I don't have the key, dad has the key.

Her : Okay

I heard her footsteps leaving and coming back again, then I heard the sound of the key unlocking the door.

The door slowly swing open, she entered wearing her blue maxi dress. Her face was swollen, she looked like a monster, she was unrecognizable.

That broke my heart into million pieces, I could not stop my tears from flowing.

Me: Xolo mama

I said with tears on my face

She came closer and pulled me closer to her chest.

Her: I'm sorry

Me: I tried to stop him Mom, I'm sorry I didn't do anything....

Her:(Teary) Shiiii

Me: I hate him, he is not my father, I don't want to see him again Mama.... Tell him to go please!

She held me tight as I was sobbing, I could tell she felt my pain.

Me: Xolo Mntanam... Everything will be alright.

Two days later...

It was a Tuesday afternoon, Dad was at work, Mom was out, she went to see a friend. I was left alone at home with Gloria.

Gloria : It's Christmas next week what are your plans?

Me: Don't have

Gloria : Why don't you go shopping and buy your parents presents?

Me: I don't have parents, They both died yesterday

She looked at me with a shocked face, hoping I would say I was joking, but unfortunately I was not.

Her : Hayi njani? Your parents are still alive

Me: I am an orphan!

I said then rushed upstairs, I hated both my parents for putting me in this state. They pretend as if nothing happened, they are selfish bacingela bona bodwa!

I took a bath then ndanxiba jean, White T-shirt and sneakers. I took my phone and called PK to come fetch me, he was shocked but agreed. I did not care anymore, I was full of bitterness and hatred.

This abuse and fighting things was affecting me badly.

Dad kicked Luvano out of the house and cut him off in everything. He was not getting any allowances nothing not even a cent from Dad.

He was living at a friend's house in Motherwell and Dad also took the car. Mom did nothing, she didn't even try to stop him. I also blame her, Why is she still with this Guy? I don't understand!

PK called later on saying he was outside. I took my phone and bag and walked down the stairs.

Gloria : Uyaphi?

Me: I'm going to greenacres

Her : Don't be long

Me: Okay

PK was waiting for me outside, I got in the car.

Him: What's up?

Me: The sky

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni kuwe?

Me: Nothing , lets go!

He started the car then we drove

Him: Siyaphi?

Me: I don't know

Him : Are you sure grand?

Me: NDIRYT MARNIII!

I said in a loud tone very irritated

Him: Onika utyiwa yintoni?

Me: Let's go to your house

Him: Okay, but first do you promise that you gonna tell me what is eating you up?

Me: Yes

We drove in silence till safika, I didn't care anymore noba undibonile uMaka Bulie.

He parked the car, the main door was closed as a sign that akhomntu.

We walked to his flat at the back yard, he opened the door then sangena.

He closed the door after I walked in then we sat on top of the bed.

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni?

I was not ready to tell him the truth so I lied.

Me: Dad refused to buy me BIS and it expires today.

He rolled his eyes

Him: Is that all?

I nodded

Him: You should have said so..but don't worry Ndizokuthengela vah?

He planted a soft kiss on my lips then he pulled back. I pulled him closer again and we kissed passionately.

The kiss heated, the next thing he was on top of me. He squeezed my breast as he was kissing me, He stopped .

Me: Please don't stop

Him : Are you sure?

Me: Yes

He slowly undressed me playing with my nipples, my whole body experienced goosebumps. He unbuttoned my jean then took it off, I was left with my pantie,

he undressed while kissing me then he slowly took off my pantie, his manhood was hitting against my thighs. My heart began to beat

Him : Are you sure about this?

I nodded

He got between my legs his manhood warmly moving between my thighs.

He started kissing my neck then he went all the way down to my virgina, he tickled with his tongue, that felt awkward and embarrassing but good at the same time. A moan escaped my mouth as he continued.

My body was feeling tons of fire , I can not explain the feeling then he went up and started kissing my mouth.

He stopped

Him: No, this feels wrong

Me: Please don't stop

Him : I'm sorry I can't do this, you still young Onika.

He got of me, I felt embarrassed

Him: Dress up, let me take you home

Me: I'm not going home

Him: Why?

Me:Andifuni!

Him: Awuzolala apha!

Me: I don't care!

I stood up then reached for the towel that was hanging at the wall, Ndasula then dressed up.

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni ngawe?

Me: PK ndicela undehle please!

I finished dressing up, he was still naked, I could not stare at him.

As I was walking to the door, he pulled me back.

Him: Uyaphi?

Me: Doesn't matter

Him: I'm taking you home

Me: Andigoduki mna!

Him: Why? What is really going on?

Me: Phakamani please let me go, since you don't want me to sleep over here, I'm gonna find another place to sleep.

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni? You not going anywhere till you tell me!

Me: Let me go

Him: Andifuni

Me: Ndifuna uhamba mna

Him: Awuyindawo!

Saxambulisa, he locked the door.

Him: Awuyindawo, it's either I'm taking you home or you sleep here

Me: Easy njena lento, I'm sleeping over!

He argued about this kwade kwa late wacama wandiyeka ndalala.

To be continued...

Insert 20

As I was laying on PK's chest, listening to his heart beat, all the memories flashed back.

" Baby " said PK, lifting my head.

He looked at me

Him : What is wrong?

Me: Nothing

Him : Then why you crying?

Me: I'm not crying

Him: Wenzani uyavuzza???

I quickly wiped my tears

Him: I love you Onika, I know I'm not perfect but I love you kakhulu not njekancinci. Please trust

Me: I said I'm okay geez what's wrong with you?

Him: Nothing is wrong with me, nguwe onengxaki.

Me: I don't have a problem

Him: ONIKAYO please baby, tell me what is going on...

I tried to hold my tears but they escaped uncontrollably.

He immediately pulled me closer to him, squeezing me tight.

I cried even more, he brushed my back telling me it's gonna be okay.

The sound of his voice gave me hope

Him: Shiiii...

After a short while I was quiet, he held both my hands and looked me straight in the eye .

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni?

I looked down

Him: You can trust me baby....please talk to me

I swallowed the lump on my throat, trying to stay calm and not release new tears.

Me: I hate my parents

He gave me that shocked expression

Me: Mom and.... Dad is physically and emotionally abusing my mom

Him: What??? Your dad is a great man, respected man of God!

Me: That is bullshit, He is a liar, Monster, He is evil... I hate him!!!

Him: I know your feelings, my Dad was also like that!

Me : How?

Him: He was abusing Mom, cheating on her, bringing his girlfriends home when Mom was not around. He was an alcoholic...

I stared at him , didn't know what to say.

Him: I would have to rush home every Friday afternoon, because I know they are fighting at home.

Me: How did he leave?

Him: There was this Day, Mom was pregnant with Bulelwa that time, Dad came home late drunk, he was demanding food but he knows he didn't give Mom a cent to buy food. He caused a scene, kicking everything shouting, swearing yonke lonto then I heard my Mom scream. I jumped out of bed and went to their bedroom, I found him on top of Mom beating as if he was beating some who can fight back... Mom was pregnant, He didn't care and he proclaimed that Bulie was not his child , saying my mom is a hoe, sleeping with all the man in this hood, He would go and stand outside shouting, swearing saying my Mom is a witch.

But this day I had to be brave and rescue my mother, I had no another choice but to fight my father, I tried to fight him but I was too weak to fight him, So I went to the kitchen...

He paused and gasp some air, I had this huge lump on my throat, tears were automatically flowing both sides.

Him: Ndathatha elona BHOSO , I was angry Onika, I was acting out of emotions... Ndafika andabuzisa, ndalifa ibhoso, my Mom screamed. There was blood all over, I wanted him to stop Onika....It was not my intentions to KILL HIM!

I yanked my hands, tears were flowing I was seeing blur, begcwele imithambo all over, his eyes were so red, his tears flowing uncontrollably.

Me: But your Mom said your father is still alive, that he doesn't support you guys....

Him: She was creating a story to avoid further questions...

Me: You killed your father????

Him : I know you hate me, I know you dissapointed but I was angry.... I didn't mean to kill him.. I am a bad person I know, a murderer... I killed my own father!

I pulled him closer then held him tight

Me: I still love you

My heart was hurting, I could feel the pain physically.

Someone knocked at door " Phakamani izothatha ukutya kwakho"

Yelled his Mom, He ignored him

Her :Malili!

Watsho emteketisa, I broke from his embrace, his mother was knocking non Stop and it was irritating.

He released a huge sigh

Me: Awuzovula, your Mom can't see me here

Him: It's time, we can't hide forever!

He went to open the door , his Mom came in and was shocked to see me.

Her: Amen!

She looked at PK then at me

Her: Kwenzeka ntoni apha?

PK : Utsho?

Her: Ingathi benikhala???

PK : Mama ndiyeza

Her: PK umenzani umntana?????

PK :Niks , Mama ndiyeza!

Her: Are you chasing me out?

Him: Yes, No

She clapped once

Her: ONIKA does your parents know that you here???? I don't want trouble

PK : Mama you making her feel uncomfortable

Her: Okay

then she left

He came to sit next to me

Him: Don't stress...

Me: Andiphinde ndizapha mna

He giggled

Him: Why not?

Me: Ndamoyika uMamakho mna

Him: She is not bad, masambe sothatha ukutya

I shook my head

Him: Please, he started poking me

Me: Okay!

My heart was beating fast

Him: Relax

We entered inside, Bulie was shocked to see me.

Her: Hayi yintoni ebusuku apha?

Mama : Awusa act, ngoba you knew they are dating....

Bulie : Hayi kengoku Mama

Mama: Phakamani ungamithisi umntana wena

PK : Heee yhuuu Old'lady, caba ndiyamithisa umthetho lona wam

Mama: Ndazelaphi? Ungadlali ngomntana phakamani, uyazi ke andifuni uphinda ndibone enye intombazana apha kwam eyardini ngaphandle kuka Onika, siyavana???

PK : Hee hayi kengoku

Her: Ndiyakwazi kaloku wena, awudlulwa sis'Skirt....

PK : Yhuuu Mama uyamhlaza umntu!

Her: Ndifuna uOnika ayazi into angena kuyo!

PK : Injezu bethuna ininzi apha!

Her: Onika, if uPK uyakuhlupha, tell me mntanam ndizomolusa ukwesibini, ngoku ezenza inkwenkwe endala apha!

Bulie : Yhuuu ndiyavala ngobhuti wam

Mama : Kwalento uvale ngaye awumxabisa , zonke ezimvula nemimoya zibetha kuye!

Bulie : Yhooo ndithule

PK: Ndicela ukutya kwam

Mama : Uzotya isonka wena. Ina Onika

She gave me food

PK : Awukho serious Mama

Her: Khabe romantic tshini

Bulie giggled

Bulie : Shame bhuti ndiyakuvela

PK : Onika masabe

We said our goodnights then saphuma

Me: Sotya sobabini

Him: It's fine, let's go and buy takeaway

Me: What time is it now?

Him: KFC savuliwe let's go!

He reached for his wallet then we left, we bought the food then we came back.

My phone was ringing non stop, I switched it off, it was around 10 too 11. I didn't care, I need a break from that house.

We ate then we cuddling for long while salala.

In the middle of the night, someone knocked at the door. At first bingathi Itsho enext door but then the noise because louder.

Me: Phakamani....

Him: Mmmmm?

Akathandi uvuswa elele

Me: Someone is knocking

" Phakamani vula lomnyanyo !" Said a unfamiliar female voice, she was banging on the door.

PK : What the fuck!

He jumped out of bed furiously, switched on the light and opened the door.

The lady walked in, she was light in complexion with a blond soft dread, she was not sender nor fat, she was the right size imilile intombi.

Her: PK what is this?????

PK : Ungene njani apha eyardini, before ubuze ububhanxa?

Her: Sundibhuza iKaka Phakamani who is this bitch?

Him: Don't you dare call my girlfriend a bitch! Bitch nguwe, does your boyfriend knows that you here?

Her : Fuck you Phakamani, fuck you!!!

Him: We had an agreement remember???

Her: Then why you fucking other bitches? Yes you told me you have a girlfriend but you said she doesn't do sleepovers Phakamani!!!!

Him: So?

Her: Who is this PK?

Him: Onika

She kept quiet as if she was told about me

Him: Anything else?

Her: I'm sorry

Him: Just go

Her: Ndoyika, ndicela undikhaphe

Him: Nxilile uzenabani apha???

Her: Benditshiseka that time

Him: Lula njena lento phinda ubase and walk back home, sifuna ulala thina mfondini.

I was quiet not uttering a word

Her: Ndiyakucela PK

Him : Mfondini I have a match tomorrow...

Her : Please

PK closed the door , switched off the light then wangena ezingubeni leaving her standing in that same position.

I just didn't know how to react, ndaveske ndamuncu.

The following morning...

PK's alarm started ringing, he ignored it , it kept on ringing and it was irritating.

Me: Phakamani!!!!!!!

Him: Mmmmmm?

Me: Switch it of if awuzovuka

Him: Okay ndivukile

I still needed explanation of what was happening yesterday.

Waphakama and walked out, the lady was not there anymore andimazi noba umke nini. I made the bed and opened the windows and curtain.

I yawned as I was busy tidying the place, I found two boxes of condoms, one was already opened.

I sat on the edge of the bed and looked straight at the door.

He walked in ephethe amanzi ovasa.

Me: Why did you lie to me?

He placed the water down

Him: What you talking about?

Me: Why do you keep on saying you love me but you still chasing after another women?

Him: Is this about last night??? Let me explain

Me: Simphiwe was right you nothing but a liar and cheat, you only want to sleep with me then dump me like the lady yesterday.

He released a heavy sigh

Him: If I was only interested in sex, I would have already done that. Baby look , I know I'm not perfect but I love you Onika, please believe me

Me: So must i accept that I'm gonna share my man with other women???? Or am I not good enough?

Him: You are baby, I was only sleeping with her, nothing more. She knows that.

Me: And I must smile and say well done????

Him: No, I'm sorry

Me: If I sleep with you, will stop chasing other women?

Him: I'm sorry baby

Me: Answer me

Him: I won't allow you to sleep with me just because-

Buli walked in without knocking, we both looked at her

Her: Who died?

PK : Umntu uyankqonkqoza , ucimba ungenaphi? EGreenacres?

Her : Xolweni

PK : What do you want?

Her : Mama uyakubiza

Him: Okay

He stood up and walked out

Her: Uleli njani?

Me: Kakuhle

Her : So, seniyenza?

Me: Yenza ntoni?

Her: Sex

Me: Nope

Her: Nilala njeeee? Uyaxoka

Me: Whatever

Her : Is everything alright?

PK walked in

Me: Bulie masambe

PK : Bulie hamba wena, Onika asikagqibi uthetha.

I gave him that Mxm look then I walked out with Bulie.

I greeted Bulie's mother who was on her way out.

Her : Molo, bye!

She was kinda late

Me: Bye

I took a bath then wore the same clothes, PK walked in as I was fixing my hair.

Him: Masambe

Me: I'm gonna take a taxi

Him : Baby please

Me: Uzoba late go

Him: I'm sorry about last night

Me: Just go PK...

He came closer for a kiss, I let him be.

Him: I love you

Me: Okay

He then walked out, when I was done with everything Bulie accompanied me and I took a taxi home.

My heart started to beat, as I reach the gate. I was now really scared because both my parents car was parking outside.

I inhale some air then opened the gate, I walked inside.

Mom and Dad stared at me as I walked through the door, I wish I could disappear into thin air or fast forward this moment

Dad: Uvelaphi?

Me: phandle

Mom : Do you know what you put us through?

Dad : ONIKAYO uvelaphi????

Me: I needed some fresh air

Dad grabbed me and loosen his belt.

Him: Uvelaphi?

Wandibetha ngekhonco, I ran to Mom wasidibanisa sobabini

Him: ANDIZONYELEKA ENDLINI YAM ONIKA!

He pushed Mom aside then wandidibanisa nedonga, I covered my face, lalala ngam ibhanti until my body was warm, feeling no further pains, endikhaba nondikhaba, my body was feeling numb, Mom tried to stop him but wangena kuye and started beating her.

To be continued...

Insert 21

My mother's soft voice moaning in pain, broke my heart into million pieces, more tears flowed uncontrollably. He was beating her like someone who is intend to kill, I wanted to move but my body was failing me, I wanted him to stop but I couldn't stop him, I couldn't feel my hands, I was feeling disable.

My father was angry, he was beating her non stop, my mother stopped moaning and he stopped. He placed his hands on his head going crazy, hitting everything in front of him, going on like a wild animal.

" No, No, No, I don't want to turn like him!!!! " He said with veins appearing on his forehead and arms, folding fists.

He looked at my mother then back at me, his eyes were bloody red covered with tears.

" I'm sorry... What have I become? " He said moving his head left and right, like a person who is addicted to drugs craving for some.

He searched for something, he ran upstairs then he came back speeding heading to the door, he went out slamming the door. I heard the gate opening then the sound of a car taking off then the gate automatically closed.

I looked at my poor mother who was laying hopelessness on the floor.

I took a deep breath and tightly closed my eyes as I forced myself to move my body. I crawled towards my mother.

" Mama, mama, mama" I said in a low tone.

"Mmmm... " she replied in a low voice, suffering from pain.

Me: I'm sorry, it's all my fault...

She shook her head struggling to move her body.

Tears were flowing

Me: Everything will be okay Mama, God is watching.

I saw tears escaping from her eyes, I was suffering from pains but ndaziqinisa and helped my mother stand up, I helped her walk upstairs tripping on the way up but then we reached upstairs and I helped her remove her clothes, she wore her pyjamas. I slept next to her as we both moaned out of pain.

The following day...

I woke up in my room, I don't know how I got there. My body was hurting I couldn't move it properly , My mother cross my mind. I moaned as got up the bed closing my eyes tightly listening to the pain.

" I'm done Khayaletu...I want a divorce" said my mothers voice as I slowly approached their bedroom.

" I will get help please don't leave me" Replied my father

Mom: I have suffered too much, I can't do this anymore...

I stood by the door frame, Mom was packing all her stuff , Dad was trying to stop her. They didn't even notice I was standing by the door.

Dad : Please don't leave me.. I need you, I'm sorry! I will get help , I will go to counseling!

Mom: That won't change anything... I'm done being your punching bag, You always aggressive, you selfish only thinking about yourself and your reputation. What about me? You not that sweet, loving, romantic Khayaletu I met 30 years ago! Ndifuna uKhayaletu wam not lento ndingayaziyo ime phambikwam! You used to respect me, hayi ngoku!

Dad turned and saw me

Him : Onika

Mom looked at me

Her: Onika pack your stuff we leaving!

Dad: Kholiswa are you gonna throw away 30 years ?

Her: 30 is just a number , Onika go pack!

I slowly went back to my room and packed all my stuff then when I was done we left .

Dad was begging for forgiveness but my Mom was not giving him a chance.

Me: Where are we going?

Her: Don't worry, where we going is safer. We will be free!

I smiled

Me: Promise me we won't go back to that house again! I don't ever want to see him again.

Her: I'm sorry my baby...

We stopped in front of a house at Magxaki , Mom reached for her phone then made a phone call.

Her: I'm outside

Then the gate automatically opened we drove in, Joe was standing by the door.

Mom : We will be staying here for a couple of days until we get a place to stay

Me: Okay

We got out of the car then Joe approached us.

Him: Hello princess

Me: Hello

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm okay

Him: I'm sorry your mother told me about what happened, don't worry He will never hurt you again!

He looked at my Mom

Him : Are you okay?

Mom nodded

Her: Can we go inside?

He nodded then we went inside, the house was beautiful.

We took our seats

Him: Look at your face, no this man deserve to be locked behind bars

Me: No he deserves to die!

Him: You don't mean that

Me: I mean it! Look at my mother ! I will never forgive him!

Joe : It's okay, calm down

My phone rang and it was PK, my heart started to beat fast.

I didn't want to look suspicious, I answered my phone.

Me: Hello

Him: (Sighed) Finally, I was worried about you, are you okay?

Me: I'm okay Bulie but I'm not living at Zwide anymore ndihlala eMagxaki for now.

Him: Why? Did they kick you out?

Me: It's a long story mchana, I don't want to talk about it

Him: Uhlala kubani apho?

Me: I left with my mother, Chat later vah?

Then I hung up, they were both looking at me.

Me: Can I use the bathroom?

Joe : Of course ,

He showed me the way, I entered then I closed the door. I called PK he answered immediately as if he was waiting for that call.

Him: Baby Kwenzeka ntoni? You making me worried

I told him the whole story about what happened.

Him : Can I please come see you?

Me: Awukwazi, ndizothi ndiyaphi?

Him: Okay, I understand. I'm sorry

Me: You did nothing

We chatted then I hung up.

Later that day....

I was laying on my back, thinking about everything.

Mom came knocking on the room I would be sleeping.

Me: Ngena

She walked in and came to seat next to me.

Her: Are you okay?

I nodded

Her: I'm sorry for everything... I'm sorry for being a bad mother....

Me: It's okay, I love you

She pulled me closer

Me: You hurting me Mom

She let go

Her : I'm sorry baby..

Me: It's okay, are YOU okay?

She nodded

Her: I'm okay, I will be okay. It's just the swollen face, I'm just used to the pains.

Me: We are free now

Her: Free indeed

Joe stood by the door frame

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: Where are you going?

Mom: We will be back

Me: Okay

They left, I took my phone and called PK.

Him: Baby

Me: You can come see me

Him : Really?

Me: Yes

Him : Where is your mother?

Me: She went out

Him: Okay, so hlala ndawoni?

Me: Jonga I don't know nam but apha ngase Skolweni.

Him : Okay, will call you xandifika ngaseSkolweni

Me: Okay

He called few minutes later saying he is by the school. I walked the the distance my body hurting that time.

I approached his car then opened the front door and got in.

Him: Hello

Me: Hi

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Don't be sorry , you didn't do anything.

He pulled me closer, I moaned out of pains then he immediately let go.

Him: I'm sorry

Me : It's okay...

We chatted for a while, laughing at his jokes.

Me: You know how to put a smile on my face.

Him: I know njena!

Me: Eshee

He giggled showing his cute smile, Umhle kodwa (He is handsome).

Him: Show me nihlalaphi

We drove up, I showed him the house, my mother and Joe were not yet back.

Me : I have to go before they come back

Him: Khaze ndithi manxu (come let me kiss you)

We kissed briefly

Him: Yandiqhatha kodwa

I giggled

Me : I have to go PK

Him : Okay, Ndiyakuthanda vah? (I love you)

Me: I love you too

Then I placed a peck on his lips, I got out of the car he watched me till I got inside the house.

What from here??

Is this a beginning of a new happy life?

To be continued...

It's short I know, I'm sorry

Insert 22

Few days later...

We were renting a four room house, two bedrooms , bathroom a small kitchen and a lounge, it was nothing fancy.

Well...

It was during the week, Mom was busy at the lounge watching TV .

Me: Mama, you should install DSTV

Her : Ngeyiphi imali?

I gave her that "Like seriously" look

Her : You think I'm a millionaire wena!

Me: Haibo Mama....

Then I folded my arms and pouted

Her: Heee, I didn't give birth to a disable child.

I didn't reply

Her : I will do that tomorrow

Me: Thank you, thank you, THANK YOU!

I said planting lots of kisses all over her face.

Her : Okay, Okay. Can you stop now?

Me: You are the best mother in the whole wide world

Her: Yes I know that, only when you want something!

I giggled

Me: Heee haibo Mama

Her: Ndiyaxoka?

Me: Yes

Her : Okay when you say so.

Me: By the way Mama, its Christmas in two days time.... So what are we gonna do for Christmas?

Her : Luvano is coming tomorrow, why don't we go out, just Me, You and Luvano?

Me: Bhuti wam is coming tomorrow?

I asked full of excitement

Her: Yes, he is coming to live with us!

I stood up and jumped up and down like a crazy chicken.

Her :Uyangxola

Me: I'm excited Mama

Her :Eshee

Me: What about bout Sis'Thobile?

Her: Mmm.. Thobile is gonna spend Christmas with her in-laws.

Me: Oh....

Someone knocked at the door

Her: Go check who is at the door

Me: What if it's a criminal?

Her : Hayi Suka! Go open the door!

I giggled as I opened the door

Joe: I can see you having fun without me!

Me: Hahaha, No we not

Him: How you are princess?

Me: I'm fabulous, fantastic, happy yonke lonto

He smiled and shook his head as we head to the lounge.

Joe: What did you give this child?

Mom: Ask her, because I'm also confused

Joe : ONIKA....

Me: My brother is coming tomorrow...

Joe : Is that the reason you so hyper?

Me: Yhooooooooo he is my everything!

Joe : I can see you have a strong relationship with your brother.

Me: You have no Idea!

He smiled

My phone rang and it was PK.

Me: Chomiii !!!

Mom: You making a noise, go to your room!

I walked to my room and closed my door.

Me: Baby

Him: Uphi?

Me: Ndilapha endlini

Him : Can I come see you

Me: No, my mother is around

Him: Can I come see you tonight?

Me: You know that its possible

Him : How?

Me: There is a security gate in this compound.

Him: I have a friend also living in that compound, he will open the gate for me.

Me: Okay Phakami

Him: I miss you baby, I can't wait to see you

Me: I miss you too!

We chatted kwade kwaphela airtime yakhe.

Later that day....

I finished cooking, then I served the food. Joe said grace then we started eating chatting in between.

My mothers phone started ringing, she just stared at it and totally ignored it.

It kept on ringing and started irritating.

Joe: Is it him?

My Mom nodded

Joe: Give it to me, I'm gonna deal with him!

Mom: No, It is not necessary

Joe : Then switch off the phone

Mom : Why? This is my phone

Joe kept quiet and focused on his plate.

I washed the plates while Mom accompanied Joe to his car. When I was done with the dishes, I went straight to my bedroom. I wore my pyjamas then ndalala.

"Onika! " yelled my Mom

Me: Maa?

Her: Was just checking on you, goodnight baby!

Me: Goodnight Mama!

Then I covered myself

00:00 am...

My phone started to ring, at first bendiyivela kude then I finally answered.

Me: Hello

I said in a low, sleepy voice

Him: Ndilapha phandle

Me: Okay

Then I hung up, I was still sleepy. I searched for my gown then I tiptoe holding my slippers on my hands.

I paused when I reached by the door and took a deep breath. I swallowed very hard as I slowly opened the door, one eye tightly closed.

The door opened, I went out.

I called Phakamani and asked where he was then he directed me.

I got in the car

Me: Hello

Him: Minxi

He pulled me closer for a kiss , his lips tasted sweet.

Me: Khandiphe lento uyityayo

Him: Chewing gum

Me: Okay

Him: Kunini ndikukhumbula mfethu

I rolled my eyes

Me: I was at your house two days ago

Him: I just can't get enough of you!

He said pulling me closer to him, he kissed my lips then he started laughing Me:
What?

Him: Kutheni umunca inyeke zam? Zizophela inyeke zam!

Me: Mxxm

Him: I love you too!

We cuddled kwade kwabetha oo2 am.

Me: I have to go

Him: Is it that time already?

I nodded

Him: Linomona elixesha shame!

I giggled

Him: Baby

Me: Mmmm?

Him: My cousin brother wishes to see you

Me: Cousin brother?

Him: He is from Cape Town , ufike izolo

Me: Oh okay

Him : Can I come fetch you tomorrow afternoon?

Me: Uyalibala wena that I'm a Mama's baby, I asked her to take me to Bullet

Him: Okay no problem

Me: Goodnight...

Him: Izapha

We kissed passionately, do not want to let go.

We finally let go of each other

Me: Are you still gonna drive home?

Him: No, ndizolala apha kuSpha

Me: Okay

I went back inside, luckily my mother didn't hear a thing.

The following morning...

Someone knocked at the door, I was still sleepy debating about getting up.

The knock became irritating, I had to go and open the door.

I angrily opened the door

PK : Haibo

My eyes popped

Me: What do you want?

Him: I want you!

My heart started to beat fast, I afraid my mother walk on us.

Me: Are you crazy? My mother is home He giggled

Him: So what?

He pushed me aside and walked in, he opened the fridge and took out juice.

Me: Phakamani please

I whispered

Him: Why you whispering?

He asked in a loud voice, my body was shivering.

Me: Umama PK

Him: It's time she meets her son in-law!

Me: Phakamani ndiyakucela!

Him: Andilambe!

I was flaming, wanted to eat him with my teeth.

He giggled

Him : Relax your Mom is not here

Me: How do you know?

Him: I saw her driving out now, now

I went to check on her room, nyani Her bed was neatly made up.

I released some oxygen

" Uyadika Phakamani Poni vah! " I yelled standing by the bathroom door

Him: I know Onika Poni!

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxm

Him: Nawe!

I opened the door and washed my face then brushed my teeth.

When I was done, I went back to the kitchen.

Me: You don't waist anytime

Him: Kodwa I'm hungry

He was baking some eggs

Me: I must go and confront this Spha guy!

Him: Mxxxxxxxxxxm yija laPoni! All he buys is beers!

Me: Shame mntuwam...

I made myself cereal I sat on top of the kitchen counter then I ate. My phone rang, I went to fetch it at my room.

Me: Hello

Mom: Ndisendleleni eya eMotherwell , to fetch your brother

Me: Okay, but uzoyondilanda kuloBulie... Ndizoyakhona

Her: Okay

Then she hung, I opened the windows then I made my bed.

PK : Baby

He yelled from the other side

Me: Mmmm?

Him: Ndiyahamba!

Me: Wait

I went to the Kitchen

Me: I'm gonna take a quick bath, ndizohamba nawe!

Him: Okay

I took a quick bath ndanxiba maxi dress yam eWhite and my gold sandals. I made a neat bun, ndandifakele iTwist eMaroon ende.

I took only my phone then sahamba.

PK : Awuqole

Me: I know, Kaloku sulibala you 7 years older than me

He giggled

Him: I knew you were gonna say that

We arrived at his house, Luvuyo was playing soccer with this other guy I assumed it was his cousin brother from Cape Town.

He parked the car then we got off, they stopped playing immediately we approach them.

Vuyo: Onicate!

PK : Sekutheni sengu Onicate?

Yalinda ke uPhakamani

Vuyo: Ndiyamteketisa akhonto bitheni Ta

PK : Who told you, andikwazi mna?

Me: Like seriously?

PK : Andifuni uphinda ukuva usithi Onicate!

Vuyo : Sure Ta

He introduced me to this other guy, He was also light in complexion , slender with dreadlocks. His name was Avuyile, he was friendly ethanda uhleka.

We went inside, ndafika ndabulisa.

As I was chatting, my phone rang and it was Mom.

Me: Mama

Her : I'm at the hospital

I could tell by the sound of her voice that she was crying.

Me: What is happening?

Her: Luvano uhlatyiwe!

To be continued....

Sorry about the errors, I'm sleepy and tired to edit.

Goodnight!

Insert 23

Haibo Njani ngoku?

Me: Which hospital?

Her: Silaphe Dora

Me: Please Come fetch me

I was breathing heavily, my whole body was shivering. I can't lose my brother, No! Its too early.

My eyes were filled with tears, I was seeing blur, Everyone was looking at me with curious faces.

Mama : I will come fetch you later, I can't leave his side!

My mother's voice was scaring me

Me: Ma-

Her : Can't talk now sweetie, will call you back later... Your brother will be fine!

Then she hung up the phone as I was to utter some words.

Maka Buli : Onika Kwenzeka ntoni?

Me: My brother is in hospital, he was stabbed!

Phakamani popped his eyes and quickly pulled me closer to chest. His embrace made me feel a little bit better.

Him: Shiiii

He said as I was releasing tears, he brushed my back holding me tight.

Me: I want to go see him!

PK : I'm gonna take you!

I broke from his embrace then he wiped my tears with the back of his hands and placed a kiss on my lips.

Him : Stop crying, Luvano is gonna be okay.. Uyeva?

I nodded

Maka buli: It's okay... Phakamani is gonna take you.... Your brother is gonna be okay!

I nodded

Buli: I'm also going

PK took his car keys then we went to the car.

PK : Which Hospital?

Me : Dora

Him : Okay

He drove the car fast and faster till we reached the hospital.

I called my mother several times but she was not answering her phone. We went inside the hospital, my mother called back as we were entering.

Me: I'm by the entrance, uphi?

Her: Wait there ndiyeza...

Then she hung up, after a few seconds, she appeared. I rushed to her as I saw her at a distance, then hugged her tightly.

Phakamani and Bulelwa were standing there looking at us.

Me: Where is He?

She was now calm

Her: The doctor said he is gonna be okay.

Me: Can I see him?

Mama : No, Usathungwa

Me: What happened?????

Her: I don't know, When I arrived at his friends house, he was already stabbed.

Me: How?

Her : If I didn't get there on time, my baby would be dead by now. He was alone, lying hopeless on the floor holding on his chest, with so much blood.

Me: I wonder who stabbed him!

Mama : That doesn't matter as long my son is still alive.

Me: But still

Her : How did you get here?

I looked back at Phakamani and Buli

Mama: Molweni, Niryt?

They nodded and exchanged greetings.

Later on...

We were allowed to see him. Phakamani was standing outside the ward while we went inside.

His chest was bandaged ethiwe idrip.

Me: How do you feel?

He cleared his throat

Him: I'm okay mntwana don't stress

He said with pain written on his face

Mama : Awulambanga?

He shook his head

Mama: What happened?

Him: I had a fight with Thandi yesterday

Mama : Did she do this to you?

Him: Yes, He came this morning ndingacingela wandihlaba.

Mama : Umenzeni wena , sekuhlaba nje?

He didn't reply

Mama : Luvano

Him: She cheated on me, ndambetha

Mama : Ukuhlabe kancinci bonanje, ngekuhlabe amathumbu aphume ngaphandle!

Me: Haibo Mama!

Her: What???

I gave her that " Are you for real " Look

Her: Yes, He knows it better that you never lay a hand on a woman. In no circumstances, No matter how wrong she is, you never!

Luvano looked away

Me: But still, Mama she had no right to stab him, what if he died?

Mama : He is not dead!

Me: Yhoooooooo, Ndithule but I don't want to see her again shame, I hate her!

Luvano : Let's drop this subject, ngoba indibangela isicefe.

We chilled there then we left later on,

I said goodbye to my boyfriend and best friend.

We arrived home, Mom cooked while I took a nap.

" ONIKA! " Yelled my Mom disturbing me from my sleep.

I rubbed my eyes as I yawned walking out the door.

I stood by the lounge door , scratching my head.

Me: Ma?

Her: I'm going the hospital

Me: I'm also going

Her : Lungisa

Me: Okay

I changed and wore a jean , Jersey and sneakers then we left.

We arrived at the hospital, I was surprised to see Phakamani there.

Me: Haibo

Luu: What?

Me: Nothing

Mom looked at me, I looked at Luvano.

Mama : Hayi yintoni?

Luu: Niks Old'lady.... Mmmmmm, is the food for me?

Mama : I can see you better

Him: This wounds isezinto ezincane

Mama: Eshee

PK : I'm was on my way out

Mama : We didn't chase you out

Him: No, I'm was really on my way out

Mama : Okay ke!

Luu: Ukutya kalok Kunini ndilindile?

Mama: Luvano ngokutya kanene!

PK left then Mom tried to feed him

Luu: I'm not disable, bazothini abantu xabebona indoda engaka ityiswa!

Mama: Mxxxxxxxxxxm, khakhamise wethu

Luu : Andizotya ke!

Mama : Uzotya njani in this state?

Him: Watch and see!

Mom handed him the food and he ate.

The next day....

My phone rang early in the morning.

Me: Hello

PK : Merry Christmas beautiful

Me: Merry Christmas handsome

I said in a low tone

Him: I'm missing you already yazi, I wish I can spend the whole day with you.

Me: Same here babe yhoo!

Him: Can I come see you later?

Me: No problem babe

Him: Love you

Me: Love you too

Then we hung up, I called my sister and Buli, wished them merry Christmas then I woke up.

I found my mother busy at the kitchen.

Me: Merry Christmas Mama

Her: Merry Christmas baby

Me: Mmmmm, smells nice

Her: I'm making Luvano's favourite

Me: Ncoooo, I love you

Her: I love you too

We shared a hug, I then I went to the bathroom, brushed my teeth and washed my face. I went to assist my mother at the kitchen.

We went to the hospital, when we got there the doctor told us that Luvano can go home. I was so excited, we helped him to the car.

We got home, we spend the whole day together, laughing, eating, yonke lonto . It was great to have my brother back home, I really missed him.

Joe arrived later on, it was around 3pm in the afternoon. Luvano's facial expression immediately changed when Joe walked in.

Mama : Luvano meet Joe, Joe meet Luvano my son.

Joe stretched his hand for a handshake but Luvano refused with his hand.

Mama : Are you not hungry?

Luu : Old'lady Who is this man?

My mother started stuttering

Luu: I'm Listening

Mama Joe and I... We are an item

Luu: Just like that?

Mama : Meaning

Luu : You just left your husband and you jumping on another relationship!

Mama : It's not like that

Luu : Joe please go

I felt so embarrassed, What the hell is wrong with Luvano?

Me: Haibo Bhuti

Him: I'm not talking to you!

I immediately kept quiet

Mama : Joe is not going anywhere! Hlala phatsi Joe!

Joe : It's okay I'm leaving

Mama: sit down, you not going anywhere!

Luu: Sit wena, then watch what I'm gonna do to you! You better know how to spell sit in Greek!

Yhuu bethunani my brother is rude ukwelina lamaChina izinga.

Mama : This is my house Luvano not the other way around!

Luu: Kusekhaya apha not the other way around ! If you want to continue with this abomination then go to your mothers house and do it there not ekhaya! Joe via!

Joe left and I was so heart broken, I really liked him.

Me: Yabhora shame

Him: Ungenaphi wena, ngoba khange ndiqale uthi speak Nawe!

I angrily stood up and went to my room, leaving my mother and Luvano fighting.

PK called later that night

Me: Hello

Him: Baby wam, I miss you... I love you! He was drunk and there was alot of noise at the background .

Me: Ugoduka nini?

Him Ndizapho

Me: Phakamani you drunk, you not at a state to drive!

Him: Ndithini xandikukhumbula?

Me: By risking your life?

Him: I miss you njena!

Me: Ndilele mna!

Then I hung up, he kept on calling, I just switched off my phone inga thengwanga nguye nje.

The following morning...

I switched on my phone, I called PK to check if he arrived safely home last night.

It rang several times before he answered.

Him: Baby

He said in a low sleepy voice

Me: I was checking if you still okay

Him : I'm still okay, shit ndiyiswa yintloko qha!

Me: Tshotsho

Him : Haibo baby

We chatted a little while then I hung up.

To be continued...

Insert 24

After chatting with my boyfriend, I lazily got up, I went straight to the bathroom.

I washed my face and slowly brushed my teeth while I was looking at myself through the mirror.

After brushing my teeth I went to the kitchen passing by the lounge.

" I'm not a dead body! " Shouted my brother from the lounge, I just got annoyed immediately.

Me: Molo Bhuti

I said in an annoyed tone

Him: Uphume ntoni ke?

I didn't reply, I took out a box of cereal and a bowl.

Mom walked in dressed up.

Her: Morning baby

Me: Morning Mom, where you going?

Her: I will be back, don't worry...

She said as she poured a glass of water .

Me: I'm sorry about last night

Her: It's okay

She said as she was swallowing some pills.

I opened the fridge then took out milk.

Me: I'm going out with Buli today

Her: Okay, how much do you need?

Me: R200 will do

Her: Okay

She took out a R200 note and placed it on top of the counter.

Me: Enkosi

She increased the mouth with a R300

Me: What is that for?

Her: I didn't buy you anything for Christmas, buy yourself anything.

Me: Enkosi Mama

She placed a kiss on my forehead

Her: Take care... I love you

Me: I love you too!

I said as she walked out of the door.

I warmed the milk then poured it on the cereal.

I went to sit at the lounge

Him: Where is mine?

Me: You not disable

He gave me a dead stare

Him : Ungandiqheli

Me: Ndizokubizela uThandi akuphinde!

Him: Awuse!

Me: Ndifuzile

I was taking advantage because I knew he won't be able to do anything.

Him: Go to hell

I giggle

Me: After you!

Him: Ndiyakubona lento yakho yothandana noPK ikundwebisile!

Me: Unjalo kewenake Bhuti undibanise iOil namanzi!

Him: Khandiphe ukutya, uyeke uthetha ishit!

Me: Ingathi ngowucenga, ngaba bandithe andifuni, you will starve till Mom gets home.

Him: Mmmm Injalo?

Me: Nqho!

Him: I wonder, how will she react when she finds out that you dating Phakamani...

Me: Sies, I wonder ubuyele ntoni!

Him: I'm not adopted here , remember?

Me: Uyadika shame, I should get myself a new Brother!

Him: Unfortunately that is impossible, unless Joe impregnates her

Me: Yazi I don't like what you did yesterday!

Him: That guy is a chancer !

Me: You hardly know the guy and already you judging him

Him: Old'lady has been heart by Dad, I don't want that to happen again. I can't let her get hurt again.

Me: Joe is great guy, he has been nice to us after the separation. He has been supportive, just give the poor guy a chance please Bhuti.

Him : Dad was also like that, he was loving , supportive. They were happy together. He used to take me the park together with Thobile, He would do anything for us, I don't know what went wrong. He changed overnight, he started beating Mom, making the church his first priority.

Me: He is not Dad

Him: I don't trust him, I don't want Mom to experience the same thing again. I don't want to see her hurting anymore, I don't.

I never saw my brother this emotional before, tears literally escaped his eyes . A lump formed on throat.

I wanted to hug him but I was scared to hurt him.

Me: Joe is a nice guy

Him: What gives you the assurance? How do you know?

Me: He makes her happy , you should see how happy she is when he is around. Please give him a chance , ndiyakucela Bhuti

Him: I'm hungry Onika

Me: Just think about it Bhuti!

I went to the kitchen and made him cereal as well.

I handed the bowl to him

Him: Ngubani bethe ndifuna iCereal

Me: You can place it down, I don't mind eating it .

Him: Mxxm

Then he ate,

Me: A beggar can't be a chooser!

He rolled his eyes

I finished eating then called PK and told him to come pick me up ngo12, he didn't ask too many questions, he just agreed.

I cleaned the house which was boring, because I was not used to doing things by myself.

When I was done, I made lunch for my annoying brother then I took a bath. I applied lotion on my body then I took my jean and sleeveless top and sneakers. I dressed up then loosen my braids. I applied some mascara and eyeliner.

When I was done, I tied up the place then applied my body spray.

I went the lounge in search of my phone.

Luu: lyaphi indlela?

Me: I'm going out

Him : You leaving me alone in this house?

Me : Akho way, singabanye we not paralyzed!

Him: Usile Bonanje and uyela uqatsela eleke uvuka!

I giggled

Him : Ndizophila bonanje!

Me: I'm happy for you Bhuti!

Him: Go to hell!

Me: Hahaha

I found my phone and called PK, I tried several time but he didn't pick up.

Luu: It's seems like I'm gonna have company!

Me: You wish!

He called back after a while

Me: Uphi?

Him: Eish... I forgot and I'm really busy babe... I will make it up to you baby I promise!

Me: Mxm, don't bother!

I hung up, he kept on calling I just ignore his calls.

Luu: Oh shame Paroza kaMama!

I angrily stood up, I went to my room and grabbed by bag together with the money.

Me: Ndimkile!

I didn't wait for him to reply, I just walked out.

I plugged my earphones as I walked the distance to the robots where I would be getting Taxi's to Greenacres.

I stood by the robots for few minutes then I got a taxi.

Phakamani kept calling and it was irritating, I answered.

Me: Hello

Him: I'm sorry baby

Me: It's fine, doesn't matter anymore!

Him: I will be there in 30 minutes time

Me: I said it's okay, I'm already in a taxi to Greenacres.

Him: I will meet you there

Me: It's not necessary, I called my friend. So that means I have company

Him: And who is that friend? Because Buli is here at home.

Me: You don't know her

Him: I will come to fetch you later ke and I want to meet her.

Me: Okay!

Yazi I'm lying .

I arrived at Greenacres, I entered the shops ndibuka impahla. As I was at Edgars at the shoes section ,I felt hands blind folding me. I didn't recognize the person at all, He let go and I turned around. It was Baliso(the guy I met at hungry lion)

Me: Hey you!

We shared a hug

Him: Where have you been?

Me: Ndikhona

Him: It's nice seeing you again and you look stunning.

Me: Mxxm don't be silly

Him : Nyani

Me: Thanks bye the way

Him: Who you with?

Me: Alone

Him: Good, because nam ndihamba ndedwa.

Me: Okay

We walked around the mall, fitting and buying.

When we were tired, we went to sit down at KFC and we bought something to eat.

Him: Er...Can I ask you something?

Me: Shoot

He sipped this milkshake then looked at me.

Him: Do you have a boyfriend?

Me: Yes, Do you have a girlfriend?

Him: Yes I guess

Me: You guess?

Him: It's complicated...

Me: What's up?

Him : She is on and off, I don't know where I'm standing kuye ukhe ubone?

Me: Talk to her and tell her how you feel

Him: Maybe it's just that I don't have a car, I can't buy her expensive stuff. She always compare me with her ex-boyfriend.

Me: I'm not an expert when it comes to relationships but I think you should sit down and tell her how you feel, make it clear to her that you not him and you will never be.

Him: I'm sorry to bore you with my problems anyways... How did you spend your Christmas?

We chatted for a long while and bought more milkshakes, we exchanged numbers

.

Phakamani called as we were still busy chatting.

Me: Hello

Him: Bekuk'dala ngoko, anikagqibi?

Me: No

Him: It's twenty too six, ulibonile ixesha?

Me: Ndizizele apha PK, ndizomka ngexesha lam

Him: I'm on my way

Then he hung up

Baliso : Boyfriend?

Me : Yes, he is on his way

Him: It's late

Me: Yeah

We took our things and left, we shared a hug as I we reached outside.

Him: We should do this often you know Me: Yes

Him: See you, when I see you again

Me: Sure!

Then he left, PK arrived few minutes later.

Him: Hello

Me: Hi

Him: Where is your friend?

Me : She left

Him: Okay

He started the car and drove

Him: I'm sorry about earlier, I promise it will never happen again

Me: Akhongxaki

Him: I will make it up to you

Me: Okay

As we were reaching home, he pulled the car. He pulled me closer and kissed me.

He pulled back

Him: Khawume kutheni unuka iNdoda nje?

His facial expression had changed emfinge intshiya.

You be continued..

Insert 25

I gave him a dead stare as well, with a confused facial expression.

Him: Ndiyabuza andinyi

Me: Haike ngoku inuka njani indoda?

Him: Ungandezi uthontselina mna

Me: What you talking about, Awunukiselwa nguwe!

Wandijamela

Me: I mean like, you are there only man here

Him: Sundenza muncu vah!

Me: Haike ndithule

Him: Onika ungandiqheli

Me: How? I mean like I don't know what you talking about.

Him : Mxxxxxxxxxmx

Me: Hehake

Him : Can I come see you tonight?

Me: Will depend

Him: Okay

I opened the car door

Him : No hug, No kiss?

Me: Okay

I closed the door and hugged him.

Him: This smell kanjani

Me: Oh please

Him : Okay

We kissed then, I went back home.

Luvano was watching soccer and Mom was not back yet.

Him: What time is it?

Me: I don't know

Him: If I was not in this state, I would have....

Me : Shame

I said as I was heading to my room, I took off my shoes and wore my slippers.

Me: Call Mom and tell her to buy takeaway

I said as I entered the lounge

Him: Why don't you?

Me: Kanene

I rolled my eyes

I called her

Her: Baby

Me: Please buy takeaway's

Her: Okay but I will come home late

Me: Where are you?

Her : Taking care of something

Me: Okay...

Her: Grill meat nitye nesonka

Me: Okay

Her: See you later

Me: Sure

She hung up

Luu: What did she say?

Me: I must grill meat and eat with bread

Him: When is she coming back kanti?

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: Oh

I was not in the mood to grill meat, I was feeling lazy.

I took my phone , send a message for PK to buy pizza.

He called immediately , I stood up and went to my room.

Me: Hello

Him: Uthini?

Me: Please buy pizza, I'm gonna pay when you get here

Him: Where is your mother kanti?

Me: I don't know, but she said she will be home late.

Him: Okay then

Me: Sure!

I hung up then went back to the lounge

Luu : Who was that?

Me: PK

Him: Oh okay

My phone rang again, this time it was Baliso.

Me: Hey you

Him: Hey sweetness, I was just checking if you got safe home.

Me: Yes I got safe home, thanks for asking. Hope you also arrived safe home

Him : Yeah, Mmmm... Buy the way what you up too?

Me: Just chilling with my boring Brother

" Ungandiqheli, sekutheni? " Said Luvano at the background.

Liso : Hahaha, uzokubetha ubhuti wakho

Me: Yhoo ubawela nyani!

We giggled

Him: So...what are you doing this weekend?

Me: Nothing

Him: Come on...

Me: Nyani

Him: Are you for real?

Me: I'm for real

Him: We having a party at my friends house, why don't you join us?

Me: My mother would never approve that

Him : Ndiyakucela torhoo!

Me: I can't

Him: Please, please, please

I rolled my eyes

Me: I will think about it, I'm not promising anything.

Him : Moja ke..

Me: Sure

We hung up

Luu: Who was that?

Me: Baliso

Him: Baliso waphi lowo?

Me: A friend of mine from school

Him : Oh, does PK knows about him?

Me: Haibo it's not necessary?

Him: Okay xawusitsho Madam!

He changed the channel and we watched a Movie.

Him: I'm hungry tshini!

Me: Wait, PK is coming with something to eat

Him : Sekutheni ngoku?

Me: I'm gonna pay Duh!

Him : Andiyontanga yakho vah!

Me: I know

Him: Yabona wena!

My phone rang, it was PK telling me that he was outside.

I went outside to him, I got inside the car .

Me: Mmm...the smell

Him: Won't I get a piece?

Me: Yaba-

He pulled me closer and kiss me

Him: Nditheni?

Me: Nevermind

We kissed then he pulled back

Him: I love you

Me: Love you too

My brother send me a text telling me to come inside with PK.

Me: Guess what?

Him: What?

Me: Bhuti uthi masingene

Him: Okay

Me: Are you for real?

Him : Haibo

Me: It will feel awkward

Him: Uyagula wena!

He opened the door, I watched him as he seriously got out the car.

Him: Come out

Me: Seriously?

Him: Come on

I slowly opened the door and came out. He looked the car as I walked ahead.

Him : Sundishiya

Me: Khawuleza!

I opened the side gate and we entered the compound.

He held me from the behind

Him: Kuyabanda

Me: Not kakhulu

Him: But still

We got by the door and He let go of me. I handed him the box and opened the door.

We got inside, went straight to the lounge. Luvano and PK handshake bethethela phezulu.

Me: I didn't know you this fast

Luu: Ungenaphi?

I rolled my eyes as I opened the box

Luu: Ndalamba worse

Then they didn't wait any further, they just helped themselves.

I took out juice from the fridge

PK : Ndibawela ehlwahlwazayo!

I took out Coke and poured for them

Luu: No limitations.... Beka, Beka phantsi le Coke

Me: Esheee!

Ndithi bayibetha bayivala laPizza and 2L Coke, I only Got one slice.

Me: You guys are unfair

Luu: Can you spell unfair? Utsho ngobangathi unguSister kaUnfair.

PK : Kancane

Luu: Oh kanene

PK : Sekutheni uphoxana noBaby wam in front of me?

Luu: Heee yhuuu, ungandibethi ndiyazigulela!

PK : Mxxm wena kanjani!

We chilled, chatting just having fun.

My phone vibrated, it was a message from Baliso , reading as follow : Goodnight sweetness, I really had a great time with you today. Please think about what I asked you earlier on. "

I replied back : " Okay will think about it, Goodnight to you too"

PK : Who is that?

Me: A friend

Luu: Baliso?

Me: Yes

PK gave me confused look

Him : Baliso waphi lowo?

Luu: Khambuze nyani

Me: Friend wethu

PK : Why is he sending you messages at this time?

Me : He is inviting me to a party.

PK : Awuyi apho!

Luvano stared at him

Me: Why?

Luu : Kancane, please don't try to control my sister

PK : If she is going, I'm also coming with

Me: Hayi kengoku

Luu: Tshisaaaa Ntwanaz!

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Yes

Luu: Hayi kodwa, my sister needs a break... You can't follow her around

PK : I'm gonna take you to this party and fetch you again

Me: I'm not sure if I'm going or not, because Mom could not agree!

Luu : Nah! I will deal with her

Me: Enkosi Bhuti

PK : Why you entertaining her?

Luu: Because she is my sister!

Later on, I accompanied PK to the car, we chatted a little while in each others embrace, leaning by the car. We kissed biting each others lips.

We broke from each others embrace later on then we went our separate way.

The following day....

Mom arrived early in the morning, she still had yesterday's clothes.

I was watching TV together with Luvano.

Mom: Molweni

Me: Molo

She went straight to the her room.

Luu: Akamdala bethunani for uOuter!

I didn't reply to that

She went to take a bath, I could tell there was something wrong with her.

I asked what was wrong, she just said she had an headache but I knew she was lying.

She locked herself all day at her room.

That really worried me, I called Joe and told him everything.

Him: She didn't come home last night?

Me: I thought she was with you?

Him : Don't worry, I will talk to her okay?

Me: Okay

We hung up

I went to knock at her door for several times before she opened.

Me: Mama are you okay?

She nodded avoiding eye contact

Me: Are you sure?

Tears immediately escaped her eyes, I hugged her tightly as she started to sob.

To be continued...

Insert 26

My heart always break into million pieces when I see my mother crying, tears started to forming as I was squeezing her tight brushing her back, with no words to utter. She let go and broke out of my embrace wiping her tears with the back of her hands, sniffing as she tried to calm herself down.

Me: Mom are you okay?

A smile slowly appeared on her face, I could not tell if it was a smile of joy or a smile of pretense.

She sniffed once again as she held my face, looking me through the eyes.

Her: I'm okay

Me: Then why are you crying? You got us worried, I even called Joe!

Her red eyes opened widely

Me: We were worried about you

Her: I'm a big girl

Me: Then why were you crying?

She started stuttering

Her: One of my friends lost her baby

I didn't buy that story but I just pretended to believe every single word that came out of her mouth.

Few days later...

Luvano was recovering at least I didn't have to babysit him anymore, while on the other hand Mom was acting strange. Answering phone calls outside and going out often without letting us know where she was going, that was worrying me.

Well...

It was a Saturday afternoon, Mom was sitting in front of the mirror fixing her hair.

Me: Where are you going?

Her: I'm visiting my friend, the one who lost her baby

Me: Oh okay

Her : She needs my support

Me: How old was the baby and what happened?

Her: She... She was 2 years old...she was sick

Me: Oh okay

She stood up and applied her perfume then took her purse.

Her : I might not come back, don't forget to lock all the doors and windows....

Me: We not toddlers

Her : You are to me....bye

She said as she placed a kiss on my cheek then she walked out.

I followed her to the door then watched her car drove off.

Luu: Mxxxxxxxxxm awungo mntana wena, ungu Somntana !

I turned around and looked at him as he was standing by the kitchen entrance only wearing his pants.

Me: Meaning?

Him: Don't act apha! We both know that you excited that she won't be coming home tonight

A smile immediately appeared on my face

Him: Wena! Uzocholwa ecamkwe langa!

Me: Heee yhuu

Him: Ngaske uPK athi awuyi!

I giggled

Me: I'm going njena!

I modelled as I walked pass him

Luu: Ithi pe, ungayi nakulo Party!

Me: I love you too!

SaGroova akekho uGogo! I started to sing and dance at the same time.

He shook his head then went out of the house.

I went to the bedroom, I was sharing the same bedroom with my mother now, since Luvano moved in with us.

I was not sure what to wear, I was just confused.

Baliso called as I was busy looking for something to wear.

Me: Hey dude

Him: Hey sweetness, are you still coming?

Me: Of course undithathanjani?

Him: what do you drink?

Me: Juice is fine

Him: Duh, juice? This is not a pyjama party!

Me: I don't drink alcohol

Him: Wow...Mmmm okay.

Me: What time does the party starts?

Him: At 5pm

Me : Okay

Him: It's past three already.. Don't disappoint

Me: I won't

Him: Tell me when you on your way, ndizokukhawulela eComplex

Me: Sure

We hung up, then came to a final decision. I choose my blue denim jagging, white more hair top and my white sneakers, I was happy about the outfit.

I folded the rest of the clothes back to the wardrobe then went to make myself something to eat.

Luu: Did you remind PK about the party?

Me: Why?

I asked as I bite my bread

Him: I advise you to call him

Me: It's not necessary

Him: Okay xawusitsho Madam

I continued eating my bread playing with my feet.

When I was done eating, I stood up and went to place my plate at the kitchen.

Luu: Don't forget to clean your plate

I rolled my eyes

Me: I know Duh!

I took a bath later on then applied lotion on my body as I was looking at my body through the mirror.

PK called as I was standing naked in front of the mirror.

Me: Baby

Him: baby, Wenzani?

Me: About to dress up

Him: Uyaphi?

Me: Party, don't tell me you forgot

Him: Party, party party...oh oh I remember.

Me: It's fine I'm gonna take a taxi

Him: Iphi le party darn?

Me: Dwesi

Him: No, ndiyeza ndizokulanda

Me: Okay...the party starts at 5pm

Him: sharp

We hung up, I dressed up then applied eye pencil ,mascara and pink lipstick.

I finished the look with gold earrings and necklace.

I applied My fragrance then tied up the place.

It was already past 5 , I took long than I expected.

Baliso called asking where I was but I told him I will be late.

PK arrived few minutes later, I said bye to my brother then we left.

Him: Kutheni uzilungise kangaka?

Me: I'm gonna meet people there Kaloku

Him: I'm gonna come fetch you at 8 pm

Me: 9 pm

Him: 8

Me: Whatever

I took my phone and called Baliso told him I'm on my way.

PK : Will there be females as well?

Me: I think so

Him: Oh

I identified Baliso as he was standing by the complex busy with his phone.

Me: Stop, naku Baliso

He was looking handsome I must say , I could see PK was feeling unsecured, I could tell by the looks on his face.

Him: Baphi abanye abantu?

Me: Bendikhawulela , I'm sure the others are at the party.

I opened the window and told him to get into the car.

He did as I said

Me: Baliso meet my boyfriend, PK

Liso : My Ta

Me: Phakamani meet my friend Baliso

PK : Exe

Me: Baliso direct us to the party

Liso : Okay

Well arrived at party and there were lots of people already, other standing by the flaming fire.

PK : Jonga apha Sani if anything happens to Onika, you will wish you were never born understood?

Me: Like seriously?

Him: And no funny businesses

He gave Baliso a dead stare

Liso : Sure Ta yam

PK : Good!

He pulled me closer for a kiss then let go.

Him: See you later

Me: Sure!

We got out of the car then joined the others.

Liso : Your boyfriend though

Me: Don't even talk about it...I'm sorry about that

Him: It's cool

He introduced me to his friends, they were coconuts, speaking English but we were all black.

The party heated, everyone was drunk except me, I started to get bored because I was not in the same vibe as them.

Two girls approach me

Girl 1: Why are you not drinking? Are you a born again Christian?

Girl 2: Here, taste

She gave a dumpy and she was not taking a no for an answer. I just took it, I didn't want to sound boring, so I took the drink and started drinking.

Baliso came to me and told me to come join the crowd, they were playing spin the bottle. I moved back and watched them playing.

People were kissing each other iyilonto, Baliso gave me a refill I started enjoying myself nam ndithethela phezulu, ndikhumsha mntakabawo kuqhuma uthulu ndikwazi nam njeee.

I was even dancing feeling myself, everyone was forced to drink four shorts of whiskey. I didn't like the taste but I enjoyed the feeling afterwards,

It was like I was walking on space.

We played different kinds of games, laughing, teasing yonke lonto.

We drank another 4 shorts of whiskey hayi ndadwanguza this time around, my vision was not clear this time. I could stand properly, my legs were failing me. I felt the urge to vomit, I ran to the other side and started vomiting.

My memory was fading bit by bit.

I was now sitting down on the ground with Baliso.

Him: Slow down now, you drunk

Me: I want to sleep

He was also drunk , he helped me stand up but we both fell back again, I remember laughing as we were lying on the ground.

I don't know what happened next and after.

The following morning...

I felt the urge to urinate, I opened my eyes. I was not at my house, I looked around, I was at PK's flat.

He was lying next to me, I uncovered myself to find out I was naked. I quickly covered myself ndilaqaza.

"Phakamani! " I whispered

Him: Mmmm?????

Me: Vuka

He turned around and stared at me

Me: Why am I naked?

Him : Mxxxxxxxxx fuck you!

Then he turned around

Me: Phakamani

Him: Fokof!

Hee ithini nalento?

To be continued...

Insert 27

My head was paining and my stomach was feeling sick.

I quickly jumped out of bed, I could feel I was about to vomit.

I grabbed PK's gown and wrapped it as I opened the door.

I immediately vomited the moment I got out of the door.

My body was shivering and feeling lame.

I leaned with one hand on the wall while other one was wiping my mouth.

"Sisi Uryt? " Asked a familiar voice, I slowly turn around.

PK's Mother was standing by the washing line holding a T-shirt ready to hang it.

Me: Ndiqujelwe sisusu

I vomited again, she came closer to me dropping everything.

She took me inside the house and gave water.

Her: Butye ntoni?

Yhuu yintoni inxaki yalomama na?

Me: I don't know, it's fine.... I'm gonna be okay.

I was placing one hand on my forehead as a sign that I was experiencing headache.

She told me to go lie down then see her before I go home, I just nodded then went back to the flat.

I opened the windows because the smell was not pleasing, then I lay next to PK.

"Kutheni ungena ngqondo nje? " Asked PK disturbing my peace. .

I turned and faced him , his facial expression was scary.

Me: What do mean?

Him: Andikwazi noba uyi half tank, full tank or quarter tank.. I'm not sure but likhona ithontsi.

Me: Haike ngoku!

Him: Unayo phofu, mhlawumbi awusenayo!

Ndithi mntakabawo bendinyola nyola entloko.

Me: What you talking about?

Him : You were acting like a damm hoe yesterday !!!

I opened my eyes widely because those words stroked deep down.

Him : Ufane wawa khupha, khawutsho yintoni bikunyanzela usele Izolo?

I was not in the mood kanjani, I just stared at him without uttering a single word.

Him : Yazi ndibawela ukuvathula ngempama ngoku!

He was really pissed, my phone vibrated. I searched for it, I was not sure where it was. I found it then I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

Caller : Was just checking if you safe

It was Baliso

Me: I'm safe , thanks for asking..

Him: Did he hurt you?

Me: Who????

Phakamani grabbed the phone angrily and ended the call.

Him : Lentwana inesibindi NEH????

He was really furious

Me: What you talking about?

Him: You first lied and told me you were with your female friend at Greenacres.

Me: I was not

Him : Ungakulinge undenze thontselina mna please! Is your friend using the same cologne as Baliso?????

Words stuck on my throat, I couldn't release a single word, I was blinking uncontrollably.

Him : So all this while undenze muncu Onika!!!!

Me: Njani!

Yhoo wandityhala ndayowa phantsi

Him: Kutheni undiqhela ONIKA?

He asked with a furious face, my body started shivering because he was scaring me.

Him: Yintoni lena ndinganayo caba lantwana inayo????

I kept quiet just staring at him

Him: Jonga apha andiyo TV mna ungandibukeli , answer me!

Me: Ufuna ndithini?

He looked at me with angry eyes, folding fits.

I covered myself and screamed ndingeka chathwa.

Him: Mxxm

He opened the door and banged it closed.

My clothes were dirty ngumgabo, with an unpleasant smell.

I stood up , didn't know what to do.

Phakamani came back with water for me to wash.

Him: Vasa ndizoku godusa!

Wandijulela ngeTowel.

Me: Phuma kaloku

Him: Ndiphumele ntoni kodwa you were stripping for me last night?

An embarrassed facial expression appeared on my face.

Him: Khavase wethu!

I dropped the gown and started washing then I applied his body lotion.

I stood there in front of him

Him: What?

Me: Andinampahla

Him: Iya kuBulie

I wore the gown again then went to the main house.

Bulie was frying eggs, the smell made my stomach sick again.

Me: Bulie

Her: Chomza

Me: I need something to wear

Her: Okay

We went to her bedroom and she gave me a dress and slippers.

When I was done dressing up, I went to the main bedroom since Bulie's mother wanted to see me before I go.

Me: I'm leaving..

She ordered me to take a seat next to her and I did as I was told.

She looked at me as I was uncomfortably sitting next to her.

Her: Are you pregnant?

I shook my head

Her: Are you preventing?

Me: What is that?

Her: Xawulala nendoda Kaloku sisi ungakhuseli, uyamitha.

Ndawakhupha amehlo

Me: Nyani???????

Her: Ewe , you must buy a pregnancy test.

When I was done speaking with Bulie's mother. I went back to the flat

Me: Ndimithi mna?

Wandijonga and ignored me

Me: Xa umntu eleli nendoda uyamitha????

Him: Ngubani lendoda buleli Nayo wena?

Me:Nguwe

Him : Bhanxekile

Me: Ewe, kudala ndimane ndilala nawe!

Him: Ngoku umithiswe kumane ulala ecamkwam?

Me: Ewe utsho uMamakho!

Him: Unethontsi wena plus naye , Masambe!

To be continued...

I know it's short but Ucuntsu akafani noCwaka.

Insert 28

We drove in silence, I was leaning my head against the window falling asleep.

We stopped at a garage for fuel, I sat straight.

Him: Are you hungry ?

I shook my head

Him: Can I buy you juice?

I shook my head again

Him: Okay then

He opened the door and got out, I watched him as he entered the store, He came back with two energy drinks and handed one to me.

Him: It will help you kulebhabhalaza yakho!!!!

I took it then ndayisingatha while I placed My head against the window again and closed my eyes.

He started the car and we drove

Him: Onika

Me: Mmmm?

Him: I don't want to see you near that Baliso guy again , uyandiva?

Me: Why?

Him: Because I say so!

Me: So now, you gonna choose who I can hang out with and who I can't hang our with?

Him: He is bad news for you and I don't want you to hang out with negative influence.

Me: He is not a negative influence

Him: Jonga let's not argue about this. I don't want to see you next to that Chap again !

Me: Uyadika shame, it feels like I'm dating my father!

He didn't respond, he just stared ahead.

We arrived at Young park, my mother was not back yet, so phakamani also went inside.

Luvano was watching TV

Me: Molo Bhuti

He turned and faced us

PK : Exe Ntwanaz!

He looked at the clock and back at us

Luu: It's past 9 am

PK : I called you last night and told you Onika will be sleeping over.

Luu: You didn't tell me, you will be bringing her back this time!

PK : Khawuyeke iPolitics please!

Luu: Hope you didn't take advantage of my sister.

PK : Look Mfethu, take her to your room and inspect her yourself and check if she is still a virgin or not.

Luu: Kancane wena!

PK : What are waiting for???

Luu: I'm not gonna do that

PK : Then cut the act!

Luu : Yaphapha wena!

Me: Where is Mom?

Luu : She is not back yet and she is not answering her phone.

I searched for mine

Me: I think I left my phone at your flat PK

Him: I will bring it later

Me: Okay

Him : I'm going now

Me: Bye

We didn't share a hug or kiss because, Tatu Luvano was watching.

He left then I went to sleep, I was feeling sleepy and lame.

Two weeks later and few days later...

It was early January, the schools were opening the following day. I was excited because I was gonna be a senior student, a matriculant .

My mother bought me new school uniform, I was not wearing the same Jersey and pullover as the previous year.

Luvano had gone back to school but he was doing practicals this year, He was also excited about going.

Phakamani moved to his new apartment earlier this month at Dwesi although his mother was not happy about his decision, but he said he is not getting younger, ufuna ukwazi uzimela and be a real man. He got a new Job as floor manager at a retail shop at greenacres. Although it was not paying much, it was his first step to his goals.

As for Baliso, I stayed away from him and didn't answer his calls to avoid trouble.

Well...

It was a Monday morning and the sun was blazing like hell.

I woke up ,opened the windows and inhaled the fresh air that entered the room. Mom was busy at the kitchen, I made the bed and went to the bathroom. Brushed my teeth and washed my face, I went to the kitchen and greeted my mother.

Her: No wonder it's so hot today, it's because you woke up early!

I giggled

Me: Haibo Mama!

Her: Are you excited about school?

Me: You have no Idea!

Her: Ufunde mntanam, Education is the key to many doors and No one can take that away from you not even a witch from hell!

Me: I will Mama

Her: Leave Ama Boyfriend, they gonna make you loose focus!

Me: Not onke

Her: I have been there mntanam, I know what I'm talking about , They all after sex and they gonna leave after they got what they wanted. Leave you heart broken and pregnant.

Me: I will study Mama and make you proud, I promise!

Her: Don't do this for me, do it for yourself!

I nodded

Her: I love you princess and I want the best for you!

She pulled me closer for a hug then we broke from each others embrace.

Her: Go and wash before you get late for school.

Me: Okay!

PK called while I was dressing up

Me: Baby

Him: Baby wam, how did you sleep last night?

Me: Peaceful and you?

Him: Same here, are you ready for school? Excited?

Me: Over excited! You have No idea!

Him: Good , baby please ufunde and not play games.

Me: What's up with you and Mom?

Him: We want the best for you!

Me: I appreciate

Him: Can I see you Sunday?

Me: Why Sunday?

Him: I'm knocking off late the whole week but I'm off Sunday.

Me: So I won't see you the whole week?

Him : I will call you everyday baby

Me: Okay

Him : Ndicela ungaqumbi

Me: It's fine, I will see you Sunday!

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too!

After school...

I took a taxi back home, because I couldn't expect Mom to come fetch me, knowing she is struggling.

I was at the same class as Simpiwe again this year, I guess we were friends again because I was not angry at him anymore.

I said my goodbyes to Bulie and walked to the taxi rank with Simphiwe.

Him: Can't believe it's our last year

Me: Neither am I!

Him: What are you gonna do next year?

Me: Medicine

Him: Engineering

Me: Wow , My brother is doing practicals this year

Him : Wish I was him!

Me : You will get there!

Him: Yeah, I guess

I got home later on, Luvano was not home. I opened then made myself sometimes to eat before I could do anything. When I was done, I changed to my casual wear and took out my physics text book, I wanted to start before the teacher so that I can be ahead of her.

Five months later ...

It was early June, we were preparing for the upcoming June exams. Grade 12 is not a difficult grade its just that, there is a lot of work in a short time period.

If you don't study everyday, you gonna have trouble and suffer from stress when it's time for the final examination. I didn't have enough time for PK and he also didn't have enough time for me because of work. We would spend time together when he is off.

Well....

It was Friday afternoon, it was PK's half day so bephuma u1pm and he was coming to fetch me from school.

Bulie : Chomi I have something to tell you.

Me: Listening

Her: I did it

Me: Did what?

Her: Lawai

Me: What you talking about?

Her: I'm not a virgin anymore

I opened my eyes widely and my lips were hanging.

Her : Yabonake

Me: Hayi lona

Her: I regret telling you

Me : I'm shocked , How was it?

Her : It was painful at the beginning but I'm enjoying it now

Me: How long?

Her: March

Me: And you telling me now?

Her: Askies!

Me: Who is it?

Her: I will tell you...but not now

Me: Why?

Her : It's still soon

Me: Do I know him?

Her : I don't know, don't worry you will find out soon

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxm

Her: So you and my brother???

Me: What?

Her: Have you -

She made a hand signal

Me: NO!

Her: Haibo why???

Me: I'm not ready

Him: Watch out ungashiywa

Me: I'm still young

Her : Duh at this age?

Me: At least you 18 I'm still 17

Her: Shame Bhuti, but Yhooo ayimnadi chomi! I can't wait for him to come back.

Me: Where is he?

Her : He is at school, University!

Me: Wow, can't wait to meet him

Her: But chomi think about it, you old enough to have sex, what are you still waiting for???

Someone else will come and give him all and then?

Me: Bulie please

PK arrived and he picked me up

Bulie : What about me?

Him: Your mother is coming

Her: Okay!

Me: Bullet

PK :Dutyuuuu

We giggled

Bulie : Anisadiki

We drove to his appointment, dropped my bag and sat on the sofa.

PK : Uzozenzela into yokutya

Me: Awukho romantic kanjani

He giggled as he walked to the bedroom.

I made something to eat for the both of us then we ate.

We chatted for a long while then we started kissing.

"Me: I'm not ready

Bulie : Watch out ungashiywa

Me: I'm still young

Her : Duh at this age? "

As he was kissing me, Bulie's words rang on my head over and over.

He started kissing my neck squeezing my breast, he got on top of then he stopped.

Him: I'm sorry

He stood up, I pulled him closer

Me: I'm ready

Him: Are you sure? I don't want to force you.

I nodded

Him: Okay, Let's go

He held my head and took me to the bedroom.

We started kissing then we were on top of the bed, he slowly took off my school uniform, he took off my under wears, he also took off his clothes, he got between my legs and his manhood warmly moved between my thighs.

Him: Still want to continue?

I nodded he started kissing me again, rubbing my nipples, I felt his manhood slowly going in, the pain was unbearable, I moaned out loud.

Him: Sorry

He tried to be gentle but hayi I couldn't continue, it was painful.

Me: I was lying, I'm not ready

To be continued...

Insert 29

Mini skirt

Him: Onika come on, please baby... I'm gonna be gentle.

I shook my head

Him: Ngoku ndithini mna???

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Mxxm

He stood up and walked to the bathroom, my heart was beating fast.

I reached for my school uniform and started dressing up.

He walked in and dressed up as well, he was not uttering a single word.

I felt so bad

Me: Okay iza senze ke

He totally ignored me

Me: Phakamani

Him: Onika, it's fine! You not ready!!!!

Then he walked out to the kitchen, I just became dump, I slowly walked to the lounge stood there gazing around

Him: Masambe

Me: Ixolo

Him: Onika please

Me: Are you mad at me?

Him: I'm not , let's go!

I just told myself that I will never come to his house again and I'm gonna break up with him because I'm still young for him , he will run out of patience and date someone else. I didn't want to get hurt, I didn't want to see him leaving me for someone else.

We got in the car and we drove in silence.

He turned on the music, it was just the music playing and the sound of the road.

We arrived at Young Park, he parked outside the compound.

I opened the door, he held my arm and turned off the music.

Him: I'm sorry

Me: I understand

Him: Please close the door

I did as he said

Him: Baby, I was acting out of emotions, I'm sorry . That won't happen again I promise.

I took a deep breath and swallowed very hard.

Me: Don't worry, there won't be a next time.

Him : What do you mean by, there won't be a next time?

Me: I'm 17 years old Phakamani, You are 24 years old...

Him: So?

Me: I love you but I'm still immature for you, I feel like I'm holding you back

Him: Meaning?

Me: I can't continue with this relationship anymore, find someone in your age, someone who will be always available when you need her.

Him: I want you

Me: You have needs PK and I'm not ready

Him: Baby I told you I will wait

Me: Till when?

Him: Till you ready

Me: It's only a matter of time till you find someone else. I don't want to feel pressured

Him: Onikayo listen mfethu, Ndiyakuthanda please and I will wait till you ready.

Me: I'm sorry PK I can't continue...

Him : You being totally unfair now, Have I ever forced you into anything? Have I pressured you into sleeping with me?

I shook my head

Him: Now ingxaki iphi?

He held my hands and lifted my chin with his index finger.

Him : I love you

What has this guy given me, I always see glitters when I look into his eyes, he is my weakness , I can't resist his charm.

Me: I love you too!

My eyes closed as he placed his soft lips on mine, his lips tasted sweet .

He pulled back

Him: You are my number one lady

Me: I love you

Him: I love you more!

I giggled

Him: I will call you later...

Me: Okay

He kissed me for the last time

Him: bye

Me: Bye

I got out of the car and walked straight home, my stomach experience butterflies, I couldn't stop smiling but my mood changed when I saw Dad's car parking outside.

I slowly walked inside hoping not to see him inside.

I got angry when I saw him sitting on the sofa with a glass of Coke.

Me: Mama what is he doing here???

Mama : Princess take a seat

I was confused

Me: What is going on?

Her: Me and.... Your father.

She paused , I was looking at her without a single blink.

Her : Your father and I, are not Divorcing anymore...

Me: What?

Tears started to form, I couldn't believe my ears, I wished I was dreaming.

Her: He has changed

Me: After everything Mama? What about Joe????

Her: Onikayo please give your father a second chance.

Me: I can't Mama, He is not my father!

I stood up

Her: Seat down! Don't you ever dare walk out on me when I'm speaking, understood?

I was scared of my mother, so I took a seat again.

Her: I know it's hard for you but I still love him, he is my husband, he is your father... I promised that till death do us apart. He needs me!

I just kept quiet, not uttering a single word. I was feeling betrayed, hurt and disappointed. How can she take him back after everything he put her through, I hated her as well.

Her : He is still your father please give him another chance.

Me: I don't have a choice

They both looked down

Me: Can I go and Study?

Mom: Okay

I stood up and went to the bedroom , I started crying, How could she? I can't live with that man again, he is evil! I hate him.

I took out my phone and started chatting with PK, I told him everything that was happening.

He managed to calm me down and told me to take it easy, it's only few months and I will be going to University , I won't see much of them anymore.

Few weeks later...

We were leaving at Zwide again, back to the boring life, church every Sundays, Saturdays and cell groups during the week. I have to admit, I missed Gloria a lot.

Well....

It was a Wednesday afternoon, I was busy revising because I was writing Life science the following day.

Someone knocked on my door and the slowly opened. I turned around and it was Dad.

Him: Are you busy?

I mean like what kind of question is that? He can see I'm busy.

Me: I'm revising Life science

He walked towards me and sat on top of the bed.

Him: Let's talk about your career, have you applied yet?

I shook my head

Him: Why not?

I will apply tomorrow

Him: Why not know?

Me: I'm still busy

Him: When you are done

Me: Okay

Him: You don't have to study medicine anymore... I'm sorry for forcing you to do subject you don't like.

Me: It's too late, I'm gonna continue with them

Him: But you can, something else at University, something that you like

Me: That's not possible

Him: It is, I will show you when you done.

Me: Okay

He walked out and I continued with what I was doing.

I'm sorry but I will never forgive him, He can fool mom but he can't fool me.

As for Luvano he didn't take the news well, he was angry I could hear from the phone and I don't blame him as For my sister, she distanced herself further more.

Days turned into weeks and weeks turned into months. Dad was still the same, he was sweet and loving but I still didn't fall for his pretense. He has to try harder to gain My trust and forgiveness.

PK arrived for the June holiday, he didn't want to stay with us but I begged him because I needed him.

He finally agreed but he was not speaking with Mom and Dad.

He was still angry and I don't blame him.

One Saturday afternoon, I was watching TV with Luvano , Mom and Dad were not home .

Someone knocked at the door on my surprise it was PK and he was angry.

Him: Uphi uLuvano?

Me: How did you get in?

Her pushed me aside and went straight to Luvano. Her didn't utter a single word, he punched him and he almost fell.

PK : Luvano Why?

Luvano was holding on his nose, I was shocked and confused.

Luu: I'm sorry Mfethu?

He grabbed him and hit him again the wall, folding him by the chest, I never saw him like this, he was angry hayi nje kancinci.

To be continued....

Insert 30

Luu: I'm sorry ntwana, it was not my intentions...

Phakamani was so angry, he was like a beast.

PK : Was not your intentions????

Luu: PK please

PK : How could you Luvano??? I valued your sister, ndimphethe okwe qanda. You were always on my case, PK if you ever break my sisters heart I will kill you, if you ever impregnate my sister I will kill you! But all along you knew you are sleeping with my Sister!

Luu: I can explain

PK : Explain what Luvano??? Is your sister pregnant????

I opened my eyes widely, OMG! No wonder Bulie is acting strange lately.

Luu: I'm sorry Mfethu!

PK : Damn you Luvano, Damn you!!!!

They started fighting, " PK please... Luvano... "

I started yelling but didn't go closer, I was scared. Gloria walked in and stopped them.

Gloria : This is not a circus!!!!

PK yanked himself and fixed his shirt

Him: This is not over!

Then he walked out very pissed and angry, Luvano walked upstairs without uttering a word.

I just stood in that same position with words stuck on my throat.

Gloria : Amen!

Then she clapped once and walked away.

I slowly sat on the sofa with one hand covering my mouth. I was supposed to be her best friend, why am I the last one to hear about this?

I took my phone and called Bulie, it rang several times and she didn't pick up.

I thought for my self, Arg Nevermind! She will tell me when she is ready.

I changed and wore my black maxi dress and sandals, fixed my hair and face.

When I was done, I took my bag and went to church.

After church...

Dad came to fetch me.

Him: How was church?

Me: Church was nice

Him: Okay, So what do you want to eat for super?

Me: I don't know

Him: Pizza?

Me: Pizza is fine

We then went to buy pizza and drove back home.

Mom was busy with her marking and it was a lot of papers.

Dad: Let's help your Mother

Me: Shame nyani

Dad: Baby do you need help?

Hamba BABY!

Mom: I would appreciate that

Me: I'm gonna Mark the GR8's papers

Mom : Suit yourself

We started marking then we finished and ate later on.

I went to sleep after helping my mother tied up the lounge.

PK called later that night and he was drunk.

Me: Hello

Him: Baby wenzantoni?

Me: Ndiyaxhuzula

Him : Uyazibonake

Me: PK ndiyozela bonanje

Him: Can I come fetch you?

Me: PK ndicela uhambe uyolala, uyaphangela ngomso!

Him: It's my weekend off, so I'm not working.

Me: It's late, go home

Him : Not without you!

Me: I'm sober kemnake and I'm not in the mood to entertain you!

I ended the call and switch off my phone, because I knew he was gonna call non stop.

The following morning...

"Onika..." yelled my mother as she was knocking at my door.

"Okay, ndivukile! " I yelled back.

I heard her footsteps walking away as I was yawning and rubbing my eyes.

I stood up, made the bed and then opened the window.

I went to the bathroom and took a quick shower then brushed my teeth.

I went back to the bedroom and applied lotion on my body. I wore my red dotted black dress and red stilettos.

I fixed my hair and face then went downstairs with my bible and phone.

Dad was already dressed eating breakfast, I joined him.

Me: Molo Tata

Him: Molo mntanam, you look beautiful

Me: Enkosi

We went to church later on.

After the sermon, Dad did the unexpected. He apologized to us in public, promising that he will be a better husband and father. He has learned from his mistakes and will never walk in that path again. He promised us Love and protection.

I started to believe him but not 100% .

We went back home after church and Luvano was watching TV .

Mom: You should also join us to church on Sunday's.

Her didn't reply and Mom just let him be.

Him: Mom, Dad I have something to tell you.

I just walked upstairs, ngoba she is my friend and kuzojongwa kum.

I was expecting to hear a noise but unfortunately there was not. They were calm talking at a normal tone.

Kumnandi ubangu Bhuti mos, he always get away with everything.

Later on...

I went to join them for super.

Mom: Onika bless the food

I prayed then we started eating

Dad: The matrix dance is around the corner, ain't you excited?

Me: I am!

Mom: I will make sure that you look beautiful!

Me: I'm over excited

We finished eating then I went to sleep.

Few months later...

It was early September, we were busy with the September examination. Bulelwa was now six months pregnant and her tummy was huge. PK was still mad at Luvano but that didn't affect our relationship.

It was a Tuesday after school, I was writing Maths paper 2.

I was waiting for Dad to come fetch me.

Me: Can't wait for the matrix dance

Bulie: This topic is boring

Me: Shame you not going kanene

Her: Mxxm

Me: I'm sorry chomi andizophinda ndithethe

Her: Ungaze umithe shame, akukho mnadi!

Me: How does it feel like? Do you feel when the baby is moving?

She nodded

Her: I just hate the pills that I have to chew.

Me: Yhoo, So does my brother call you everyday?

Her: Mxxm... The mention of his name makes me sick

Me: Haibo why?

Her: Uyandidika

Me: Yhooo

Her Mom arrived then I waited for my Dad a few minutes before he arrived.

Me: Molo Tata

Him: Molo, how did you write?

Me: I did my best

Him : That is the spirit!

I giggled

Him: Have you find something for the matrix dance?

Me: Not yet, I will go to Greenacres Saturday.

Him: Okay

He dropped me then left again.

I undressed and wore my pyjamas then took my physics text book and did revision. I was so focused because I wanted to pass with distinctions.

Days turned to weeks and there was only few days before the matrix dance.

Everything was up to date except my hair and nails.

Thobile advised that I should buy Brazilian hair 20 inches because it with go well with my dress.

She bought the hair for me and I loved the colour, quality and length.

I was excited and couldn't wait till Friday.

Friday morning...

Thobile left over, she wanted to make sure everything was up to date. PK was very supportive, He was the one that helped me pick my dress.

Well...

I woke up early that day, I could sleep.

I went to watch TV at the lounge and made myself cereal then Dad joined me later on.

Him: I know the feeling

Me: Molo Tata

Him: I'm so proud of you

I smiled then he pulled me over for a hug.

Him: I love you

He kissed my forehead

"When are you going to do your hair? "

Said Mom's voice I broke from Dad's embrace.

Me: Ngo10

Mom: It's past 9 now

Me: Okay, I will go and take a bath...

I took a quick bath then Thobile drove me to the salon, they did my hair perfectly because my sister was on their case.

They also did my nails and eyelashes.

We drove back home, Mom was ironing my dress.

Luu: Awumbi maarn!

Me: Ndifuze wena

Him: Yhuuu ungavuya ufana nam wena!

Dad : Luvano is just jealous

Thobile : Nyani!

Mom: Yazi it feels good to have my family together in one roof.

Luu: This is not the time for Oprah Winfrey Show!

My brother thought!

Later on....

Simphiwe came to fetch me, kephofu Phakamani was driving the car.

We took pictures with my family, they all follow with their cars. We also took pictures outside the venue then they left. We got inside, the place was looking beautiful and everyone was looking beautiful.

PK came to fetch us after the dance, we first dropped Simphiwe then he drove me home, he parked outside the gate, the lights were still on.

Him: You look beautiful

I blushed

Me: Thank you

Him: But you will look more beautiful if you take off lamasiba asemehlweni.

Me: Mona

Him: Serious baby...

Then he pulled me closer

Him: I love the hair though

He kissed me passionately

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He pulled back

Him: What you doing tomorrow?

Me: After party Kaloku

Him: Awuyi kaloku wena

Me: Why?

Him: Kaloku wena unxila uStrip(e)

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: Ewe

Me: It's not like ndakhulula kula party

Him: Wafika wakhulula erumini yam, So uzothathwa ngumntu ahambe nawe ufike ukhulule!

Me: Yadika shame

Him: I know and I love you!

Me: Mxxm

To be continued...

Insert 31

*Mini skirt *

Few months later...

It was early December and I was done with my final exams, what a relief!

Bulie was heavily pregnant, she was now 9 months ready to deliver at anytime. She was staying indoors all day while my brother was partying every weekend, that's unfair isn't it?

He was done with Varsity, I wish I was him. Dad bought him a new car and he was excited, I was jealous though but Dad said he is gonna buy me a car as well when I reach 21 and that is Sad, because I have to wait 3 more years.

It was boring at home because I had nothing to keep myself busy with.

I would woke up, eat, watch TV, go to church, sleep. That was my daily routine and it was boring. I missed my man but he was always at work and I understand it's busy during festive seasons and they don't get enough off days.

I only communicated with him through the phone but I missed his lips and sense of touch, his cologne, the smell of his breath, his smile, his dimples, his laugh. I missed everything about him.

One afternoon I decided to call him, he didn't answer but he called back after few hours.

Me: Baby

Him: Saw your missed calls buzothini?

Me: Was just missing you

Him: I miss you too baby but I'm busy

Me: I know... We must spend time together when you off.

Him: It's my half day Friday, I knock off at 3pm, I will come fetch you.

Me: Really? Can't wait...

Him: Or come to Greenacres Friday and I will get you there.

Me: Sure

Him: I love you!

Me: I love you too!

We hang up then I continued watching TV.

Simphiwe called later on

Me: Hello

Him: Exe, what you up too?

Me: Watching TV you?

Him: Bored here at home...what you doing tomorrow?

Me: Nothing

Him: Let's go out and catch a movie

Me: Greenacres?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay, I will ask Mom and Dad first

Him: Cool and then we can go and check on Bulelwa.

Me: That is a good idea, she would appreciate our company.

Him: Yeah, see you tomorrow then

Me: Sure

We hang up

Mom and Dad arrived later on.

I first went to Mom

Me: Can I go out tomorrow?

Her: Where to?

Me: Greenacres

Her: No problem but ask your father first.

Me: Okay

I slowly went the lounge where my father was relaxing watching news. I practiced my speech as I was walking to the lounge.

Me: Tata

He turned and looked at me

Him: Ntombi encinci

Me: Tata, can I go to Greenacres tomorrow?

I said while I played with my fingers, trying to hide the fact that my hands were shivering.

Him: It's Thursday tomorrow isn't?

I nodded

Him: No problem as long you don't come back late home

Me: Enkosi Tata

Him: How much to you need?

Me: R200

Him: Okay

Me: Enkosi Tata

I said with a smile on my face then I went to help Mom prepare supper.

Her: You should also buy baby clothes tomorrow.

Me: Baby clothes?

Her: You gonna be a aunt soon and the baby is gonna live with us.

Me: What?

Her: Bulelwa's Mother said she is working and won't have time to babysit when Bulelwa is at varsity next year.

Me: Why didn't she apply here at NMMU?

She shrugged her shoulders

Me: But that is unfair, you and Dad are also working njena...

Her: Doesn't matter wethu, I will take the baby to avoid drama at least Gloria agreed that she will babysit during the day.

Me: Shame Mama

Her: That's life and please Onika don't bring yours, One is just enough for now

Me : Don't worry if I fall pregnant, I will send mine to her/ his grandmother...

She stopped chopping and looked at me.

I giggled

Me: I'm joking

Her : It's not funny

Me : I know

Her: I would squeeze you and make human juice out of you if you come back with a baby

I giggled

Me: I said I was joking Mom

Her: You better!

We finished cooking and I went to set the table, Dad and Luvano came to the table, Mom served the food.

Dad: Luvano it's your time to bless the food.

Him: Onika pray

Mom bless the food and we started eating.

Mom: Have you started buying baby stuff?

He scratched his head

Dad : You should start being responsible because you gonna be a father.

Mom: I see you relaxed... Bulelwa can give birth any time now and you should start taking things serious.

Him: I was there at his house yesterday and she chased me out.

Mom: I would also chase you out because you not serious

Him: I'm serious njena

Dad: I would advise you try harder because she needs you!

Him: I will and I have an announcement to make

We all looked at him

Him : I'm moving out next year

Mom: Not so fast, Your baby will be living with us next year when Bulelwa is at school and I'm gonna need your help

Him: What?

Mom: Yes my boy, the baby will be living with us and you gonna take care of the baby when I'm not around.

Him: You not serious

Dad : Dead serious, what did you expect? You must man up and make sure you get a job so that you can take care of your baby

Him: That's unfair though

Dad: That's life

He ate his food without uttering further words.

The following day...

I woke up late around 11 am , Mom and Dad were not home , Gloria was busy at the kitchen.

Me: Morning Ma

Her : Morning Mtanam

Me: Where is Mom and Dad?

Her: They didn't say where they're going but your father left this.

She handed me a R200 note

Me: Oh okay, thank you

I made myself cereal and I ate.

Simphiwe called later on ,told me that we will meet at 1pm.

I took a shower and I was not sure what to wear. So I just wore a denim jean, black sneakers and my black and white baseball jacket. I styled my bonding, took my sling bag and went downstairs. Luvano was watching TV still had his Pyjamas on.

Me: Sies

Him: Don't start

Me: I was wondering where this smell is coming from

Him: Voetsek!

I giggled

Me: Bye see you later

Him: Mxxm, just go!

I walked out and took a taxi to Greenacres.

I called Simphiwe and told him where I was and we met at KFC. As we were standing at the line, I felt someone tabbing me on my shoulder. I turned around and it was two ladies wearing stilettos.

Lady1: Aren't you Onika?

Me: Yes I am

Lady: I told you, I have saw them together

Lady1: You dating PK?

Me: Why?

Her : I'm just asking

Lady2: I wonder what PK has seen in you and why you dating older men? Why don't you stick to your age?

I just turned around and totally ignored them.

Lady1: Wow he is good in bed, I can't wait to see him tonight

Lady2: Uyayithanda indoda, you were there last night

Lady1: So? He is my man!

Me: Spain let's just go

Lady2: You make a great couple though

Then they started laughing, I must admit. They were looking beautiful, dressed up like super models, everything was up to date. I felt so pale and ugly, my self-esteem decreased immediately. I was no competition to them, they were like movie stars. I felt my heart slowly breaking and tears forming.

Spain : Are you Okay?

Me: I knew he was gonna find someone his age

Him: don't cry, you not even sure if what they saying is true.

Me: Maybe it's true

Him: You don't have an assurance , please wipe your tears...

I wiped them with the back of my hand

Him: Don't let them take away your joy...

Me: I want to go home

Him: You not serious

Me: Please

Him: Let's go to Bulelwa then

Me: Okay

We bought some snacks at Shoprite then we took a taxi to her house.

We arrived there, she was chilling alone.

Her: Why didn't you tell me you coming?

Me: Wanted to surprise you

Her: Ncoo

Spain : How are you soon Mom to be?

Her: I'm coping I guess and you?

Him: I'm good

Her : Mmmm...What do you have in that bag?

She took the bag and opened a packet of biscuits.

Spain : You forward

She giggled

We chatted enjoying ourselves, Bulelwa's Mom arrived then we left because it was already late.

I arrived home, Mom and Dad were cosy they immediately stopped when I walked in.

Mom : You back?

Hee if I wasn't back, I wouldn't be standing here.

Me: Yes, I'm back then I walked upstairs.

The stress came back, those ladies voices started playing over and over on my head till I fell asleep.

My phone vibrates waking me up, I reached for it at my bag and answered.

Me: Hello

PK: Baby wam, what are you doing?

Me: Just woke up

Him: Sleeping so early?

Me: Was tired

Him: Oh, so how was your day?

Me: You don't want to know

Him : Come on

Me: I met two ladies at KFC and they asked me if I'm your girlfriend and asked why am I dating older men.

Him: Don't mind them

Me: Are you dating someone else?

Him: No

Me: I don't believe you

Him: Onika trust me when I say I love you and I love you alone.

Me: Okay

Him: Don't stress yourself, no one is gonna take yourself.... Phola

Me: Okay

We chatted then he hang up.

As we were eating supper, Luvano received a call that Bulelwa is in hospital she is in labour.

We all rushed to the hospital but when we got there, she was already at the labour room giving birth.

Luvano was walking up and down like a mad man.

Minutes later, we heard a cry... Luvano stopped moving.

Him: I'm a father

Dad: yes you are!

Her received feedback that it was a boy My brother wanted to see him, we all wanted to see him.

To be continued...

Insert 32

He was so tinny and cute, I was even scared to hold him.

They named him Lubabalo a combination of their names, cute isn't?

We left later on but Luvano didn't want to go, so he spent the night there with his family how cute.

I called PK when I got home, it rang several times before he could answer.

Him: Baby

Me: Bulelwa has a baby

Him: Old'lady has already told me

Me: He is so cute and tinny

Him: You can also have yours...you know that right?

Me: No, No, No,

He giggled

Him: I'm joking baby

Me: You better!

We chatted a little longer then I went to sleep.

Couple of days later...

It was Christmas Eve, Bulelwa and the baby came to visit.

Mom and Dad were so excited they really loved Lubabalo.

Shame my friend had lost weigh and she didn't have time to go out and have fun, she was always in doors.

We went to sit at my room while Mom and Dad were cuddling with the baby.

Bulie: Onika being a mother is not a child's play

Me: I can see

Her: I would advise you to use a condom every time you and my brother have sex.

Me: It's not like we gonna have sex any time soon

Her: I'm just saying, just be extra careful and don't be like me. I regret ever agreeing to have sex...

Me: Ja neh? But we learn from our mistakes

Her: Just make sure you don't repeat my mistakes, I'm not saying don't have sex but be extra careful.

Me: Okay

Luvano walked in holding Lubabalo

Him: His hungry

Bulie : Bring him here

Luu: Come breastfeed him at my room

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Ungenaphi?

Me: Jealousy

Him: Make you nasty NE?

Bulie: I'm coming back

Luu: You wish, we gonna chill all day in my room. Just you, Me and junior

Me: You not my brother

Him: I wish... Uzoba strong.

Me: Mxxm

Him: Go make your own family and don't hijack mine

Then they left, Mxm my brother can be an Ass**le sometimes.

I went downstairs and joined My family.

Mom: Where is Lubabalo?

Me: Upstairs

Mom: Oh, Bandincede bawo bangaphindi benze omnye!

Dad: That would be madness!

I giggled as I walked to the kitchen, I made myself a sandwich and ate.

The following day...

Phakamani called early in the morning wishing me merry Christmas.

Me: Merry

Him: Can I see you this afternoon?

Me: I'm not sure because Bulelwa and the baby are here , my sister and her husband is coming over.

Him: Okay no problem

Me: Will come tomorrow

Him: I'm working tomorrow

Me: When you off

Him: Okay

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too

We hang up

I closed my eyes again because I was still sleepy, Lubabalo kept us awake last night.

Mom knocked at my door later on and I had to wake up like it or not.

I made the bed, went to brush my teeth then I went to the lounge.

Mom was holding Lubabalo and Dad was on his way out.

Me: Molweni

They greeted back then Dad left

Me: Is Bulelwa still Sleeping?

Mom: Poor child, she hardly slept last night because of him

Me: Shame

I went to the kitchen and made myself cereal and ate

Mom: Start making salads Hlubikazi

Me: Okay

I quickly ate my cereal then started preparing for the lunch.

Luvano and Bulie woke up late and I had to make them breakfast, after eating Bulie helped me prepare.

Later on...

Everyone arrived , Dad and Luvano were preparing the meat outside.

Thobile was holding Lubabalo, she didn't want to let go of him.

The lunch went well, we united as a family, joking, laughing and teasing. Bulelwa felt welcomed and she was happy to be with us.

Everyone left later that night and I went to my room. I was feeling bored, I didn't know why, I was missing PK badly and I couldn't control myself.

I went to knock at Luvano's room, he let me in.

Him: How can I help you?

Me: I need a favour

Him: Listening

Me: Please say yes

Him : Will depend

Me: I'm missing PK

Him: So where do I fit in?

Me: I need your help

Him: What help?

Me: I want you

Then I looked down, playing with my fingers.

Him: Hee waske waqosha umntu

Me: I want you to take me there

Him: Nxilile

Me: Please Bhuti

Him: So now, you want me to take you to your boyfriend??? Awugezi?

Me: Please , Ndiyakucela, Aseblief

Him: No!

Me: Please

Him: I said No!

Me: Okay

I walked away and went to my room and got under blankets.

I heard a knock few minutes later, it was my brother.

Him: Let's go!

I didn't ask many questions I just jumped and dressed up.

Wandibeleka so that they can only hear his footsteps.

We got in the car and we drove to Dwesi, it was past eleven .

Him: Make sure you back by 4am

Me: What?

Him: You know Lubabalo wakes up early right?

I nodded

Him: please or you on your own.

Me: Okay

PK's car was parked outside and the lights were off.

Me: Enkosi

Him : I'm gonna wait till I see you get in.

Me: Okay

I got out of the car and went to knock, I knocked for several minutes then the lights went on. He opened the door he was half naked.

Him: Baby

I waved goodbye to Luvano then He started the car and left.

Me: Can I get in

He started scratching his head

Me: Phakamani, out of the way

He moved aside

Him: Seems like you not excited to see me.

He locked the door , he grabbed my arm as I was walking to the bedroom.

Me: What?

The door swing open, the same lady that I met at greenacres walked out wrapping a towel.

I just closed my eyes

Her: What's going on here?

Luu: Akhona please stay out of this

I felt my heart breaking into million tinny pieces.

He moved closer to me, I moved back. Me: Don't

Him: I'm sorry, this means nothing

Tears started to form, I tried not to release them but they escaped.

Me: You said you love me

Him: That hasn't changed

Me: You said you love me alone Phakamani...

My voice was so low

Him: That hasn't changed, I love you alone

Me: Stop Lying Phakamani... Stop ...

Him: Baby I love you

Me: What is she doing here?

Her: Awumuncu

Him: Shut up!

I reached for my phone and called Luvano.

Him: Who you calling?

Me: I'm calling my brother to come fetch me.

He grabbed the phone, I grabbed it back sajijisana ngayo. He overpowered me and switched off my phone.

Him: You not going anywhere

Akhona: One must go, I will never share a bed with this child

PK : You know how to unlock the door right?, so suit yourself

Her: Just like that?

Him: What did you expect?

Her : I'm not going anywhere

She started tabbing her feet folding her arms.

Me : If you don't want me to call my brother then take me home

Him: I'm not going to do that

Me: Mxm

I walked to the kitchen as I was about to open the door he grabbed me.

Akhona : Let her go, you don't need her!

PK : Okay, I had enough of you, please dressed up and get out

Her: I'm not going anywhere!

She was standing boldly

I was not in the mood for this drama

Me: I want to go home

Her : Yes go home

PK : ONIKAYO you not going anywhere

I went to sit on the couch, he followed me.

Him: Baby

Me: PK please

Him: Let me explain

Me: Explain what?

Him: I don't love her, we just helping each other

Me: It's the second time PK

Him: Baby

Me: I don't want this relationship anymore, I don't want to date anymore! Him :
You don't mean that

Me: I mean it!

Him: Onika I'm a guy , I won't lie ndiye ndibawele...

Me: That's why I'm letting you go, Akhona is waiting for you

Him: Onika ndithanda wena, fuck her!

Me: You broke my heart Phakamani

Him: I know baby and I want to make things right.

Me: It's already too late. I don't want you anymore

Him: Please don't say that

He took me home around four, the lights were still off.

Him: Onika I'm sorry

Me: I'm done Phakamani

Him: Please baby don't do this

Me: Bye Phakamani

I opened the door and got out, I walked straight not looking back.

The door was not locked, my brother left it unlocked so I went in and tiptoed upstairs.

To be continued...

Insert 33

I was crying the whole night, how could he do this to me? I thought he loved me, I thought he would never do it again. I guess I was wrong, I cried myself to sleep.

Someone knocked on my door early the following morning, I was not in the mood for anything, I just wanted to be alone.

The person knocked again, I pretended as if I was still sleeping.

I heard the door swing open, then footsteps walked closer to my bed.

"ONIKA!" said my brother's voice as he was uncovering me.

Me: Yhuuu Haibo Bhuti

Him: Was checking if you came back

Me: Why wouldn't I?

Him: Manje????

Me: With due your respect, can I please go back to sleep?

I covered myself, he uncovered me

Him: What happened?

Me: Nothing, now please go!

Him: I'm not going anywhere!

"Mama!!!!!!!!!" I yelled

Him: Mxxxm, uzophinda ufune uncedo lwam

Me: I won't!

Him: Words marked

He said as he was exiting my room, slamming the door behind.

I covered myself and tried to sleep again but I couldn't, I was thinking of what happened last night.

I started crying again, I really loved him, I gave him my trust, my love, he was my everything.

Mom walked in few hours later, she opened the door widely, opened the curtain and window and I was like really???

" Awunantloni, zi past 12 ngoku! Sies marn! " she said as she was pulling my blankets then she walked out the door.

My Mom can be boring sometimes sies!

I woke up and slowly walked to the bathroom, my eyes were swollen from the crying, my face looked pale. It was like I was looking at a total stranger as I was

looking myself through the bathroom mirror. I finished brushing my teeth then I washed my face and went back to my room.

I made the bed then tied up my room, I took my phone, I had plenty missed calls from PK and messages. I didn't respond, I just deleted the messages without reading them.

I closed the door and got under my blankets ndazigquma.

"Onika " said Bulelwa's voice disturbing me from my thoughts,I didn't hear her walk in.

I pretended to be sleeping, I was not in the mood for her, I was not in the mood for anyone.

She realized that I was not responding, she stood up and walked out.

Mom walked in right after her, she uncovered the blankets.

Her: Onika

Me: Ma

Her: Are you Okay?

Me: Headache

Her: I think I do have pain killers in my purse

She stood up and left, I really had an headache from the crying and over thinking.

She came back with a glass of water and pain pills, she gave me the water and pills to drink, after taking them, she told me to go back to sleep.

Bulelwa came back again, I was not in the mood kanjani.

Her: What's eating you up?

Me: Headache

Him: What did my brother do?

Me: Nothing

Her: You lying Onika, please tell me the truth.

Me: We broke up

Her eyes opened widely as a expression of shock.

Me: Yes

Her: What happened?

Me: He is dating someone else

Her: Dating someone else? How come I don't know about it?

I shrugged my shoulders

Her: This is not making sense, You caught him with a woman last night?

I nodded

Her: Eish... I'm sorry

Tears started to form

Me: I thought he loved me

Her: I'm sorry bra

She pulled me closer rubbing my back

Me: I loved him bulelwa

Her: Shiiii , it's okay

Two days later...

Bulelwa had gone back to her house, the house felt so lonely and quiet without Lubabalo, I was missing him already.

PK was calling everyday irritating me, to be honest I still loved him, my heart was still beating for him but I couldn't forget about what I saw that night.

Bulelwa invited me to her house that day, I didn't say no because I was bored at home with nothing to do.

I showered and applied lotion on my body, wore my jeans, simple T-shirt and sneakers. I took my phone and said my goodbyes to the parents.

I took a taxi to her house, ndafika ehleli yendwa noLubabalo.

Me: Molweni

Her: Hey you

Me: Unjani?

Her: I'm good you?

Me: Ndiphilile

I said as I was talking Lubabalo

Me: He looks so innocent and sweet ingathi akakhali ebusuku

Her: Suyithetha lonto...anyways how are you holding up?

Me: Okay

Her: I'm talking about lanto kaBhuti

Me: We broke up

Her: Just like that?

Me: Yes

Her: But he still wants you

Me: I don't care and please let's talk about something else

Her: That guy loves you ONIKA.... It's hard to find guys like that

Me: I'm leaving

Her: Okay, you don't have to, it's fine let's talk about something else.

We chatted about general stuff then her mother arrived.

Her: Ladies

We greeted back

Me: I was on my way out

Her: Hlala phantsi, you not gonna leave since kufika mna

Me: Nyani I was leaving, kulate noba late

Her: Okay no problem but can I have a word with you before you go?

Me: Okay

I looked at Bulelwa, she shrugged her shoulder while fixing Lubabalo's socks.

I followed her mother to the bedroom, where we sat on top of the bed.

She cleared her throat

Her: What's going on between you and Phakamani?

Me: Njani Mama?

Her: Nohlukene nyani?

I felt awkward

Me: Ewe

Her: Phakamani told me everything, I'm sorry... I know you hurt but I know my son loves you

Hee Haike ngoku ungenaphi yena kulonto?

I just looked down because this topic felt uncomfortable.

Her: He is really sorry, I know my son very well...I never saw him crazy about someone like this..

Akasaxoki bethunani, I wonder unyanzelwa yintoni.

Her : Please give him another chance, you are different, awufani nalamantombi angazithandiyo.

I was looking down all the time, playing with my fingers.

Her: Ndicela undijonge

I lifted up my head and looked at her

Her: Please Onika

Me: I can't forget

Her : I know but give it a try again then if he mess it up again then you can leave him for good

I shook my head

Her : Please Onikayo, He is sorry

Me: It's late, I have to go home

Her : Please think about it!

I nodded just to free myself otherwise bendingavumi yonke lonto .

I'm sorry guys my husband just arrived, I thought he was gonna take a little longer.

I won't edit , so I'm sorry about the errors.

Insert 34

I went to take a taxi later on, as I was sitting at the taxi her words played on my head over and over like a tape record on repeat.

I arrived home, Mom and Dad were watching a gospel show.

Me: Molweni, I'm back

Mom: I didn't cook, we gonna buy takeaway's

Me: I'm not hungry?

Her: What's up with you? You not your self lately

Me: Niks, I'm just not feeling well

She sat up straight and broke from dad's embrace

Her : What's wrong?

Me: I just don't have appetite and I don't know why!

Dad: Give her STAMETA

Me: Yhuuu!

Mama: Ewe!

My stomach immediately felt grumpy, my face grinned.

Me: I'm not gonna drink that, it taste.. It taste... Eeuw!!!

I ran up stairs while my parents started to laugh.

I bumped into Luvano

Him: Watch out

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Utheni nawe!

Me: I said sorry bo

He grabbed my arm as I was walking away.

Him: When last did you talk to PK?

I shrugged my shoulder

Him: Is everything Okay between you two?

Me: We broke up, and please drop the act you know we broke up.

Him: Just like that???

Me: What's wrong with you people???? Arg!!!!

I yanked myself and walked to my room.

I angrily removed my sneakers

"Are you really gonna give up on him??? Just like that???? "

Said Luvano's voice, I closed my eyes for a second and opened them again.

Me: I want to be alone

I said without looking at him

Him: Do you love him?

Me: Doesn't matter

Him: It does

He said as he was walking closer, he stood in front of me.

Him: Look at me

Me: Ndicela undiyeke please

Him: I can't mntase...

I kept quiet

I stood up and undressed and I was left with my underwear .

Him: I met him yesterday

I opened the wardrobe's door searching for my pyjama.

Him: You not curious?

Me: Why should I?

I said while I closed the wardrobe Holding my pyjamas on with my other hand.

Him: Well... We were talking about you. PK really loves you, I know when a guy really loves a women...I know by experience

Me: If he really loves me as he "Claims " then why is he cheating?

Him: Do you love God?

Me: Obvious

Him: Then why do you sin?

Me: Ayidibani kengoku

Him: EXACTLY!!! When you sin it doesn't mean you don't love God, so does it applies to cheating.

Me: Ayingeni, I want a guy who will be faithful to me and and only love me alone, I don't want to share

Him: Haike mntasekhaya, apply to be a nun because you will never find a guy like Jesus here on earth so better date him in spirit.

Me: I will find him

Him: Give me a list of loyal guys who never cheated.

I moved my head left and right .

He sat on top of my bed

Him: Please give him a last chance mntase

Me: I can't

Him: Why?

I moved my head backwards

Me: You hated PK, You didn't want me to date him. You guys just had a fight, he was hating you now now, didn't want anything to do with you... What QHUPS????

Him: That's all in the past ...I trust him and I have an assurance that he loves you.

Me: Hayi suka

Him: I know that deep down you still love him.

I didn't reply because what is he just said was true

Him: I want the best for you mntase, I know he has hurt you but it was not intentional.

He held my hands and looked me in the eyes

Him: Please give the poor guy a chance

Me: It's for me to decide

Him: Okay

He said lifting his hands as a sign of surrender.

I watched him as he walked out my room slamming the door.

Few days later...

It was new years eve, I was not in the mood for anything . Simphiwe called

Me: Hey

Him: What are you doing tonight?

Me: Nothing

Him: Nothing???? You gotta be kidding, are you not coming to the lights?

Me: Lights bezitheni?

Him: Boardwalk

Me: What's happening?????

Him: You telling me you never been there on New Years Eve?

Me: No

He giggled

Him: I'm gonna take you out tonight

Me: What time?

Him: I will come fetch you around 11

Me: 11 ? Like in an hour's time?

Him: 11 pm

Me: Yhuuuuu my parents would never approve, I don't even want to get your hopes high

Him: Try

Me: My parents are pastors remember?

Him: Arg!!!! That sucks big time!

Me: Yeah, I'm sorry dude

Him: No problem

We hang up

I went downstairs where my brother was busy watching soccer.

Me: Hello

He greeted back without looking at me. Me: Yhuuu soze ndihoywe yile soccer

He didn't respond, he was too focused on what he was watching.

Me: Uyabhora !!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

I went to sit on the veranda outside, watching everyone who was passing by.

" The weather is nice, isn't? " I turned around and looked, it was dad.

I nodded, he sat beside me

Him: How are you my angel?

Me: I'm okay

Him: I'm gonna miss you when you gone.

Me: Really???

Him: Yes

He pulled me closer to him and I rested my head on his shoulder.

Me: East London is not far

Him: Please do me a favour

Me: I'm listening Dad

Him: Ndicela uziphathe Marhadebe... Ndicela mntanam ufunde ungaleqi yonke into. Everything has its own time.

Me: I will take care of myself, I promise

Him: Pinky promise?

He reached out his pinky , I giggled and reached out mine and we crossed our pinkies.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Later that day...

It was around 10 pm, I was watching a movie on my laptop.

My brother walked in my room

Him: Let's go

Me: Where too?

Him: You will see, just dress up

I wore my my black jean with my black leather jacket and white sneakers. I fixed my hair and didn't even wore accessories. Mom and Dad were sleeping, we went to the car.

We arrived at the beach, there were a lot of people there, ndaveske ndagqwetheka.

He held my hand as we walked among the people.

I was surprised to see PK there

Luu: Calm down

Me: Like seriously????

Him: Relax

I greeted they greeted back.

Guy1: Uyababa Usisi wakho mos

Luu: Kancane

I texted Simphiwe and told him, I was there.

Me: Bhuti can I go with my friend?

Him : Friend yaphi leyo?

Me: Simphiwe

Him : Mpa mpa mpa!!!! Yinto yaphi leyo????

Usile kodwa bhuti wam, ndathi ndijonge leyo wandishiya apho noPK. They all left.

Ndantanya ntanyaza , feeling awkward, it was just me and him.

Him: Onika

I looked at him

Him: I'm sorry

I didn't want to look at him because I was gonna fall for his charm.

Him: I know I have wronged you and I'm sorry....

He used his index finger to lift up my head.

Him: I love you

The way I loved him, my stomach immediately experienced butterflies, my body felt weak.

I couldn't utter a single word, it was like I was under a spell or something.

He held my hands, I couldn't see clearly.

Him: Yes I'm not perfect but I love you and with all of my heart.

His lips met mine, we kissed for a short while and he broke the kiss but I didn't want him to stop.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too!

We kissed again, I didn't care about the people that were watching. I was missing his lips and touch.

We stopped then we walked around hand to hand, chatting and laughing. There were so much noise too many people.

As we were walking the lights started, ndothuka qala he laughed and told me to look up.

Everybody was screaming, hugging each other, shouting, HAPPY NEW YEAR!!!!!!!

The lights were so beautiful, I was gazing at the sky, didn't utter a single word, I was amazed. Someone grabbed me and squeezed me tight kissing me all over, it was my brother.

We drove to PK's apartment later on, they started drinking again with the music on loud, dancing iyilonto.

Some girls walked in and joined them.

PK : Awuzosela wena

Me: Bendithe ndizosela mna?

Him: Nam sendikuxelela

He held me by the hand, didn't want to let go.

I got bored because I was the only one that was sober and told him that he must tell his friends to go, I want to sleep.

Him: It's still early

Me: PK you working tomorrow

Him: I'm a manager

Me: Floor manager not Store manager

Him: Ukusalayo ndiyi nqokro nqokro

He was drunk

Me: You gonna lose your Job PK, and by the way I'm not asking you, I'm telling you ndifuna ulala mna.

He did as I told him but he was kinda angry.

His friends left kwasheka uLuvano.

He slept on the sofa then we went to the bedroom, wafika watipa.

The following morning....

I woke PK up, phof he only slept Two hours.

Me: Nqokro nqokro vuka.....

Him : Mmmm?????

Me: It's 8 am!

Akaxhuma, I was lying it was 7am.

He quickly took a bath while I iron his shirt and pants.

Luvano : Heee sekutheni ndi outer nawe Onika????

Me: Njani

Him: Jonga sundiqhela

I giggled

Me: Bhabhalaza

Him: Mxxm...

Me: We gotta be going, before they notice I'm gone

Him: I told them that I was taking you out and we might not come back.

Me: So buyazi uzo outer nam

Him: I was not gonna spend the night here!

He stood up, very pissed

Me: Hahaa

To be continued....

Insert 34

I tied up the room while PK was busy washing. He came back in a hurry wrapping a towel.

Me: It's only 7:10 , relax.

Him: Mxxm

He grabbed my phone that was on top of the bed.

Him: Do you know I didn't take a proper bath?

Me: It's obvious

Him: Uyadika shame

I giggled

Him: Yahleka msunu

Me: It's a free country msunu!

He lifted one eyebrow

Him: I didn't ask for competition

Me: Tshini!!! Andizoba ngumsunu ndedwa!

He forcedly grabbed me and pulled me closer to him.

Him: Uyabona wena

He said as he was joining his lips to mine.

We kissed then he broke the kiss

Him: Thank you

Me: For what?

Him: For giving me another chance

I didn't respond

Him: I love you Onika and I mean it.

Me: I love you too, now hurry up, you will be late.

Him: It's still early, I should be there at half 8.

Me: Okay

He kissed me one more time then he walked to the dressing table.

I walked out as he started to lotion his body, it felt uncomfortable.

Luvano went back to sleep, I just looked around the house, it was messy.

" Baby where is my uniform? " I went back to the bedroom, he was only wearing his underwear.

Him: Thank you

He said as I was handing him the clothes. He looked so sexy, as if it's the first time seeing his body.

I watched him as he was dressing up

Him: Yintoni wandijonga kangaka?

Me: Umhle maarn wena

Him: Intozakho kanene

He said as he was wearing his jersey, he applied his cologne then he searched for his phone.

He found it and he started paging it as if he was searching for something.

Him: Mxxm andiyazi lento ifunwa kulomntana kum

Me: Ngubani lowo?

Him: Yila wai wawufike ilapha , I told her to back off akafuni umamela.

I didn't reply because I didn't know what to say.

Him: Baby are you going to the beach? Me: No

Him: Why?

Me: Ndiyothini??? I'm not going

Him: Okay but ndiphuma u2 today.

Me: Okay

He came closer to me and planted a kiss on my lips

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He left I called my brother to come sleep at the bedroom.

My phone rang it was Bulie

Me: Hello

Her: Happy New Year!!!!!!

Me: Happy!!!!!!

Her: I'm gonna visit today

Me: Okay

Her: My mother is going to the beach so, I'm gonna be bored her at home

Me: It's fine I'm gonna come to you

Her: Okay, Anyway when last did you see your brother because his phone is on voicemail

Me: He is sleeping

Her: Okay better, will see you later then

Me: Sure

I started cleaning the place, i opened both doors, the kitchen door and lounge door.

I cleaned kwabetha umoya, then I started making breakfast for me and my brother.

My phone rang, it was Mom.

Me: Mama

Her: Nibuya nini?

Me: Bhuti usalele, ndilinde yena.

Her: Wake him up and hand him the phone.

I did as I was told, my brother gave me back my phone after talking to Mom.

Me: What did she say?

Him: Mxxm

Then he turned and looked the opposite way.

I went back to the kitchen , Someone knocked at the door, I turned around.

It was PK's girlfriend.

Me: Can I help

Her : No wonder he was not returning my calls, because you here.

He said with a grinned face

I ignored her and turned around, I felt a tap on shoulder.

I turned around, she was standing in front of my face.

Her: Look here bitch, PK is my man and nobody is gonna take him away from me not even you understand!!!!

I was scared but I didn't give her the expression.

Me : Okay

Her: I don't want to ever see you here again or next to my man.

Me: Will see about that

Her: I'm serious, that is my man!!!! My damn man!!!! Stay away from him

Me: If I don't?

Her: You will curse the day you were born.

Me: I have already curse the day I was born...it won't be new!

Her : I see, you got the nerve

She slapped me, ndothukela ngaphakathi.

Her: I'm warning you!!!!

Me: You sick!

She gave me another hot slap, I got really angry then ndaphindisa.

We started fighting, I was on top of her beating her non stop.

She was screaming, I was angry didn't let go. I don't I don't know when did Luvano wake up, he just grabbed me and removed me on top of that girl.

Me: Bhuti ndiyekeseeeeeee !!!

She stated performing, yelling, swearing.

I was shivering, I wanted to grab her.

Bhuti : Voetsek hamba apha!

Her: PK uthanda mna not wena!

Bhuti let go of me then she started running.

Bhuti : Leave her!

I picked up her stilettos and clutch bag trow it out the door.

She stood at the middle of the street swearing like a drunk bitch.

Bhuti : Ignore her, she is a psycho!

She started stoning the windows, yhuu waphuma ubhuti ngomsindo, I followed, she ran but unfortunately my brother was faster then her, she tripped and fell wangena kuye ubhuti .

Later on...

We arrived home, Mom and Dad were not home, I just went to my room and took a nap.

My brother left saying he is going to the beach.

I was left alone, PK called later on.

Him: What happened here?

Me: Your girlfriend

Him: Girlfriend????

Me: She stoned the windows!

Him: She is not my girlfriend, you are!!!

Me: Whatever she is!

Him: Yaqhela lamntana.... Ndizombonisa kanjani akandazi!

We chatted then we hung up.

I woke up and took a bath wore a simple dress and sandals it was not hot by the way it was cloudy.

I text my mother and told her. I'm going to visit Bulie.

She didn't have a problem, I locked the house and took a taxi to her house, Luu junior was sleeping.

Me: Bullet

Her: Dutyuuuu

We giggled

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm coping wethu, wena?

Me: I'm fabulous

Her: Is there something that I should know?

I shook my head

Her: Spit it out!!! I'm getting impatient!

Me: We back together

Her eyes opened widely

Her: Ow my God!!!!!! For real??

I nodded with a blushing face

Her: Wow!!!!!! Andisavuyi!

I told her what happened earlier

Her: Umtrape kancinci! I wish I was there rhaaa bloody swine!

Me: Tshini, I was scared though I don't know how I did it!

Her: Good friend, soze aphinde akuqhele!!!!!!

Me: Soze!!!!!!

We chatted and chill the whole day.

I asked Mom to come fetch me because it was late. She didn't hesitate , she came to fetch me.

I was not hungry, so I just went to sleep, I was too tired.

Three weeks later...

It was late January, my registration was sorted and my accommodation as well. I was gonna share a room with some girl I don't know, because it was cheaper that way. It was a four room apartment with two bedroom , small kitchen, lounge and bathroom.

There was no TV though and my parents said it's better that way, boring.

The apartment was nice though but I didn't like the fact that I was gonna share the place with a total stranger.

I was still in P. E because the school was starting February.

I was excited about leaving but sad about going.

Phakamani didn't want me to go, he wanted me to study at P. E but I didn't want to.

I was leaving the following week and that made him more sad.

My parents as well were also sad, Bulie had already left to Cape Town and Lubabalo was staying with us. I was babysitting during the day while Mom and Dad was at work but Gloria was helping me as well.

Few days later...

It was a Friday afternoon, Phakamani was off that day and I had promised to spend the whole day with him since I was leaving Monday.

I told my parents that I was going out with friends, they didn't ask too many questions they just gave me money, Gloria was baby sitting that day.

I had my Brazilian weave again, PK wanted me to take it off because of jealousy.

So I just wore my my skinny jean and a simple top with my pumps. I didn't tie my hair I liked it that way. So when I was done with everything , he came to pick me up.

Him: I'm gonna miss you kodwa

Me: I'm gonna miss you too

We shared a kiss then we drove, He bought a pizza and snacks , we drove home.

We sat on the sofa in each others embrace.

Him: Uzobuya nini?

Me: June

Him: I mean like baby are you for real?

Me: Ewe

Him: I'm gonna visit you on my off weekends.

Me: Ncoo I would appreciate that

Him: Mmmmm... Nyani????

Me: Maxoki xoki!

He giggled , he kissed me then broke the kiss.

Him: Ungaseli phana!

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: I mean it baby

Me: Okay

Him: Andizotyelwa?

Me: haha, hell no!

Him: Ndingalwa ndibebomvu ngomntu wam!

Me: Nawe ke!

Him: No problem

We ate and watched a movie, after that movie, I stood up and went to the kitchen. I felt hands wrapping around my waist and warm breath on neck, I immediately experienced goosebumps. His touch is just unique, magical, I just can't explain the feeling. He kissed my neck, I turned around.

Him: You look sexy xawuse kitchen.

I giggled and we kissed, he broke the kiss.

Me: What?

Him: I'm getting horny

Me: So?

He gave me a dead stare

Me: Come

Him: Andifuni, uzophinda uthi budlala apha and that you not ready.

I giggled

Me: I won't

I pulled him closer, we kissed and kissed. He squeezed my breast and pushed me against the wall.

We walked to the bedroom, he undressed me and got on top of me.

He gently massaged my nipples, he went down then started tickling with his tongue. That felt so good, moans of pleasure escaped my mouth, he then got between my legs as we were kissing, I felt his manhood moving between my thighs, my heart started to beat fast.

Him: Relax

I nodded

When he was about to enter, I stopped him.

Me: Condom

Him: Sorry

He searched for a condom , I was lying there like a roasted chicken waiting for him, that feels awkward kodwa.

He man wood was standing pointing at me, I got scared ingathi I'm about to get raped.

I swallowed very hard as he got on top of me.

Him: Are you okay?

I nodded because I wanted this.

He kissed me again and rubbed his manhood around my vagina, I started to moan out of pleasure, I felt it getting in, i jumped.

Him: I'm sorry

He inserted again, I screamed

Him: Nyamezela

He gently inserted, I was holding the sheets, he was kissing me.

Me: Ndiyakrazuka Phakamani!

Him: Xolo

I pulled back

Me: There will be a hole in my vagina and kuzongena umoya phana

Him: Asoze!

Me: What if kunga phinde kuvaleke pha?

Him: You talking too much

He kissed me and inserted again, I moaned out loud, he finally went in. He moved back and forth then he moved faster and faster groaning, squeezing me tight then he stopped.

He was breathing heavily, he lied next to me.

Him: I love you...

I didn't reply

He placed my head on top of his chest.

We chatted while he was playing with my hair.

Me: Ibuhlungu lento

Him: You will get used to it

Me: As if I'm gonna do it again

Him: Are you sure?

I nodded, he giggled and got on top of me and started kissing me , he entered without warning.

I moaned out loud, he moved back and forth, I moaned out of pleasure. He lifted one of my legs, I was feeling so much pleasure. The feeling was unpredictable, I didn't want him to stop.

He was swinging my legs moving them left to right.

I was not complaining though, he started moving fast and faster then he finally released.

We were both tired, breathing heavily.

Him: That was good!

I stood up

Him: Where are you going?

Me: Going home!

Him: Bhanxekile!

Me: It's getting late

Him: I know but you sleeping over tonight

Me: My Mom and Dad will freak out

Him: Hahaha ...I'm kidding, I'm gonna take you home.

Him: Are you not gonna take a bath?

Me: I will takes one when I get home.

Him: Okay

He stood up and handed me a towel, I wiped my vagina then search for my clothes. I dressed up then he took me home.

We chatted a long time in the car didn't want to me to go, he finally let me go, we shared a kiss then i got I left.

I looked so suspicious, ingathi ndiyabonwa ndivelo kwenzantoni.

My vagina was on fire ndibawela nophekuzela.

I called bulie and told her everything, she was laughing as I was telling her.

They following morning, I noticed some blood stain on my sheet because I slept naked. I went to take a shower, thinking it was my period but it was not, because they stopped the following day.

To be continued...

Insert 35

After taking a shower , I went back to the bedroom. I slowly applied lotion on my body looking myself through the mirror.

After that I wore new Pyjamas then changed the sheet and washed that one.

PK called when I was busy making myself cereal.

Me: Hello

Him: Sthandwa sam, How are you?

Me: I'm okay and you?

Him: I'm missing you baby Yhoo

Me: I Miss you too

Him: Can I come see you tonight?

Me: Andifuni namhlanje

He giggled

Him: Awufuni ntoni?

Mom walked down the stairs holding Lubabalo.

Me: Phanxinxi...

Mom smiled looking at him

Me: Kham'sapha

She handed me the baby , He was calmly sucking his fit. He looked so cute and adorable.

I took my bowl and went to sit at the couch.

I cuddled with him while I ate my cereal, Dad walked in and took him from me.

Him: Come to grandpa

Mom: I still can't believe we grandparents

Dad: Kuyakhulwa Kodwa!

I stood up and went to the kitchen and washed my bowl.

I then went to my room, I started packing my stuff, I went to Luvano's room didn't even knock.

Him: Nkqonkqoza uzovulelwa!

Me: What's the difference? I'm saving your energy

Him: Mxxm, what do you want?

Me: I'm packing

Him: So?

Him: I want something that I will remind me you

Him: Take a photo of me now

Me: I want that grey hoot

Him: Nxilile

Me: Haibo Bhuti

Him: Yhuu andidikwe nguOnika!

Me: I'm waiting

He searched for it and handed it over to me

Him: Ungabheji ngayo lehoot, ayivelanga

Me: Thanks I won't

Him: Sure

Me: I'm gonna miss you

Him: Yhoo Tom, you have no Idea

I giggled

Me: If I'm Tom then you Jerry

He giggled

Him: Cool by me Tom

Me: I Love you kodwa Jerry

Him: Oh, But you were hating me now now

I giggled

Me: You know kaloku, there are times like that Jerry

Him: Come here

I walked closer to him, he gave me a hug. Squeezing me tight

Me: I'm so gonna miss this

Him: Me too

Later on...

I was coming from church and Dad was the one that came to fetch me.

Him: How was the service?

Me: The service was powerful as always

Him: Good, good...I got something for you

Me: What is it?

Him: Look at the back seat

I turned around , it was a small Cell c plastic bag

Him: Open it

I opened it out of curiosity

Me: Is this for me?

Him: Yes

Me: It's a iPhone Tata!!!!!!

Him: You passed your matrix with flying colours. I'm proud of you Onikayo!

Tears formed, I couldn't utter a single word.

Him: I know I have been a bad father to you, a monster , a I was arrogant, selfish, all I care about was my reputation. I'm sorry mntanam for everything.

A lump form on throat and tears fell uncontrollable.

Him: I thank you for giving me a second chance, I thank you for trusting me again!

He parked the car outside the gate , he then released a sigh.

Me: I Love you

Him: Let me tell you a story

Me: I'm listening

I said as I was wiping my tears

Him: Many years back.... I grow up in a poor family. My mother was a house wife with 5 children, I was the eldest.

Me: Were are your siblings?

He paused and took a deep breath

Him: They all died

Me: What happened?

Him: My father was a cruel person, he was pure evil, he was a Devil. I hate the fact that I turned out like him.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: He used to abuse my mother and us physically and emotionally. He was a drunkard, He used to beat my mother everyday. I hated the fact that he abused my mom knowing that she had no one, she had no family, he was her only family. He would sexually abuse my sister when I was not around. I had three sisters and a brother, my other sister overdosed herself with my mothers treatment. When we arrived at the hospital it was to late she was already dead, I blamed myself for that , I should have protected her but I failed her, I was 12 that time and she was 10 years old. I suspended that she was doing the same to the other two sisters, they were still young, innocent, they didn't deserve this.

I remember coming home Friday afternoon after school. I was driving my wire car walking bare foot, I was hungry because I didn't eat that morning there was no food in the house, my father was getting paid the following day.

Mom was not home, she went to fetch some fire wood.

I arrived home as usual and took the water cans because there was no water at home.

I heard funny noises at the bedroom, I tiptoed to the room. On my surprise I found my father on top of my sister, she was only 8 years old, out of anger I walked in and pushed him but he was stronger than me. He gave me a hell of a beating.

" Do you also want? " He asked as he was busy beating me.

Mom came home as he was busy beating me.

"What is happening here "

Asked my mom with a low tone

" Yazi when I walked in here I found this good for nothing boy raping her sister! "

My mother released a loud cry and placed both her hands on her head.

" Linya eyi! (This is an abomination)"

I tried to defend myself but he wouldn't let me speak, it was his word again mine.

My mother saw me as a horrible person, I was not his pride anymore, she hated me. She even wanted to chase me out of the house but inimba forbid her.

Someone knocked at the window as Dad was talking, he stopped.

He rolled the window, it was Mom

Mom: We gonna be late

Dad: I forgot...

He looked at me and placed his hand on mine

Him: Will continue when we have time vah

I nodded then got out of the car and Mom got in.

Mom: We will be back before 10 don't worry

Me: Okay

I opened the gate and walked inside the yard.

I sat on the veranda and cried, thinking how cruel people are.

I walked inside later on, Luvano was cuddling with Lubabalo.

Me: Umntu noTatakhe

He smiled

Him: He is growing, isn't?

Me: He is only two months

Him: But still

I sat next to them

Me: When are you getting married?

He giggled

Him: Why you asking?

Me: You are 25 this year

Him: So???

Me: You not getting younger

Him: I know but I haven't considered that

Me: Okay

PK called later on

Me: Hello

Him: Sthandwa sam , wenza ntoni?

Me: Watching TV wena?

Him: I'm on my way home, can I come see you?

Me: No

Him: Please, please, please

Me: Okay

Him: I will be there now now

Me: Sure

We hang up , he called again telling me he is outside.

Me: Bhuti I will be back now now

Him: Don't take to long

I went out and walk a short distance before I approached his car.

I opened the door and greeted.

Him: No kiss?

I rolled my eyes, he pulled me closer and kissed me.

Him: I'm gonna miss you baby

Me: You have no idea

Him: calls at night, calls in the morning and calls during the day.

Me: Deal!

Him: Cool and please take off that hair

Me: Your mind is losing left

Him: Zendityelwe nethi!

I giggled

Me: Soze

We chatted for a while

Him: Andizophiwa tuuu before uhambe?

I shook my head

Him: You not serious

He pulled me closer, he placed his hand under my dress while kissing me. I moaned out of pleasure, as he was kissing my neck.

" Let's go to my house " He whispered on my ear with his warm breath warming my ears.

Me: Okay

He stopped and started the car

Him: When will your parents be back?

Me: Before 10...how did you know they are not home?

Him: Don't worry

Me: Amen

I clapped once

We arrived at his house, we didn't waist time, we went straight to bedroom and undressed.

Me: Condom

Him: Really?

Me: Andifuni mntana mna

Him: We didn't use it yesterday

Me: Was a mistake

Him: Don't stress awuzomitha, will buy morning after pills then you can prevent

Me: How?

Him: Will tell you when we done

He inserted without warning, I moaned out of pain.

Him: I'm sorry

He started kissing me, squeezing my breasts, a moan escaped my mouth.

I was enjoying myself, I was feeling so much pleasure. I didn't know imandi kwelihlobo lento.

.....

I was now lying on my back breathing heavily, PK was next to me.

Him: Uyivale imilenze xawufika phana

Me: Awusandiyali

Him: I'm serious Onika

Me: I'm not gonna open them, relax

Him: Good

We cuddled, he was playing with my hair. We took pictures with his phone kissing.

Him: I love you, always remember that

Me: I love you too

Him: Don't hesitate to ask for anything when you at school

Me: Okay I won't hesitate

Him: Good

Then he got on top of me.

Later on he took me home, Mom and Dad were still out.

The following morning PK came to see me before he went to work.

Him: I miss you already

Me: Hurry up before my Dad notices I'm not home.

He handed me the pills

Him: Those are morning after pills

Me: Thank you!

He pulled me closer for a kiss

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too!

Monday morning....

My mother helped me pack the rest of my clothes and we left early that morning.

I said my goodbyes to Gloria, Luvano and Lubabalo.

Mom and Dad didn't go to work that day. They accompanied me to East London how sweet.

We arrived there , Mom helped me unpack my things. They gave me grocery money and pocket money.

Mom: Uziphathe mntanam

Me: I will

Dad: I just trust you

Me: Ncoo

They waited till my housemate arrived. She arrived later on ehamba yedwa, she greeted and introduced herself.

Her name was Vuyokazi but she was called Vuvu. She was talkative and active, full of energy.

My parents liked her, she was slender with an Afro. She looked natural with no makeup, she was beautiful.

My parents left later on and I was left with her.

I missed my family and my boyfriend.

I wonder how will life be without the supervision of my parents.

Will I cope on my own?

Far from home?

To be continued...

Insert 36

PK called me early the following morning.

Me: Hello

I answered with a sleepy voice

Him: Still sleeping?

Me: I just woke

Him: I'm sorry, I was just checking on you before I go to work.

Me: What time is it?

Him: Past 7

Me: Oh okay

I said as I was yawning

Him: I miss you babe, the fact that you far, far, far away make me crazy.

Me: I miss you too baby yhoo, I don't think I will get use to this

Him: You will , trust me!

Me: Okay if you say so Mr Poni!

Him: I don't have enough time, I will call you later vah

Me: Okay, No problem

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Bye

Him: Bye

We hung up then, I went back to sleep.

Woke up around 10 am, I opened the window, made the bed then went to the bathroom.

I brushed my teeth then washed my face. When I was done I walked to the kitchen, made myself cereal then I went to sit at the lounge. It was so quiet and boring, No Tv, No Music, that sucks big time.

I finished my cereal , dragged my feet to the kitchen, washed my bowl.

I went to knock at Vuvu's room because I was bored, but there was no answer. I assumed that she went somewhere.

I took my phone and called Buli, it rang several times before she answered.

Her: Chomi yam

Me: Bullet

Her: Dutyuuuu

We giggled

Me: I miss you kanjani

Her: Suyithetha lonto

Me: How is Cape Town?

Her : Yhoo Chomi, Cape Town is Damn fun!!!

Me: Really?

Her: Mmmmm.... The dudes there ! they are super hot!!!

Me: I'm getting jealous

Her: for what? Ain't there Hot Dudes?

Me: I have a boyfriend Duh, I don't want another one! I'm just jealous for my brother

Her: Like seriously?? I'm pretty sure he is fucking another bitch as we speak.

Me: He is not

Her: How do you know???? You in E.L and He is in P. E!

Me: I know my brother

Her: I know my boyfriend, Uyazithanda impundu. I'm not saying I'm gonna break up with him.

Me: You gonna have another baby

Her: Who? Me? Never! I have learned my lesson the hard way. I'm playing safe Doll!

Me: If you say so

Her: Anyway, are you playing safe nobhutiza?

Me: Meaning?

Her: Are you using protection?

Me: Yes... No.... I don't know

Her: Hayi njani???

Me: He doesn't want to use it

Her: Are you preventing????

Me: Er.. No

Her: You playing with fire wena! Having a baby is not a child's play, Akumandanga!

Me: He said I'm not gonna get pregnant Him: Is He God or Doctor Poni?

Me: He gave me a pill to drink!

She giggled

Her: Hewethu! Wake up, khayeke abamuncu. Ubhuti akachami manzi!

Me: Am I pregnant?

Her: You might be or you might be not!

Me: Sundoyikisa apha!

Her: You better pray hard Cc because your father is going to skin you alive.

Me: Oh Bawo

Her: If you lucky, you should go for family planning. Ncuntse inaliti aphe mpudwini and use protection.

Me: This is stressing

Her: Next week go to the pharmacy and buy a pregnancy test, the expensive one, I trust the cheap ones then if you lucky, Uncuntse naliti phana lena ye two months, it's not expensive chomi only R5 . Then you know every two months you go there.

Me: Thank you my friend.

Her: You welcome

We chatted until Vuyokazi arrived then I hung up.

Her : Hey roomy

Me: Hi

Her : How are you today?

Me: I'm cool and you?

Her: I'm fantastic!

Me: Where you coming from?

Her: Was visiting a friend

Me: So early?

Her: Is there a problem?

Me: No, I'm just shocked

Her: Good! Anyways sokhupha malini for grocery every month?

Me: I don't know

Her: What about R1000

Me: So R500 each person?

Her : Yes, is it too much?

Me: Not too me

Her : Deal?

Me : Deal!

Her : Perfect!

Me: My parents bought some few stuff

Her : Ndibonile

Me: So sizokongeza qha this month

Her: Okay

She stood up and went to her room, I also went to mine and watched a movie.

Luvana called as I was busy watching a Movie, we chatted for something like an hour then we hung up. I was missing my brother Kodwa!

A month later...

I was getting used to the place, I was also coping at school, although there was a lot of work and reading. I hadn't made friends that's time Vuvu was my only

friend. Luckily I was not pregnant and I prevented immediately and followed Bulie's advice.

I came back home from school this Friday afternoon, I was tired and hungry. I opened the door as usual, there was a older guy sitting on the sofa busy on his phone, he was even older than PK.

He fixed his eyes on me immediately as I walked in.

Me: Hello

Guy : Hello, how are you?

Me: I'm good!

Vuvu walked in, well dressed

Her: Yoyo, I won't be coming home tonight

Me: Okay

Guy: Aren't you not gonna introduce me to your beautiful friend?

Vuvu: I'm sorry, Yoyo this my boyfriend Zolani.

Me: Okay

Her: Baby this is my friend Onikayo but I call her Yoyo

Him: Nice to meet you Onika!

Me: Same here

Vuvu: See you tomorrow

Me: Okay

I watched them as they walked out hand to hand.

I clapped once as they closed the door, I couldn't believe my eyes. I locked the door and went to my bedroom.

As I was busy studying, my phone vibrated.

It was PK, I answered immediately

Me: Baby

Him: I'm here in East London.... Can you direct me to your apartment?

Me: What?????

Him: Is there something wrong?

Me: You lying?

Him: Just direct me and see

I directed him, he called after a short while telling me he was by the robots, I believe him. I went out the house and walked to the road, I recognized his car from a distance.

I was so happy , I couldn't stop smiling. I stopped the car as he was about to pass me.

He stopped and I got inside the car

Him: Believe me now?

Me: I believe you

We arrived at the apartment, he pulled me closer and kissed me.

Him: I missed you yhoo

Me: I missed you too

Him: Where is she?

Me: Gone with her boyfriend

Him: Mmmm

He started kissing my neck

Him: When will she be back?

He whispered on my ear

Me: Tomorrow

Him: Good, so that means it's just gonna be me and you?

Me: Ewe

He kissed my lips while squeezing my breast.

He unzipped my dress and took it off, I was left with my underwear.

Him : Damn...

He said as he was biting his lower lip.

I helped him undress then we lay on top of couch.

He gently inserted, I moaned out of pain

Him: Shh

He went in again, it felt so good, I moaned out of pleasure.

He moved back and forth, I was feeling so much pleasure, I didn't want him to stop, he turned me around.

He banged hard, holding on my waist, Enjoyed it more when he was playing rough.

He went faster and faster, groaning, calling me all sort of sweet name.

Later on....

We just finished bathing, I was wrapping a towel and he was also wrapping a towel.

Him: I'm hungry, didn't you cook?

Me: No, there is bread and pork sausages

Him: I don't mind

I went to the kitchen and made food for the both of us while he was picking our cloths.

Him: Baby

Me: Mmmm?

Him: How is Varsity life?

Me: Normal wethu

I felt his hands around my waist

Him: Please don't disappoint us

Me: Meaning?

Him: If you need anything, just call me and I will do it for you!

Me: My parents are still alive

Him : There will come guys with beautiful cars, with money to spend, they will promise you heaven and earth. Please don't fall for that temptation, it's not safe baby out there. They will just destroy you, sleep with you and leave you heart broken, pregnant, sick, yonke lonto.

I turned around

Me: You one of them ne? You driving a fancy car, have money to spend, sleeping with me without a condom.

Him: Not me, I love you with all my heart. You are my number one, I will never destroy your life, even if you might fall pregnant, I will support you 100% and take responsibility.

Me: I don't want a baby mna

Him: What if you already pregnant?

Me: I'm not

He giggled

Him: But mna, I want a baby

Me: Not kum

Him: Kuwe

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

Him: Joking

I served him when I was done then we ate, after eating we watched a movie.
We didn't finish the movie because of our dirty minds.

He was still on top of me, his penis was still inside. We were both breathing heavily, our bodies were sticky from all the sweating.

My phone vibrated, stretched my arm as I was reaching for my phone.

It was a strange number

Me: Hello

Caller: Hey baby Uryt?

It was a male voice and it was unfamiliar.

Me: Ndithetha nabani?

Him: Can I come see you? I know you alone tonight.

Ndalaqaza PK was looking at me

Me: Hayi Bhuti andikwazi and this is a wrong number.

I hung up

PK : Ngubani lowo?

Me: Andimazi

Him: Njani?

Wahluka phezukwam

Me: It's probably a wrong number

Him: Sapha lephone yakho

I gave him with a free heart, he dialed that number again.

Him: Voetsek andingoBaby wakho mna!..hello.... Hello...hello

Me: Uthini??

Him: Uyamazi lomntu wena, uyithathaphi lomntu number yakho and why is he calling you baby?

Me: Heee, andimazi lomntu mna and I don't know where he got my number!

Him: Onika are you dating older men?

Me: What? No!

Him: Then what is going on????

Heee bantu!!!!!!! Yinto endizoyithini lena?

To be continued...

Insert 37

" Onika look at me" He said with a angry voice.

Me: Phakamani I don't know this person, I swear!

I said as I was crossing my fingers

Him: Then where did he get your number???

Me: I don't know

Him: You don't know????

Me: I don't know I swear

Him: One thing I hate kukwenziwa isibhanxa!

Me: Okay, go through my phone, page it and see if you will find messages or go to my calls histories and find out!

Him: You know what, let's leave it!

He stood up

Me: Where are you going?

Him: Need some fresh air

Me: Like seriously????

He didn't reply

Me: You being unfair now PK! Do you think I'm dating someone else???

Him: Then explain that

Me: I told you, I don't know the person

He dressed up

Me: So you gonna go and leave me here alone? What if he comes here and rape me???

Him : I will be back

Me: I'm coming with you

Him: Bhanxekile

Me: Awuzohamba kenawe

I went to stand in front of the door

Him: And then?

Me: You not gonna leave me here alone

Him: Andihambi maarn, ndicela usuke endleleni

Me: Mxm whatever!

I gave him way ndabuyela ebhedini, my laptop was lying on the floor. I picked it up and placed it on top of me.

I stopped the movie and listen to music, I was very pissed.

I placed the laptop next to the bed then placed my head on top of the pillow.

PK joined me few minutes later, he placed arms around my body.

" I'm sorry " He whispered on my ears

I didn't reply

Him: I overreacted, I'm sorry baby

Him: Baby

Him: Minxi

Him: pumpkin

Him: Onika

Him: Come on baby, I said im sorry

Him: How did you expect me to react? I love you and andifuni niks ngawe!

I turned around

Me: It's fine I understand

He pulled me closer to him and kissed me

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Apology accepted

Him: Mmm...

He got on top of me

Me: Mmmm

The following morning....

My phone vibrated early in the morning, it was around 6am.

I searched for it with my eyes closed, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I answered with a low, sleepy voice

Caller: Ndicela uvule

It was Vuvu

Me: Where is your key?

Her: I forgot to take it with yesterday, please open

Me: Uyadika shame

I stood up angrily and searched for my gown, I wore it as I was heading to the door.

I just opened the door, turned around and walked straight to my room.

PK was fast asleep facing the opposite way, I locked my room and slept again.

I woke up few hours later, I yawned as I wore my gown and slippers. I unlocked the door and went straight to the bathroom, brushed my teeth and washed my face.

When I was coming out of the bathroom, I found Vuvu leaning at the wall.

Me: Undothusile

Her: Who's car is that? The one parking outside?

Me: My boyfriend's car

Her: Mmmmm....

She walked closer

Her: You naughty girl, so no wonder Xalani didn't come last night

Me: Who is Xolani?

I asked with a confused face

Her: Didn't he call you last night?

Me: What you talking about?

She rolled her eyes

Her: Zolani's friend asked for your number and I gave it to him

Me: What? Who gave you the right too? Yesess, you almost got me into trouble last night you know that?

Her: You didn't tell me that you have a boyfriend and how the hell were I supposed to know he was here? You were alone when I left here

Me: Jonga apha ke sisi, don't you ever give out my numbers to your sugar daddies, I don't date old men

Her: I'm sorry okay

Me: If usafuna uvana nam

Then I walked to the kitchen and made cereal for PK because I lost appetite.

I walked to the bedroom and found him busy with his phone.

I handed him the cereal

Him: And now? What's with the long face

Me: Can you believe that the man that called me last night, got my number from Vuvu?

Her: What? For what reasons?

Me: Ask her, she makes me sick yazi! What if you were not here huh? What if he came here and raped me? Hayisuka man!

PK : Waveske waphola apha kum

Me: Eva

Him: Why don't you find another place to stay?

Me: This one is cheaper, because I'm sharing the apartment with someone

Him: Find another place baby, I will pay the difference

Me: My parents will ask to many questions, don't worry I sorted her up.

Him: But -

Me: Don't worry, I will be fine

Him: Well okay

He stood up, I watched him as he walked around naked.

Me: Kodwa baby unempundu

Him: Xabuzijongela ntoni

Me: Hahaha, ziyabasela

Him: Voetsek Onika

Me: Ingathi zezentobazana

Him: Bhanxekile, ikhona intombi enempudu ezinjena?

I giggled

Him: Tsibha tsibha tsibha

He said while on action

Me: You crazy

Him: I'm doing tsibha njena muntuza wam

Me: Awukho right

Him: I know

He just wore his jean and shoes

Him: Where is my car keys?

Me: Go search at the lounge

Him: Okay

He walked out the he shout out " Got them " I yelled back " Okay"

I opened the window and curtain , he walked in again as I was finishing the bed, he was holding his toiletry bag

Me: Know where the bathroom is NE?

He nodded as he was taking out his toothpaste and toothbrush.

Him: I pray I don't bump into her, because I will tell her shit!

Me: Easy

Him: Uyaqhela lomntana

Me: Myeke man

He walked out the door then I heard the bathroom door banging.

Later on...

We decided to go out with my boyfriend.

We both bathed and nicely dressed up, Vuvu was sitting at the lounge.

Her: Nice

She complemented us as we were heading to the door. I smiled without uttering a single word.

Her: You both looking beautiful, iyaphi indlela?

PK just walked out

Me: We going out

Her: What's up with him?

Me: He is shy

Her: I'm gonna take advantage of that

Me: Advantage???

Her: I will force him to speak

Nanku umntu ezoziphoxisa ngoPK

Me: No don't do that, uze kum apha not kuwe and akanyanzelekanga makathethe nawe!

Her: Haibo

Me: Ewe, Anyways see you later

I bumped to this guy on my way to the car.

He was my group age but a little older than me , He was dark in complexion not that dark dark.

Him: Xolo

His Xhosa was emphatic , I really loved the way he spoke.

Me: No problem

I walked to the car then we left.

We bought swimming costumes on our way to the beach and some snacks.

I really enjoyed myself and it was my first times going out with him with a free spirit in public. We were holding each other hands, strolling on the sand, chatting, playing and laughing.

He made me fall more in love with him, he made me happy and always knew how to put a smile on my face, I really loved him.

The sun set while we were there, I got goosebumps all over my body due to the cold.

Me: Let's go

Him: I'm still enjoying myself self

Me: I'm cold

Him: Let's go sit in the car

Me: Okay

I was only wearing a two piece swim wear.

He wrapped his arms around me as we walked to the car.

Me: We going home right?

Him: No problem

He started driving, we bought takeaways on our way home.

We arrived home , Vuvu was on her way out.

Her: Finally you back

PK just walked away

Vuvu : Haibo Bhutiza yintoni inxaki yakho?

Ndabamba amazinyo

Him: Utsho????

Her : I mean like, awubulisi, I don't know your name, you don't know mine, awuthethi, what's up?

Him: Andinyazelekanga

Her: Haibo, you rude

Him: Ndiyazazi, didn't ask for a confirmation!

He said as he walked to the bedroom

Her: Like seriously?

Me: I warned you

Him: Why are you dating a guy like this?

Me: Why are you dating sugar daddies?

Her: Mxm

She walked out without saying goodbye

I went to the bathroom and PK followed me, we showered together.

He started kissing me , I felt his manhood standing

Me: Not here

Him: Why not?

He turned me around and entered without warning, it felt good, I moaned out of pleasure.

We got out of the shower later on, I was feeling tired and sleepy.

Him: I'm leaving tomorrow

Me: So soon?

Him : I'm working Monday remember???

I pouted

Me: Hayi kodwa

Him: Suqumba kaloku, I will come visit you when I have enough days vah?

Me: I understand

Him: I love you and always remember that

Me: I know and I love you too

Him: Mmmm.. Will miss you kodwa

Me: I will miss you more

We chatted while we were eating then salala later on.

I woke up the following morning, PK was still sleeping.

I wrapped a towel, I wanted to loo.

I rushed to the bathroom then I went to the the kitchen.

" Mama I send you money izolo njena... Andinamali!... Okay, okay, it's fine I will make a plan"

I walked to the kitchen then she quickly hang up.

Her: You up

Me: Yes, hello

When I was done doing what I was doing at the kitchen, I went back to the bedroom.

PK welcomed me with a hot kiss and it lead to.....

Later on....

He was now leaving but I didn't want him to leave.

Him: Please take care of yourself

Me: I will

Him: No sugar daddies

I giggled

Me: Haibo never

Him : Good!

We said our goodbyes and he left.

The house felt so empty and boring after he left.

I was missing already, I wanted him to holding me and watch me as I slowly fell asleep.

Few weeks later...

It was a Saturday morning, I was busy at the kitchen.

Some guy walked in the kitchen half naked.

Him: Morning

Me: Morning

Then I left

Him: Are you leaving because I walked in?

Me: I was leaving

Him: I'm Sbu and you Onika right?

I nodded then walked to my room and locked my room.

I came out later on, Vuvu and Sbu were cuddling at the lounge. I greeted then made myself something to eat and went back to my room.

When I was done eating, I took a bath and dressed up ndahamba.

I met same guy I met yesterday at the same passage.

Him: Ndinelaka yakho

I smiled and he smiled

Me: Hi

Him: Hi

Then he passed, I looked back he was walking straight then I shook my head and continued walking.

PK called as I was at the Mall, we chatted for a long while then he hung up saying his lunch is almost over.

I bought some outfits then went to the salon, ndafakela iStraight back. When I was done, I went back home and Vuvu was now alone.

Her: Uncede wabuya

She handed me R500

Her: For the grocery

Me: Okay

Her: Didn't you bring something yummy?

Me: Nyama

Her: Iryt

I pointed at the plastic bag

Her: Thanks

Me: How many boyfriends do you have?

She giggled

Her: Why?

Me: You bring different faces here and I don't like it

Her: But I didn't complain when your boyfriend was here

Me: I wouldn't mind either if you were bringing one face

Her: I'm not you kaloku

Me: Jonga sisi, you not living alone .You have to respect me because I respect you.

Her: Haibo

Me: I don't mind you can date 100 men but don't bring them here awuhlali wedwa!

Her: Okay Mam!

I walked to my room slamming the door.

To be continued...

Insert 38

Days turned into weeks and weeks turned in to months.

Varsity life was exciting and I was still staying with Vuvu, she respected me since that day I told her my piece of mind.

I was enjoying leaving on my own having total freedom, going where I want ,doing whatever I want and whenever I want too . The feeling was amazing and having no one to report to when coming home late or asking for permission.

I didn't have problems with Vuyakazi when it comes to financial matters, she always bring her money on time and staying with her was nice to admit, she is not that bad it's just that uyawathanda amadoda full stop akanantanga.

Well....

It was a Friday evening, I was busy revising my work since I was writing on Monday.

I heard a knock on the door as I was busy paging my textbook.

I was bored because I have been sitting with that book since morning.

I fixed my eyes on the door as it slowly opened.

Vuvu walked in wearing a two pieces pyjama.

She yawned slipping her foot as she walked in.

Her: I'm tired studying yhoo

She said as she was stretching her body.

Me: Same here

I don't want to lie , her education was her top priority. Her school work was up to day although she was partying every weekend.

Me: Wait.... Is it not raining outside?

She pulled a confused face

Her: No, why?

Me: It's 8:30 and you home wearing your pyjamas.

Her: Mxxm hampaa

I giggled

Her: Don't you want to go out?

Me: Where to?

Her: I don't know

Me: It's late

Her: People don't only go in the afternoon

Me: Partying?

Her: Why not?

Me: I don't drink

Her: So?

Me: So?

Her: Please man, you gonna buy energy drinks yabo?

Me: I don't see anything

Her: Mxxm wena awuna line

Me: Nangoku njena or to you see a line somewhere?

She giggled

Her: Please friend, allowed me to take you out and meet New people.

Me:

Her: Pretty please

Me: Okay

Her: Yepppppy!

Me: I will change my mind

Her: Sorry

Me: So what am I gonna wear?

Her: Mmmmm.... Wait

She opened my wardrobe and took out my black jean, then she searched again.

Her: Where is your black leather jacket?

Me: Somewhere there

Her: Never mind I have found it

Then she took out a black tank top as well

Me: Am I gonna wear all black as if I'm going to a funeral?

Her: Qaba kanene

Me: I'm not gonna wear that

Her: Mxxm

She said as she searched for shoes and took my dark blue velvet stilettos.

Me: What? I'm not gonna wear that

Her: Just try the outfit and stop talking too much .

We both refreshed and dressed up, I hated to admit it but I liked the outfit when I looked my myself at the mirror.

I fixed my bump and applied mascara, eye pencil and lip gloss.

I looked like a celebrity #Lol

She walked in wearing almost like me but she was wearing gold stilettos.

Her: I told you that you gonna love the look

I giggled

Her: My boyfriend is waiting outside

Me: My friend?

Her : No?

Me: Sugar?

Her: No, Sabelo

Me: Sabelo, Sabelo, Sabelo... Do I know him?

Her: The one with the maroon car

Me: Oh Mr serious

She giggled

Let me give you a brief description of Sabelo.

He was tallish and dark in complexion with a short Afro dread. He was that serious type that don't take shit, I hardly saw him smile, he was still in his 20's.

We switched off the lights then we went to the car.

He switched on the light immediately we got in

Him: Do you also go out?

He was referring to me

Me: First time

Him: It better be your last time

Me: Why?

Him: You gonna decrease your dignity

Vuvu: What do you want to say about me?

He started the car

Him: I was not talking with you

Vuvu: Uyenzi kom kyk ngam

Him: Uyiyo darn?

Vuvu: Mxxm

We drove to this Club in the township, I was nervous as if I'm going to an interview for the first time.

Sebs: I won't be able to join you but Yaya is gonna join you

Vuvu: I don't need a body guard

Him: Andithandisi kuwe and he will take you home at midnight

Her: Okay

Him : And by the way, it's your last time partying until you done with your exams

Her: Whatever

She said as we were going out the car.

Her : Yazi Sabelo thinks he is my father and I can dump him minute I want.

Me: I want to go home

Her: Awuphilanga

She held my hand and we walked inside, she held my hand tight as we squeezed our way inside. I didn't whether to greet as I walk in, they seemed like they looking at me wonder what am I doing there. People at the club are scary at the first time.

We joined a group of girls at a table and it was her friends.

She introduced me to her friends but I was feeling awkward the first few hours.

They offered me alcohol but I refused and told them I don't drink.

Two guys arrived later with more alcohol filling the table with many kinds of alcohol.

This Yaya guy bought me energy drinks since I was yawning, I felt hyper after drinking some.

I sat back while the others hit the dance floor, I was just moving my head watching them dance.

"Why are you not joining the crowd? " Said a voice next to me, I turned around and look.

Me: I can't dance

Guy: Oh okay ,

Me: Wait I think I know you

Him: Yeah ndinguye

Me: I didn't know you hangout in places like this

Him: Haibo ngoba???

"What is going on here? " Asked Ayanda as he was folding the poor guy

Me: I know him

He punched him, I tried to stop him but he wouldn't listen.

Luckily the guy managed to escape and he ran for his life.

Me: Like seriously

Ayanda: Sit down

Vuvu : What is going on?

Me: Mxxm ask your boyfriend

Her: He is not my boyfriend

Me : Whatever he is!

I stormed out and went outside, Vuyokazi followed me

Me: I want to go home

Her: It's still early

Me: I'm not in the mood anymore

Her : Stop being a drama queen

Me: Drama queen,????

Her: I'm sorry, but we don't have transport peto, we depending on them

Me: Call one of your boyfriends

Her: Sabelo would kill me

Me: Who will tell him? It's not like you love him anyway

Her: Mxxm , okay

She called someone then after few minutes a black car arrived, it was a foreign guy.

We got inside, he drove us home then he left.

Me: Umbi lamntu ingathi yiCriminal

Her: He is spending though

Me: Hayi hayi dump him, he doesn't deserve you. He is ugly yhuuuu

She giggled as we went to our separate rooms.

Someone knocked early the following morning. I tried to avoid the knock but NO it was unavoidable, I angrily stood up and went to open the door angrily.

It was Sabelo and he was looking angry his facial expression said it all without him uttering a single word.

Him: Where is Vuyokazi?

Me: At her room

He pushed me aside and went straight to Vuyokazi's room. I just closed the door, I heard them arguing Sabelo shouting like a mad man.

Next thing he came to me looking furious.

Him: Who brought you home last night?

I just blinked uncontrollably like a watch that is running out of batteries.

Him: Huh???????

Me: My boyfriend

My hands were shivering , I just placed them behind me so that he couldn't see them.

Him: Hope you telling the truth

Me: I am

I saw a sign of relief in Vuyokazi's eyes.

Him: Look here both of you! I don't want to see you at any club till you done with your exams or else nizokhatywa ndim.

Me: Haiyi kengoku Tshini

Him: Test me and you will see the bad side of me

Me: You not my father

Him: I don't care, okusalo you not going out anymore.

I just kept quiet but deep down I told myself, he is not gonna tell me what to do and what not to do.

After giving us a lecture, he left us with money.

Vuvu: Thank you

Me: Nyetyu

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Why you dating so many guys?

Her: Ndicela ungakuphenduli

Me: There is something wrong with you, there is no normal human being that behave like you

Her: Don't judge me

Me: It's true, you acting like a slut, whore and that is not ayoba

She gave me a hot slap

Her: Don't judge me, you know nothing about me and remember we come from different worlds!

She said as she was walking to her room slamming the door behind.

I held on my cheek, I wanted to slap her back but I felt sorry for her but was angry at her at the same time.

I went to my room and went back to my sleep.

I was awoken by my phone that was ringing later on.

I didn't know where it was because I last seen it yesterday night before I went clubbing.

I searched for it then answered, it was my boyfriend.

Me: Baby

Him: Why were you not answering my calls last night?

Me: I'm sorry I was sleeping

Him: Sleeping?

Me: Ewe, I had a headache last night

Him: I hope you not fooling me

Me: Serious

Him: Okay

Me: You at work?

Him: Ewe, anyway when are you coming?

Me: As soon as I'm done with my exams, maybe next week

Him: I'm gonna come fetch you

Me: No problem

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too.

Have : Have a nice day

Me: Same to you

I woke up tidy up my room then I took a bath. Vuvu and I were not in talking condition, so I was bored and decided to go to the Mall. Before I went to the Mall I went to check up on the poor guy that was punched by Ayanda. He was staying at the same block as us.

I knocked there several times before he opened.

Me: Hi

Him: Hi

We just stood there in awkwardness

Me: May I come in?

Him: Sure

He closed the door as I gazed around

Me: Umm... I came to apologize for last night

Him: It's cool

Me: I'm sorry

Him: I said it's fine

Me: Well I'm Onika and you?

He giggled

Me: What?

Him: Nothing, I'm Thobela

Me: Well nice meeting you and once again sorry about last night

Him: Don't stress , I'm used to those jealous type

Me: He is not my boyfriend

Him: No need to deny him

Me: Serious he is not

Him: Well I advise you to stay away from those guys they are bad news

Me: He is Vuvu's friend

Him: Okay xawusitsho

He said in a calm tone, I really liked the way he emphasised words.

Me: Well I was on my way to the Mall... I have to go

Me: Wait... I was also about to go there. Do you mind phofu?

Me: No, not at all

He took his phone then he locked up and we left.

Him: So where you from?

Me: P. E and you?

Him: Tinarha

Me: You not far from P. E

Him: We neibours

Me: Yes

We chatted all the way, we even watched a movie and window shopped.

I was having a great time with him and he was not pulling funny stunts.

He was just a normal guy and simple.

To be continued....

Insert 39

We went back home later on, I really had fun and I wish it was not go home time , because I was not in the mood for Vuvu.

We stopped in front of my door.

Me: I had fun

Him: Me too

We kept quiet

Me: So- Him: I-

We said in the same time, we giggled

Him: You first

Me: You first

He smiled

Him: I was gonna say that I really enjoyed myself and thanks to you.

Me: Thanks to you

He giggled

Me: Well I better go inside

Him: Yeah

I smiled then we stood awkwardly

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

I opened the door then walked inside, Vuvu was busy at the kitchen.

Me: Hi

Her: Hi

I walked straight to my room and released a great sigh as I sat on top of the bed.

I took my phone and called PK, it rang several times but he was not picking up.

I just plugged my phone in the charger and undressed, wore my pyjama then I studied till I got tired.

I walked to the kitchen rubbing my eyes it was past 10pm, I made myself a sandwich and juice then went back to my room.

As I was busy eating, my phone rang and it was bae

Me: Baby

Him: What are you doing?

Me : Just finished studying and you?

Him: About to sleep, how was your day?

Me: Wena? Sleeping? Saturday night?

Him: Kuyakhulwa

Me: Wonders never end

Him: Voetsek

Me: Nawe

Him: Answer sheet kanene

Me: Uyi question paper kaloku wena

Him: Onika Ndimdala

Me: Ufuna ntoni emntaneni?

He giggled

Him: I give up

I giggled

Him: So what were you up too today?

Me: I went out with a friend

Him: Vuvu?

Me: No

Him: Good, I don't like that girl

Me: For the why?

Him: She is too forward...

Me: Hehake

Him: Nyani

Me: So wena? How was your day?

Him: Busy yhoo!

He told me about his day at work, we chatted till late then I immediately fell asleep after talking to him.

Few days later...

It was Saturday morning, it was raining outside.

I didn't want to wake up because it was cold and PK was lying next me, he arrived the previous night.

Vuvu knocked at my door early that morning.

I stood up, wore my gown and went to open.

Her: I need you to do me a favour

Me: What is that?

We were now talking to each other

Her: If Sabelo ask where I was last night tell him that I was here the whole night.

She whispered

Me: Where were you Kanti?

Her: Will tell you later

I shook my head

Me: No comment

Her: Please

Me: Okay

Him: Who is in there?

Me: PK

Her: Mmm...

Me: Will talk later

Her: Yima

Me...

Her: Are guys busy doing *****

Me: Hampaa

I closed the door then went back to bed.

Him: Who was that?

Me: Vuvu

Him: Oh okay

He started feeling my thighs

Me: Its still early PK

Him: So?

He said as he was getting on top of me

Me: A. a PK

He slowly inserted and a moan of pleasure escaped my mouth

Him: Still want me to stop?

I didn't reply, I continued to moan as he slowly moved back and forth.

We woke up later on, it was around 11 am.

I made the bed while he went to turn on the shower, I joined him immediately after finishing the bed.

After showering we dressed up in warm clothes.

Him: You gonna spend the night at my house tonight

Me: What about my parents?

Him: Tell them you coming home Monday

Me: Hayi wena you not right

Him: I know!

I called my mother while he was taking my bag to the car.

Her : Baby

Me: Unjani Mama?

Her: I'm good wena?

Me: I'm fine, I just wanted to inform you that I will be home Monday

Her: Why Monday?

Me: I have few things that I have to sort here

Her: Okay

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too!

We hung up

PK came back

Him: And?

Me: She didn't ask many questions

Him: See

Me: You not gonna go out tonight

Him : I know

Me: Good!

I said goodbye to Vuyokazi then we left.

I was sleeping all the way Ndothuka ofika kwethu, it was not raining that side.

We got inside the house and walked straight to the bedroom.

Him: Are you not hungry?

Me: I don't know... I might get hungry as time goes.

Him: There is everything in the fridge

Me: Okay

I undressed and stood there in my underwear's

Me: Bring me my bag

Him: You waisting your time wearing Pyjamas because I will eventually strip them off

Me: I'm cold

Him: Ngena ezingubeni Kaloku

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

Him: I will also undress don't stress

I got under blankets and he followed afterwards.

We cuddled, enjoyed each others embrace.

He made me feel special, I wished we could stay like that forever.

There is only one happiness in life, is to LOVE and to be Loved.

We spent the whole night talking, siphefumlelana, making funny jokes, I really loved PK. I didn't see myself coping without him. He was my joy, my life, my happiness, he was my everything, my reason to smile, my first love, my virgin breaker...I didn't picture myself loving someone else.

The following morning...

I slowly opened my eyes, PK was not next to me.

My phone rang as I was yawning and scratching my head, I slowly picked it up and checked the caller ID and it was Thobela.

Me: Hello

Him: Awuqabe , uzifihlephi nawethu?

Me: I'm in P.E

Him: Haibo without telling me???? Sudlala kakubi

Me: My boyfriend came to fetch me , I'm sorry dude

Him: He sucks

I giggled

Me: When are you coming this side?

Him: No man , the thing is I invited my girlfriend this side, I wanted you to meet her

Me: Askies, next time

Him: No it's cool I understand

PK walked in

Me: Have too go , we will chat later

Him: What with the rush?

Me: I'm not home kaloku...

Him: Sies!

Me: Hahahaha

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

We hung up

" Who was that? " asked PK facing the opposite direction.

Me: Thobela

Him: Thobela Waphi?

Me: From East London

Him: What does he want?

Me: He is my friend, he was checking on me

Him: Checking on you?

Me: Is there something wrong with that?

Him: ...

Me: Haike ngoku

Him: Doesn't he have a girlfriend?

Me: He does

Him: Then why is he calling another man's girlfriend ?

Me: Like seriously?

Him: I'm not fighting, I'm asking

Me: He is my friend

Him: You must tell him that your boyfriend doesn't like it

Me: Unochuku shame

Him: Ungandiqheli

Me: Haiskaaaaa

Him: Funeke ndikhe ndikothuse nje kancinci, ndiyakubona awundiboni.

I just rolled my eyes.

Later that day...

PK left to fetch his friend and his girlfriend and I stayed behind cooking.

They arrived after something like forever, I was even done cooking.

Me: Hayi soze , inoba usuka eJHB

Him: I'm sorry baby

CJ : Yhuu usathanda ucomplainer nangoku?

Me: Haiskaaaaa

They introduced me to CJ's girlfriend, her name was Zizopho she was nice.

I dish out for them and we ate chatting in between.

After eating she offered to wash the dishes and I didn't say no.

PK : Baby we will be back

Me: Where are you going?

Him: Buy something to drink

Me: You working tomorrow PK

Him: Six pack qha

Me: Okay

They left with CJ and I was left with Zizopho.

We watched a movie and chatted, a hour went by and they were not back yet, I tried to call them but they were not answering.

They came back hours later drunk, talking non stop ndibawela umbetha uPhakamani yhoo!

CJ and his girlfriend left later on then salala.

I woke him early the following morning,I was left alone after he left for work.

I spring cleaned since I had nothing to do.

When I was done with everything, I took a bath and wore a simple dress and sandals.

I locked the house then Ndayokhwela uJikeleza to Zwide.

I arrived home, Mom was busy with papers and Lubabalo was playing at the carpet with a plastic toy isemlonyeni phofu.

Me: Molweni!!!!

Mom turned around

Her : How did get in?

Me: The gate was unlocked

Her : How come?

I shrugged my shoulders

Her: Oh Gloria went to the Shop

Me: Oh

Her: Awubhitye mntanam, jonga intamo inde

Me: Haibo Mama

Her: Awutyi wena!

Me: Haibo Mama ndiyatya

Her: I don't believe that

Me: Yhooo Haike Mama, uphi uBhuti?

Her: At work

Me: Okay

I looked around

Me: It feels nice to be home

Her : I'm happy you back

I picked Lubabalo up and cuddled with him but he was pulling my hair.

He was looking cute with his watery mouth but he was busy Yhoo, I had to remove my jewellery because it was attracting him.

To be continued....

Insert 40

I went up stairs to my room, I just placed my bag down and lied down for a little.

I couldn't wait to see my brother and sister, I took out my phone and called Thobile.

Me: Cc

Her: Ntondo kamama, how are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Her: I'm fine, when are coming to P. E?

Me: I'm already in P. E

Her: What? And you didn't tell me?

Me: I just told you njena

Her: When did you get Here?

Me: I just arrived

Her: Oh, okay. So when are coming to visit your Big sister?

Me: Tomorrow

Her: I'm working tomorrow, why don't you come visit Saturday, I knock off early

Me: No problem

Him: How is school?

Me: Everything is well just that there is too much theory yhoo, I even lost weight

Her: That's a good sign, you must work like a slave to live like a king.

Me: Yeah I guess

Her: Don't guess, you must be focused or otherwise you will be sorry.

Me: Yeah yeah yeah.... I will stay focus

Her: Do you have a boyfriend already?

Me: Zintoni ezi uzibuzayo?

Her: I'm asking, I want to know

Me: You asking to many questions, I will see you Saturday

Her: I smell a dead rat

Me: How is life apho eWalmer?

Her: Hee don't change the subject

Me: Haike I will just keep quiet

Her: Okay okay... How is everyone at home?

Me: I assume that they still Okay but I haven't seen Dad and Luvano

Her: Hayi I'm so proud of my brother lately, he is growing up

Me: Really?

Her: Yes, Lubabalo really changed him

Me: How?

Her : He is taking life serious now, He is not acting like a teenager anymore...

Me: Wow can't wait to see him

Her: I have to go, we will chat later mntase vah

Me: No problem, bye

Her: Bye

I hung up and lied a little longer.

Someone knocked at my door and entered without an invite.

I lifted up head to look and it was Mom

Her: There is somewhere I have to go, please watch Lubabalo for me.

Me: Where is Gloria?

Her: She will be going home soon

Me: Okay, bring him here

She went downstairs and came back with him., I took him and kissed him.

Me: Mntana kaDabawo

We cuddled till we both fell asleep

I woke up later on we were covered with a blanket and I don't remember covering us.

He woke just after I woke up and he was crying.

I stood up and lift him up shushing her all the way to the kitchen,I warmed his bottle.

" PK is missing out"

I turned around and it was my brother.

I smiled

Me: Missing out on what?

Him: Never mind

Me: Eshee

I gave Lubabalo his bottle and helped him to hold it.

Him: Awubhitye

Me: Yhuu andidikwe nini

Him: But you look sexy though

Me: Mxxm

Him: I'm happy you back

Me: Me too

We went to sit at the lounge

Me: So what have you been up too?

Him : Nothing much

Me: Oh alright

I could see he was not okay

Him: When last did you hear from Bulie?

Me: A week ago, why?

Him: Did she say something about us or me?

Me: No, why asking?

He released a sign

Me: What's up?

He shrugged his shoulders

Him: He is not returning my calls

Me: Why? Did you guys had a fight?

Him: I don't know what's wrong with her or what I did. She doesn't return my calls and she ignored me on whatsapp

Me: Haibo

Him : She said the last time, I'm cheating and sleeping around.

Her: Is she lying?

Him: Since the beginning of this year, I have been loyal to her, there is not even a side dish. I love her and I'm serious about but she doesn't trust me! Me: Prove it to her

Him: How? She doesn't even want anything to do with me... I'm confused ndenzeni lena ingaka?

Me: Don't worry, she will be back on Friday and I will talk to her

Him: Please mntase

Me: Stop stressing now

We talked about something else catching up.

Mom arrived later on it was around 6pm she had two boxes of pizza.

Me: Mmmm

Her: You lazy kanene, no wonder

I giggled as I went upstairs to take my phone because I just remembered PK's key were with me.

I called him he answered after few rings.

Me: Hello

Him: Baby

Me: Your key

Him: Don't worry I have a spare key, keep that one sesakho.

Me: What am I gonna do with it?

Him: When you want to come to my house, you can use that key to open

Me: Okay

Him: What are you busy with?

Me: Nothing was just baby sitting Lubabalo

Him: Haven't Bulelwa come to fetch the baby?

Me: She coming Friday

Him: Hayi ukhona uBulelwa ufike Friday Me: Haibo

Him: Didn't she tell you

Me: No, not yet

Him: Ukhona

Me: Wow, okay.

Him: When will I see you?

Me: I don't know

Him: I will come fetch you Friday

Me: You working Friday

Him: So???

Me: So? I won't be able to come see you after work

Him: You don't necessarily have come to my place, I will come to you

Me: What? My parents will be home

Him: I will come when everyone is sleeping

Me: Okay

Him : I will come tonight

Me: Alright

We chatted then we hung up when I heard my mothers voice calling me.

I went to join my family downstairs, I was happy to see Dad.

I signed that I must come sit on top of his thigh and I did as he said.

Him: How is school my princess?

Me: School is alright

Him: Good girl... Please make us proud

Mom: I have full confidence in her, I know she will never disappoint us

Luu : PLEASE DON'T DISAPPOINT US!

He said emphasizing his words

Me: I won't

Dad: That's my girl

We all chatted and eating at the same time .

After eating, I did the dishes while Mom bath Lubabalo.

When I was done washing the dishes, I went upstairs.

I undressed then ndangena ezingubeni, Luvano walked in.

Him: Do you mind if I join you?

Me: No, I don't mind

Him: Okay

He closed the door then took off his shoes and tucked in next to me.

Him: How is things between you and PK?

Me: Still fine but yhoo hayi he is jealous over unnecessary things... For instance, I have a male friend from E.L Thobela. He called yesterday morning and PK didn't like it, for the why? It's not like I'm dating the guy.

Him: If a woman can call PK early in the morning and he giggle non stop, how will you feel?

Me: I will be cool with it, as long I know they are friends

Him: Xokelani? Nyanzelwa yintoni bamawuxoke????

Me: Nyani

Him: How will you be sure it's not his side dish? Pewu subamuncu apha, I see nothing wrong with PK's reaction.

Me: You always taking his side

Him: I'm not I'm just being honest

Me: Mxxm

Him : Look mntase, once a guy is jealous that's a great sign that you mean everything to him, if he doesn't care then you must know you don't come first.

Me: Haiskaaaaa

Him: I'm a guy and I have been in this industry for ages. Sometimes we don't cheat because we don't love you, we cheat we feel lonely and sifuna umntu wohambisa ixesha.

Me: You are not right

Him: It's true

Me: You playing with our feelings

Him: That's life mntase , you will see it as times go

Me: Is there loyal guys?

Him: Yes I guess but they are few and hard to find and you get bored once you find them

Me: Meaning?

Him: You will see and you will come back and confirm it.

We chatted then he went to his room later on.

Later on...

PK called saying that he was outside.

I wore my gown and tip-toed as I was heading to the main door.

Lol izinto zokhula kodwa!

I slowly unlocked the door then I went outside holding my slippers by hand.

PK was standing by the gate and he helped me jump over.

I giggled as I went to the car

Me: Hell would break loose is my father would wake up now

Him: I would run and leave this car here

I giggled

Him: Let's go to my house

Me: What?

Him: I will bring you back at 4am

Me: Jy stout

He giggled while he started the car, we drove to his house safika sangena ezingubeni.

Him: I was missing you

Me: I was missing you as well

Him: Let's cover our heads

Me: Why?

Him: I want to show you something.

Me: Okay

Sagqumathela, he got on top me kissing me. He took off my pyjama then got between my legs, his manhood was moving between my thighs.

He slowly inserted and I released a moan, he moved back and forth .

He crossed my legs around his waist, I couldn't stop moaning, I was feeling so much pleasure than before.

I didn't know what to do I just wanted to scream out loud, I called his name telling him how much I love him.

I never felt so much pleasure before, our bodies were sweating the heat was too hot to handle, we were catching each others breath, that was amazing I felt like we are becoming one.

He moved faster and faster groaning out of pleasure.

He released then he moved slower and slower.

He uncovered the blankets , we were wet by sweat, our bodies felt sticky and we were breaking heavily.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He placed me on top of his chest

Him: Don't ever forget that! No matter what can happen just remember , I only love you and no one else..

Me: I love you too

Him: I'm not perfect but you are my number one, my everything...

Me: You making me blush

Him: I'm sorry but that's the truth.

He took me home later on , I tip-toed again when I entered the house.

I released a sign when I got to my room.

I just fell asleep, I was feeling kinda tired.

To be continued...

Insert 41

*Mini skirt *

My phone vibrated the following morning, I was still sleepy and it was an incoming call. I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I answered in a sleepy voice

PK : Didn't mean to wake you up

Me: Am I complaining?

Him: Hahaha, just wanted to know if you didn't get into trouble

Me: They didn't even notice that I was not home

Him: Better

Me: Yeah

Him: Yazi I'm missing you already, I think I should start saving for Lobola

Me: Hahaha , I don't want to get married

Him: Bhanxekile, who will marry me if you don't?

Me: I don't know

Him: Soon as you finish varsity I'm gonna propose

Me: What? You crazy?

Him: I'm not

Me: Marriage is my last wish

Him: So what about me? I can't be a boyfriend forever

Me: Have you been drinking?

Him : Meaning?

Me: This conversation

Him: Hahaha... I'm 24 and I want to get married before 30

Me: Duh I'm still 18 years

Him: At least you will be 24 when you graduate

Me: And you will be 31, yhoo kodwa Umdala mntuwam

Him: Yabonake

Me: Xolo

Him: Accepted , so I will see you Friday now?

Me: Yes

Him: Okay... by the way have a wonderful day.

Me: Same to you

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

We hung up and I went back to sleep.

I woke up later on, it was around 10. My body was feeling lazy, it just wanted to lie down.

I opened the window and made my bed then went to do my morning hygiene routine at the bathroom.

When I was done I went to the kitchen where my mother was busy feeding Lubabalo.

Me: Morning Mama

Her: Baby, how was your first night at home?

Me: Haibo it's not like I have been gone for ages

Her: But still

Me: Khona why you feeding him here at the kitchen?

Her: Nobody ask you when you eating at the kitchen

Me: Yhoo

Her: He is growing fast neh?

Me: Too fast

I made myself cereal and I went to sit at the lounge.

Lubabalo joined me later with his walking ring, driving around the house and he looked so cute.

Later on...

I took a bath, I was gonna pay Bulelwa a surprise visit.

I wore a jean and a simple top with my sneakers, I fixed my hair then took my phone and walked downstairs.

Mom: Where you going?

Me: To the Mall

Her: Mall? On a Tuesday?

Me: It's school holiday

Her: You loaded neh? Khandiphe

Yakwazi uyibhanxa ke uMama

Me: I'm not

Him: Don't you want to take Luba with?

Me: Yhoo

Her: He would love to go out with his aunt

I looked at him and he smiled as if he could hear what we talking about.

Me: Okay

Her: Ncooo

I rolled my eyes, she quickly changed him and I left with him.

I took a taxi to Bulelwa's house, I didn't even inform her that I was coming.

When I got there the gate was locked, I took out my phone and called her.

Her phone was ringing but no answer, I tried several times but same thing.

I just took another taxi to greenacres and decided to pay Phakamani a surprise visit at work.

I entered the store , I didn't see him then decided to call him.

Him: Baby

Me: I'm at your work

Him: Really?

He sounded excited

Me: I'm inside the store iza

Him: Okay, I'm coming

I looked for a purity while I was waiting for him.

"What a surprise " Said PK's voice, I smiled and turned around.

He took Lubabalo

Him: He is growing fast yhoo... What are guys feeding him?

The team members were looking at us and I was feeling uncomfortable.

"You didn't tell me you have a baby " said one of his colleagues

PK : You didn't ask

Him: He looks just like you

PK : Really?

He smiled

Him: Oops, where is my manners? I'm Mike and you must be Onika?

Me: Yes I am

Mike: She is beautiful my broer

PK: I know and she doesn't believe me when I say so

Mike: Yhoo Siesie jy is regtig mooi

Me: Thanks

PK : You making her feel uncomfortable, baby let's go

Me: Let me pay for the purity first

We walked to the tills and all eyes where at us, I quickly paid then I went out by the front door while he went clock out with Lubabalo.

We met outside again

Me: I just came to check on you nothing much

Him: I appreciate , thank you

Me: We have to get going before Mom start calling

Him: I'm gonna take you home

Me: It's not necessary

Him: I insist, Uhamba nomntana Kaloku

Me: Okay

We walked to the car sakhwela and left.

Me: I went to see Bulie earlier but she wasn't home and wasn't returning my calls

Him: Mxxm uxakile lowo

Me: How?

Him: Varsity turned her into something else, akanxili uxakile

Me: Haibo

Him: I tried talking to her but it seemed like it went into one ear and out by the other one.

Me : That's not true

Him: I don't know what to do anymore

Me: Try to discipline her

Him: Haiska undipholele

Me: She is your sister

Him: She doesn't want to listen to me and I don't want to lay a finger on because it will go that far now

Me: Haibo bUllet

Him: Please baby stay this way

Me: I will

Him: Phofu ndizokukhaba if wakhe waqala uphambana

Me: Eshee

Him: I'm serious

Me: Uzoqala ngoBulie

Him: Just don't test me, I can be cruel

Me: Mxxm bani wena?

Him: Haha... Just don't say I didn't warn you

Me: Will see about that

Him: Okay

We chatted sade sayofika ngasendlini, I kissed him goodbye then I left.

When I got home Mom was not there only Gloria.

So I had to babysit all day and besendidikiwe.

I made him something to eat and gave him his bottle then he slept few minutes later.

I placed the purity at the cupboard since he didn't eat it and I also took a nap next to him.

To be continued...

Insert 42

Few days later...

It was a Thursday evening, Mom and Dad were preparing for their journey to East London, they were leaving the following day.

Me: When will you be back?

Mom : By Monday

Me: What about Lubabalo?

Her: He is leaving with me, don't worry

Me: Send my love to granny and hope she get well soon

Mom: I will

My phone vibrated and it was an incoming call, I checked the caller ID and it was Thobela

Me: Hello

I said as I was walking upstairs

Him: Awunqabe

Me: I was about to call

Him: Lair

Me: Serious dude

Him: Kodwa Uyaxoka

Me: Kodwa andixoki

Him: Haaaha, anyways what you up too?

Me: Nothing

Him: Nothing?

Me: yeah nothing, it's boring here

Him: Should I come fetch you

Me: I would love that

Him : I'm on my way

Me: Hurry up, undawoni ngoku?

Him: I'm still walking to the robots

Me: hurry up

Him: Remember I'm walking by foot from East London to Port Elizabeth

I giggled

Him: I will probably arrive there in two months time

Me: Yhoo I will be in East London that time

Him: I'm turning around ke

Me: hahaha...

We chatted then I went downstairs to join my family for supper.

Dad: We are leaving early tomorrow morning, Luvano please take care of your sister

Luu: I always do

Mom: Don't stress granny will be fine , we should just keep on praying for her healing

Dad: Yes we must keep on praying for her

We ate while chatting in between, after supper, I cleared the table and washed the dishes.

Luvano joined me , he dried the dishes.

Him: Is there something wrong with me?

Me: Lento?

Him: Bulelwa has a new boyfriend

Me: What???

Him: I saw them yesterday when I was coming from work

Me: What did she say?

He giggled falsely

Him: She pretended as if she never met me in her entire life

Me: Haibo

Him: I don't want to lie that hurt

Me: I'm sorry Bhuti

Him: That is life, but mntase I love her, I really do, I can't just forget about her . I was even planning on marrying her.

Me: Wow

Him: Please talk to her

Me: She doesn't answer my call either

Him: Please mntase, ask her what did I do wrong and what can I do for her to forgive me

Me: But-

Him: Please mntase

I could see pain in his eyes, he really loved her. I never seen my brother crazy about someone like that.

Me: I'm gonna try

Him: Thank you

He pulled me closer for a hug

Him: I'm counting on you

Me: I will do my best

We went to our separate rooms after the dishes.

I slowly undressed and changed to my pyjamas.

PK called me as I was about to sleep

Me: Love

Him: Baby , how are you?

Me: I'm good you?

Him: I'm good but missing you

Me: I miss you too

Him: Can I take you out Saturday?

Me: Where too?

Him: Motherwell

Me: Motherwell?

Him: Lwando is having a braai so everyone will bring their girlfriends with

Me: You know my parents are strict

Him: Make a plan with Luvano baby please

Me: How?

Him: Say you invited to one of your friends party baby...

Me: It's fine my parents are leaving tomorrow morning

Him: Perfect!!!

He was excited

Him: So that means I'm gonna come fetch you tomorrow night?

Me: No

Him: Why not?

Me: Andifuni

Him: Yazibona ke?

Me: Baby please, I will see you Saturday

Him: Okay, I won't force you

We chatted till his airtime finished then I slept.

I woke the following morning, Mom and Dad were leaving.

They left me with R500 and told me to behave.

I kissed Lubabalo's soft lips , he didn't want to let go of me. Mom took him by force, he cried mom shush him as they entered the car.

I watched the car as it leaved the yard, weaving my hand.

I closed the gate after they left and I went inside, Luvano was eating cereal about to go to work.

Me: Am I gonna be all alone in this house?

Him: Gloria is here

Me: As if she will keep me company

Him: Haike

He washed his bowl

Him: See you later and don't forget about what we talked about last night

Me: Okay

He went out in a hurry because he was late.

I just turned on the TV and watched what was playing.

I later took a bath and wore my jeans with sneakers and a plain black T-shirt. I then took my phone and went out to Bulelwa's house.

Luckily she was home and she was alone.

I knocked at the door several times before she opened and she was shocked to see me.

Me: Hi Bulelwa

Her : Hello

She said in a shocked voice

Me: May I come in?

She opened a way for me to pass , I walked to the lounge and she followed.

Me: Why you avoiding my calls?

Her: Been busy

Me: Busy with what?

Her: I'm working

Me: Working?

Her: I was gonna call you

Me: When?

Her: I'm not in the mood for this kanjani

Me: Oh okay, so when were you planning to come fetch or even come visit your baby ?

Her: I'm busy okay !!!

Me: busy for your own baby?

Her: It's not like I made that baby alone, if your brother was not selfish I wouldn't be pregnant!!!!!!

Me: Meaning?

Her: Your brother ruined my life

Me: How? Yes he got you pregnant but he took the responsibility. You at Varsity right? The baby is leaving with us right? My brother still loves and support you right???? Now where is the problem?

Her: I'm a mother before time and it's all his fault

Me: You seemed happy during and after the pregnancy... I'm confused

Her: He wants to control me, he doesn't want me to drink, he doesn't want me to party. Hello! I'm still young and I have the right to enjoy myself while I'm still young. Who is he my father?????? Fuck him, I don't want him in my life, your brother is boring now,

Me: I don't get you

Her: He is old for me, I need to date my age not ixhego elijengaye!

Me: Xhego,????

Her: And for uLubabalo yena I'm gonna see him when I want to and no one will force me to take him. I carried him for nine months, it's his turn now! I'm still young to be playing Mommy!!!

Me: Wow, you have changed

Her: No, I haven't changed I'm still Bulelwa Poni

Me: Yhoo I'm highly disappointed, PK was right

Her: Hahaha.... Angakulinge azenze ngcono ngam.... He is also cheating, did he tell you about Sive??????

I looked at her with a surprised face

Her: I thought so, now do me a favour and leave ,please don't forget to tell your brother that he must stop calling me I'm no longer his girlfriend and wait wait... And that I will come fetch Lubabalo when I'm done with varsity or maybe when I'm 25 !!

I just walked out speechless, I was highly disappointed.

I took a taxi back home, I was down and angry. How could PK do this to me???? Is he taking advantage of my love for him????

I even regretted going to see Bulelwa, she spoiled my day and my mood.

I arrived home and went straight to my room. As I arrived home, I got angrier and angrier, I was boiling inside.

I waited for Gloria to leave then I left after her.

I took a cab to Dwesi, I sent Luvano a message that I won't be home when he arrives.

I got off at the usual stop then I walked the remaining distance.

I got to PK's house, it was past 4 in the afternoon. I unlocked the house and started searching for something I don't know.

But damn I didn't find anything , I took the picture frame that was next to the bed ndayilahla phantsi.

It was a picture of me and him, I slowly sat on the edge of the bed, I bowed my head and started crying, I was angry.

I then stood up and lifted the mattress, I found plenty of loose condoms.

I opened the wardrobe and searched like a mad woman, I found another condom on his leather jacket .

I impatiently waited for him sitting at the lounge.

I heard footsteps walking to the lounge later on.

I lifted my head and fixed my eyes to the entrance.

He smiled but I was not smiling.

Him: You didn't tell me you coming

Me: Fuck you PK!

I stood up, he looked around

Him: What's going on here?

Me: I trusted you, I loved you PK, I stayed loyal to you... But what do you do?
Undibulela ngomva wesandla

Him: What you talking about???

Me: Am I not good enough for you???

Him: Okay baby what is going on?

Me: Stop calling me that!

Him: Onika what's up?

Me: Why do you keep condoms at your house? Because we don't use them

He started stuttering

Him: Er... Zezakudala!

I had anger issues.

I took the TV remote and hit him with it

Me: Stop Lying

Him: Calm down

Me: Calm down???? Calm down Phakamani????

Him: I can explain

Me: Explain what? I don't want to hear more of your lies

Him: Baby don't be like this

Me: And the one that is in your jacket?

I went to the bedroom took the jacket and showed him the condom , words stuck on his throat

Me: Say something

Him: Baby... Onika

Me: Who is Sive?

He closed his eyes

Me: PK?

Him: Baby look

Me: I'm listening

Him: I don't know what to say, I'm sorry

Me: You keep on saying those words every time

Him: Onika, look

Me: Do you love her

Him: Of cause not

Me: But you sleeping with her right?

Him: Baby please

Me: On that bed????

Him: Baby

Me: Don't baby me, answer me!

Him: Eish, who told you this?

Me: Doesn't matter

Him: Onika I'm sorry, I didn't want you to find out.

Tears formed

Me: So it's true, you not even denying it

Him : What difference would it make if I deny it?? You will hate me even more once you find out that I made a fool of you

Me: Wow

Him: Baby ndicela sithethe

Me: I have nothing else to say to you

Him: Well I do

Me: More lies?

Him: Baby I love you

Me: Love me?????

Him: I truly love you

Me: Then why do you keep on hurting me?

Him: It's not intentional

Me: Not intentional????

Him: I'm sorry

Me: You unbelievable

Him: Baby come on

We argued almost the whole night.

He took me home the following morning, we were not talking.

Him: Onika

I ignored him

Him: I love you

Me: So?

Him: Ndicela silungise izinto

Me: I'm not in the mood kanjani

He stopped at our usual spot

Him: Baby

Me: Bye PK

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too but I don't think we are meant to be

Him: Are you breaking up with me?

Me: Just saying

Him: Baby please, ndiyakucela don't do this

Me: Why not?

Him: I love you and still want you in my life

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxm,

I opened the car door and left

To be continued...

Insert 43

I went inside the house, my brother was sitting at the lounge.

Me: Hi

I didn't even wait for him to reply, I just just walked upstairs.

I took off my shoes, I didn't have more tears to cry. Luvano walked in

Him: What's up Tom?

Me: Nothing

Him: You know that you can tell your Jerry anything

He sat next to me

Me: He cheated again

Him: What happened?

Me: Bulelwa told that he is seeing someone else then I confronted him and he didn't deny

Him: Did you see them together or?

Me: As I told you. Bulie told me

Him: And What did he say?

Me: Same old... I'm sorry, I love you....

Him: Do you still love him?

Me: No, yes... I still love him!

Him: I know you still hurting but that guy still loves... You find someone who is worse than him

Me: Why you always defending him?

Him: Because it's true

Me: Haiskaaaaa

Him: If he didn't love you, you would have seen that by your own eyes

Me: I can't believe you

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Let's talk about something else

Him: When are you going to visit Bulelwa?

Me: I visited her today

Him: And?

Me: She feels like you controlling her and that you ruined her life.

Him: I don't understand

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: Okay, I will give her total freedom if that will bring her back. What about Lubabalo?

Me: She says she is still young to be a mother and don't expect her anytime soon

Him: I won't give up on her

Me: I'm sorry Bhuti

Him: I love her ntwana...

Me: Things will be alright

Him: When??? She doesn't want anything to do with me and she doesn't want anything to do with Lubabalo.

Me: It's okay

We chatted for a long while

Later on...

Luvano was out with friends, I was alone at home chatting with Thobela on whatsapp.

Someone knocked at the door, my heart started to beat fast, I was not expecting anyone.

I kept quiet, the person knocked again but harder this time.

I checked the time, it was around 11 at night.

" Onika please open the door " it was PK's voice .

Me: What do you want??

"I LOVE YOU ONIKA, I LOVE YOU WITH ALL OF MY HEART"

He was yelling, I quickly opened the door.

Me: What is Fucken wrong with you, what will the neighbors say?

Him: I'm sorry

He was drunk and really drunk.

Me: How did you get here?

Him: Was driving

Me: You irresponsible Phakamani!!! Drink and driving??? Like seriously?

Him: I wanted to talk to you

He fell on the couch

Me: Mxxm

Him: I Love you baby, you are my number one

I just went out, opened the gate.

I went to lock his car because it was not locked and the key was still in the car.

I closed the gate again, I walked to the house, he was sleeping on the couch.

"Pk! " he didn't answer me, I tapped him several times but he didn't wake up.

His pants was dirty, he had probably fell many times.

I searched for his wallet and phone, his wallet still had money and his phone was not cracked.

I took a blanket and covered him. I got so curious and went through his phone, searched for sive's number. I found it at his whatsapp. I started a conversation with her.

Me: Hello

She was online

Her: hi

I quickly log out.

The phone vibrated as a alert of new message from Sive.

"Is she around? "

I opened it

Me: No

Her: when is she leaving?

Me: We broke up

Her: What? Why????

Me: She found out about us

Her : Sorry

I just closed the conversation and went to sleep.

" Luvano take me home "

" You belong here with me and Lubabalo "

"I don't love you anymore Luvano, I Love Lwando! "

It was Luvano and Bulelwa arguing.

Luu: So you gonna give up our love, just like that?

Her: I don't love you Luvano

Him: I love you damn it! Can't you see that?

Her: Luvano you hurting me!

She screamed , I jumped out of bed.

Me: Bhuti No!

Her: Fuck you Luvano

Luu: Bulelwa I love you

Me: Bhuti stop hurting yourself, let her go, she doesn't love you

Her: Tell him

Me: Please Bhuti..

He was really mad even tears were forming on his eyes.

Bulie : Take me home

Luu : Call your precious boyfriend!

He said as he was walking to his room, I walked to my room.

She followed me and joined me, I was not in the mood for her.

I woke up early the following morning around 5am, I went to wake him .

Me: Phakamani wake up!

I tapped him very hard

Him: Ummm?

Me: You have to go

I helped him to get up

Him: But-

I walked him by the door and went to open the gate for him ndamjula with his car keys.

Him: Baby let's talk

I ignored him and closed the door as soon as I entered the house.

Bulelwa walked downstairs in a hurry

Her: I want to go before your brother wake up

Me: Sure!

I went to open the gate and she also left.

PK's phone rang, I just checked the caller ID, I didn't answer.

I walked upstairs and prepared for church.

To be continued....

I know it's short, I'm sorry.

I'm also sorry about the errors, I don't have time to Edit.

Insert 44

I went straight to my room and tidy up, I opened the window and curtain.

" Am I a bad person? "

I turned around

Me: No, why?

He moved from the door and walked in

Luu: Why is she acting like this?

Me: I know it's hard Bhuti but truth to be told she doesn't love you anymore.
Stick that in your head!

Him: What about Lubabalo? What has he done?

I shrugged my shoulders

Me: Just give her space, she will come around

Him: And I should just seat back and wait till she comes back?

Me: Jump case, if you still love her!

He released a great sigh

Me: You will be okay

Him: Love kodwa!

Me: Love

Him: You going to church?

Me: We going to church

Him: Church? Me? Never!

Me: Haibo Bhuti, so I'm gonna take a taxi to church?

Him: Jumpza!

Me: Yhuu, you not my brother

Him: Vele, I'm your half brother

Me: Mxxm

He giggled as he was walking out the door.

I went to clean at the kitchen since Gloria was not coming in.

Phakamani's phone started to ring, I ignored it at first then it kept on ringing. I got irritated and answered it

Me: PK's phone hello

Caller: Ungubani?

It was PK's voice

Me: Since when did you not recognize my voice?

Him: What a relief, I thought I lost my phone.

Me: I was afraid you break it

Him: Thank you , I will come fetch it later today

Me: Okay

Him: Er....er... Nevermind, bye.

Me: Bye

I finished what I was doing then I took a bath and dressed up.

I went to Luvano's room and stood by the door frame.

Me: Bhuti

He was laying on his back looking at the roof.

Him: Mmm?

Me: Let's go

Him: I'm not going to church

Me: Haibo, please I beg you

Him: Yazi if it was not Sunday I would have....

Me: Hahaha like seriously?

He angrily stood up

Him: Masambe (let's go)

Me: Thank you

Him : Mxxm

He drove me to church, we were not speaking all the way.

He stopped for me in front of the church.

Him: I'm not gonna come fetch you, hope you have taxi fare

Me: I have

Him: Better

Me: What has the church done to you that you hate it so much?

Him: Bye!

I shook my head and then walked inside.

After church, I took a taxi home .

I arrived home, Luvano was on his way out.

Me: Where to??

Him: I will be babe before it gets dark

Me: Okay

Him: Don't cook, I will bring takeaways

Me: Yepppppy

Him: Oho... You lazy I forgot

Me: Me? Lazy? You playing

Him: Hahaha , bye

Me: Bye

Him: Wait... What was PK doing here? Are you guys back together?

Me: It's a long story but we not back together.

Him: If you say so!

Then he left

I went to my room and called Thobela

Him: Hey you

Him: No wonder it's raining today here at East London, because you called me

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Yes, I was almost stroked by lightning

Me: Yhuu Uyayibaxa!

He giggled

Him : Anyways how are you today?

Me: I'm not good

Him: What's wrong? Should I call an ambulance?

Me: Mxxm

Him: I just miss you man, come back

Me: I will be back on the 12th of July

Him: Ayabakude konto (That's far)

Me: I know, is your girlfriend still around?

Him: Yes , but she is leaving Friday

Me: Shame

Him: Don't say that , I hate it

Me: Haibo why?

Him: It's seems like I'm an orphan

Me: Lol you know that you not an orphan

Him: But still

Me: Sorry ke

Him: What you doing?

Me: Coming from church you?

Him: Dad told me to meet him at the Mall

Me: Ain't your Parents living this side?

Him: My mother is not married to my Dad

Me: Oh, didn't know that

Him: He is also married with other children

Me: Oh, okay...

We chatted for a while then I went downstairs and watched Africa magic.

I heard a knock later on, I turned to look because the door was opened.

It was PK, he walked in

Him: Hi

Me: How did you get in?

Him: The gate is open

Me: Luvano

Him : How are you?

Uske anyabe ke uPK xa moshile

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Him: I came to fetch my phone

Me: Okay

I took the phone and handed it to him

Him: Thank you

Me: Sure

Him : I miss you

Me: Okay

Him: Please don't be like this

Me: How?

Him: I love you

Me: You don't hurt someone you love

Him: It was not my intentions...

Me: So?

Him: Baby I ndiyakucela

Me: Please go, the neighbors are watching and I hate what you did yesterday. You gonna get me into trouble.

Him: I'm sorry about yesterday

Me: Please don't ever do that again!

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Now please do me a favour and leave

Him: Baby I won't do it again

Me: I may be young and new in this industry but I'm not stupid.

Him: Please don't leave me, I beg baby

He kept on nagging

Me: I love you Phakami kakhulu but I hate being fooled

Him: Onika baby please don't do this

Me: I will never trust you again

Him: I'm sorry

Me: That's a cliché , you sin and use that word over and over.

Him: Don't say that

Me: It's true Phakamani undenza isibhanxa sakho (You making me your fool)

Him: I was not, baby you are my number one

Me: This is not a number line

Him: I know

Me: It's fine we can carry on with our relationship but remember I will never trust you again and I know I will never be your one and only.

Him: Onika don't say that

Me: It's true and it's obvious njena

Him: Baby -

Me: You have to leave now

Him: I love you

Me: Love you too

He moved closer for a kiss , I inched back

Me: Not so fast, ndicela uhambe...(please leave)

Him: Okay... I will call you

Me: Sure

He left, I went to sit at the same sofa and continued watching the movie.

Luvana arrived later with grilled meat and bread.

Me: MmMmm...

Him: Oho

Me: I'm hungry

Him: I won't finish this food alone

Me: I know

He gave me mine and we ate

Him: I have decided to move on

I stopped chewing

Me: Great

Him: She doesn't love me anymore and I can't force her to. I bumped to her at the Tshisa nyama, she was with her boyfriend. She seemed happy and didn't care about me, So why should I stress myself about someone who doesn't think about me or miss me?

Me: You will be alright wena mntase, just take it easy

Him: But I think I'm gonna take a break on relationships, I need to focus on Lubabalo and my future. I'm not getting younger.

Me: That's my big brother!

Him: That saying that says what goes around comes around is true and I'm experiencing it right now. I have played with people hearts now ziyabuya and it feels unfair but it's fair

Me: Don't talk like this

Him: It's true mntase, I messed up many times

Me: Don't cry kaloku

Him: Nxilile! (You drunk)

I giggled

Him: Do you see tear drops?

Me: I'm just joking hawu!

Him: Eat your food!

Me: Okay

We ate and chatted in between, I washed the plates that we were using and the glasses when we were done.

Later on we watched a movie together, my phone rang and it was Thobela.

Me: Hello

Him: Just wanted to say goodnight

Me: Ncoo goodnight, isn't your girlfriend complaining?

Him: She is busy showering

Me: Why don't you join her?

Him: Not tonight

Me: I wonder

Him: Keep on wondering

I giggled, Luvano was looking at me

Me: Mxxm

Him: Goodnight Onika, will call you tomorrow

Me: Okay, goodnight nawe!

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

We hung up

Luu: Who was that?

Me: Thobela

Him: Thobela waphi?

Me: Friend yam

Him: You like male friend isn't it?

Me: Kanene

Him: I'm just asking, I'm not fighting but be careful

Me: Hayi sukaa!

We focused on the movie then we went to sleep afterwards.

PK called later that night, I was still enjoying my sleep.

Me: Hello

I answered in a sleepy voice

Him: I'm sorry to wake you up

Me: Uthini?

Him: I miss you

Me: You called me to tell me that? Like seriously?

Him: I'm outside, I want to see you

Me: I'm sleeping

Him: Only few minutes

Me: I'm sleeping

Him: Please

He kept on nagging, I finally stood up and went to him outside.

Me: Hi

Him: Hello

Then there was awkward silence

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Let's talk about something else

Him: Okay, how was your day?

Me: Was okay and yours?

Him: It was not

Me: Okay

Him: You not gonna even ask why?

Me: If you wanted me to know you would have told me

Him: Did you meant what you said earlier on, about not trusting me again?

Me: I meant it, I will never trust you again.

Him: I said I'm sorry

Me: I accept but don't trust you anymore...

Him: So how do you love someone you don't trust?

Me: reg!

Him: What can I do to gain your trust again?

Me: Nothing don't even bother....

He sighed

Me: Anyways let's talk about something else

Him: Yhoo!

Me: What?

Him: Nothing

Me: Okay

We chatted about something else, we end up going to his place and I spent the night there.

I woke up early the following morning, I dressed up and woke him up.

Him: What time is it?

Me: 4 am

Him: I will take you home on my way to work please go back to sleep.

Me: What if my parents-

Him: Your parents will arrive at the afternoon there is no way they can arrive past 8.

I went back to bed and I slept, we woke up later at 7 am. We both quickly showered and went back to the bedroom.

As I was dropping my towel so that I can lotion my body.

I felt his hand holding on my breast and his warm breath on my neck.

Me: You gonna be late for work

Him: That's not a train's mess

Me : You gonna lose your job

He turned me around and started kissing me, he quickly lay me on top of the bed when he was about to enter, I stopped him.

Me: Condom

Him: Come on baby, Condom again?

Me: Yes

Him : Till when are we gonna use a condom?

Me: We gonna use a condom starting now and we will never stop using it

Him: You kidding me

Me: Kaloku, you sleeping with all the Ladies in P. E awuna ntanga!

I could see he was getting pissed

Him: Mxxm

He stood up ,went to take a condom and came back.

He took me home later on, I got home. Luvano was angry, he was shouting.

Him: Where you coming from?

Me: PK

Him: Didn't you guys broke up like in yesterday

Me: We back together now

Him: But still that doesn't mean you should go without telling me!

Me: I'm sorry

He went on and on, giving me a headache.

Mom and Dad arrived later on, Lubabalo was happy to see his father, crying for him.

Mom: Amen

She clapped once after handing him to Luvano and he started cuddling with him.

Mom: I'm tired yhoo

Dad: I just want to rest

He walked upstairs and Mom followed him.

I went to the kitchen and started cooking supper.

We ate later on and I did the dishes as soon as everyone finished eating.

Couple of days later...

The school holidays were over, it was back to school. I was sad about going back to East London.

I was leaving early that day, Luvano took me to the bus station then PK arrived later on. Luvano said his goodbye and left us.

PK : I'm gonna miss you

Me: Me too

We chatted as we were waiting for the bus and we were in a cosy position.

My bus arrived and we kissed one more time and I left.

I arrived at East London, I first went to knock at Thobela's apartment and he opened.

Me: I'm back

He smiled

Him: I have been waiting for you yhoo! I missed you rhaa!

We hugged

Him: Go put your bag and come back.

I did as he told me, the door was locked, so I used my key, I went inside.

"Who is that? " Asked Vuvu, I opened her room door.

Me: Kanti..... U khona

I slowly said the last words, Her face wss swollen and her left eye was closed. She looked really bad

To be continued

Insert 45

"OMG! are you okay? "

I asked as I was walking inside.

Her: It's nothing, I was mugged

Me: Oh shame man

Her : Luckily I didn't have anything with me , they just beat me up

Me: Sorry chomi!!

Her : No it's fine, I'm gonna be okay.

Me: Poor thing

I went to put my bag at my room then I went back to Vuvu's room.

Her : How was the holiday?

Me: It was okay but with some drama

Her: What drama?

Me: PK's is cheating and my brother broke up with his baby Mama

Her: Haibo usekhona umntu ungajolelwayo? (Is there someone who is not cheated)

Me: You just sound like my brother

Her : It's true

Me: By the way how was your holiday?

Her : Okay

Me: Haibo didn't you miss your family?

Her: I didn't go home

Me: Why?

Her : I was not in the mood, I just sent them money

Me: Sent them money? Uphangelaphi na wethu? (Where you working?)

Her: Sabs gave me some money to send home

Me: Haibo ain't your parents working?

Her: My father died 10 years ago, he had cancer. My mother lost her Job 2 years ago, so I'm the bread winner.

Me: Shame man, I didn't know ...

Her : Yeah and I have 3 siblings... hard it's not easy

Me: How old are they?

Her : The last born is 13 , the others are 15 and 17

Me: Oh okay

Her: One of them is blind, she attends at a special school.

Me: Oh shame, How old is she?

Her: 15 , she is so sweet and I Love Her the most

Me: Ncoo

We chatted till I heard a knock

Me: Expecting someone ?

She shook her head, I stood up and went to open the door.

It was Thobela

Him: Have you forgot about me

I heat my head with my hand as a sign of "I forgot "

Me: Sorry man

Him: It's pretty clear you didn't miss me Me: Hayi kengoku (Like seriously?)

Him: Then what took you so long?

Me: No man, Vuvu was mugged

Him: Oh shame

Me: She looks horrible!!!! Her face... Oh my God! How can people be so cruel ?

Him: Yhoo

Me: So why don't you join us for supper tonight?

Him: Who will cook?

Me: Me of course

He pulled a funny

Me: Excuse me, I can cook!!!!

Him: Didn't say you can't

Me: I'm gonna show you Bonanje

Him: Heee

Me: You underestimate me wena!

He giggled

Him: So should I bring?

Me: Nothing

Him: I will bring wine

Me: Hahaha wine? Haibo only white people are into wines

Him: That's your opinion

Me: By the way I don't drink

Him: Hahaha don't lie

Me: Nyani (really)

Him: You mean like you never tasted alcohol in your life?

Me: I had before but abandilungela (Did work for me)

Him: Njani? (How?)

Me: Please promise you won't laugh

Him: I promise

Me: I do crazy things

Him: Like?

Me: I strip

He giggled

Me: Yabonake! (See!)

Him: I'm sorry, Uthini apha kum? (What you saying to me?) uthi you like to show some skin? Tshisaaaa!

Me: Uright, make fun!

He giggled and started poking me

Me: Ndiyekkeeeeeeee! (Leave me alone)

He giggled

Him: Did you know that you look more beautiful when you angry?

A smile tried to escape but tried to hide it.

Me: Go, I will call you when I'm done

Him: You chasing me away?

Me: Yes, go

I said as I pushed him backwards to the door

Him: I'm sorry Oniza Kaloku

Me: Bye!

I shut the door

Him: Usile kodwa! (you rude)

He yelled and I totally ignored him

There was not enough food to cook a full meal so, I just made spaghetti with mince.

Luckily there was a red velvet cake at the fridge but it was not my favorite, I liked carrot cake.

When I was done cooking, I went to check on Vuvu.

Me: You still okay?

Her: I'm fine

Me: Thobela is joining us for supper

Her: Who is Thobela now?

Me: You know him wethu

Her: I'm sorry, I won't join you

Me: Haibo Why?

Her: I'm not in the mood for extra company, I'm sorry next time friend

Me: Okay I understand

Her: Is this Thobela guy your new boyfriend?

Me: No!

Her: What is he then?

Me: He is my friend

Her: Oh Hamba friend !

Me: Anyways I will bring your food

Her: Okay

I dished out for the three of us then I brought Vuvu's at her room.

Her: Enkosi

Me: Sure ...and shout if you need anything

Her: Okay

I took a shower and wore my pyjama, gown and slippers. I called Thobela and told him to come over.

As I was about to take a seat, He knocked. I opened the door

Him: You smell fresh

Me: I just took a bath

Him: Oh okay

He came in and I closed the doors.

" I brought some wine "

Me: Like seriously? You have money to waist

I said as I handed him his plate

Him: How?

Me: Ain't wines expensive and all that?

I took a seat next to him

Him: No, not at all

Me: How much did it cost?

Him: R25

Me: Like seriously? You lying

Him: Serious

Me: What kind of wine is that?

Him: It's a Sweet rosè , Saint clere

Me: As if I know

Him: It's affordable and it's 7% alcohol... Ayinxilisi

Me: But it's still alcohol

Him: Try it, it only makes you tipsy

Me: Okay

He stood up and went to the kitchen

" Do you have wine glasses? "

Me: A. A!

Him: Okay!

He came back with two normal glasses, he opened the bottle and poured for both of us.

We ate and chat in between

Him: How was P. E?

Me: Okay wethu

Him: I thought you gonna say, "Yhooo bezivora! (I had fun)

Me: Hahaha why?

Him: Ziyakhipha kwelacala (It's fun that side)

Me: My father is a pastor ayikho lomana soup (There is no freedom)

Him: My father is also a pastor, he is always preaching every time we meet.

Thobela the Bible says this, the Bible says that! " yhuuu it's boring! I'm just glad I don't live with him!

I giggled

Me: Sounds just like my father Yhooo!

Him: Yhoo!!!! Anyways, are you enjoying the wine?

Me: It's nice yazi... I think I like it

I said as I was looking at the glass

Him: I knew you will like it!

We chilled and talked almost the whole night. He left around 12 am, I then went to sleep.

Few weeks later....

A received a call early in the morning, it was from my brother.

Me: Tom

Him: Jerry

Me: What made you call me early this morning?

Him: Can I tell you a secret?

He was whispering

Me: What?

I whispered too

Him: Yhoo Tom, I don't know how to tell you this...lyandoyikisa (It's scaring me)

Me: Speak now

We were whispering

Him: I think Old'lady is pregnant

Me: What?????

I sat up straight

Him: Yhoo Old'lady is embarrassing us

Me: Tell me you joking already!!

Him: Hee, Why would I joke about that? Me: You mean like my mother is going to have a baby like umntana?

Him: That's what I'm telling you!

Me: Hehake! How did you know?

Him : She is acting strange, moody, vomiting all that signs ukhe ubone?

Me: Hee Andisenantloni (I'm embarrassed)

Him: You have no idea!

Me: Ngumntana amkhathalele Ngantoni at that age?

Him: Ask again, She is just embarrassing us yhoo.

Me: Amen!!

I woke up later on and prepared for school.

PK called as I was exiting the house

Me: Hello

Him: Hello?

Me: Baby

Him: Sounds better

Me: Eshee

Him: Anyways what you up too?

Me: On my way to school wena?

Him: I'm about to go to work, was just missing you

Me: Ncoo

Him: I'm coming to see you Friday

Me: This coming Friday?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay

We chatted for a little while then we hung up.

To be continued...

Insert 46

Few days later....

I was busy studying in my room and Vuvu was doing the same at Her room. The weather was sunny outside, my window was open receiving fresh air.

As I was studying, I received a knock at the door, I thought it was Vuvu.

" Come in " I said without lifting up my head.

The door slowly opened, I slowly lifted up my head since the person didn't say a single word.

I smile appeared on my face as soon as I saw that it was PK.

Me: I was not expecting you so early

Him: I left early in the morning

I stood up and went to hug him

Him: I really missed you

Me: I missed you too

We kissed

"Yoyo! " yelled Vuvu

Me: Yes

Her : I will be back, I'm taking a walk

Me: Sure

"You still live with her? "

Me: Yes

Him: I don't trust that girl

Me: Don't worry she ain't no harm to me

Him: But still!

Me: Hayi wethu!

I took his small sport bag and placed it inside the wardrobe.

He removed his shoes and lied down, because he was tired.

I continued with what I was doing, until I heard a knock on the door.

I closed my textbook and dragged my feet to the door.

I opened the door and was shocked to see Thobela I don't know why.

Him: Hello

He walked inside, I scratched my head as I closed the door.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah

I said as I was faking a smile

Him: Let's go out tonight

Me: I'm sorry not tonight

Him: Haibo Why?

Me: My boyfriend is here

Him: Oh

Me: I promise I will make it up to you, what about we go watch a movie next week?

Him: Nah, it's cool

His facial expressions had DISAPPOINTED written in BOLD.

Me: Like seriously

Him: Will see you

He walked out leaving with a question mark.

I kind of felt bad, I don't know why.

I just snapped out of it and started making something to eat, Sausage and bread.

Vuvu arrived later talking on the phone, she hung up after few seconds.

Her: You shouldn't have cooked, Sabelo is bringing us something to eat.

Me: Kaloku I have a visitor

Her: Oh yeah, I totally forgot

Me: Yeah

She looked stressed

Me: Are you okay?

Her: I'm okay

Me: Come on, I can see you not okay. What's up?

Her: Okay!!! My mother needs more money.

Me: Where are you supposed to get money? You not working

Her: Sometimes I wish I could just disappear into thin air.

Me: Don't say that

Her: I wish I could give my life to someone else...I hate my life but I'm doing it for my family

Me: Why don't you get yourself a waitering job? Not sleeping with man for money

Her: It's easy for you to say

Me: I can go with you and look for one.

Her: I need money now!!!!

Me: How much do you want?

Her: Are you gonna give me?

Me: Just tell me how much you need

Her: R2000

Me: Yhoo, it's a lot. Bazoyithini?

Her: My siblings need new school shoes and socks and other expenses

Me: Promise me you will leave this life and I'm gonna help you out and you will look for a Job

Her: You won't be able to, you will get tired like everyone else.

Me: I won't

Her: Will you be able to pay my school fees? Pay for my sisters special school? Buy grocery for my siblings? Etc? I thought as much!!!

Then she left me standing there with no words to utter.

I switched off the stove and served PK the food in bed.

Him: Enkosi

He said as he sat up straight, I went to fetch mine then i sat next to him.

Him: Baby

Me: Mmmm?

Him: I got a Job in Cape Town

Me: Wow, So that means you leaving?

Him: Yes I'm leaving next month, it's the same company but will be working with the store manager, doing the same tasks his doing and the wages will also increase.

Me: You lucky you know

Him: How?

Me: You only 25

Him: It's not a Wow job but I just want the experience

Me: But still

Him: yeah

Me: So what about us?

Him: What do you mean?

Me: You will be leaving in Cape Town, I won't see you.

Him: Don't worry, you will come visit me on holidays

Me: You know how my family is

Him: You come up with something and lie

Me: Eshee

Him: Please

Me: I will see that time

Him: Please

Me: So that means I won't see you this summer?

Him: No, this thing is temporary, I will be back after two years baby

Me: You talk like Two years is two months

Him: Come on, you here in East London. We don't regularly see each other.

Sorry something came up will continue tomorrow early morning when everyone is sleeping.

Continuation

I just looked at my plate and focus on the food.

Him: Baby it's not like we breaking up, we will see each other kwelihlobo.

Me: Cape Town is far

Him: But it's not overseas

Me: I know you will find someone else and forget about me

He stopped eating

Him: That's not true

Me: it is

Him: Baby I love you

Me: You cheated on me what would stop you now?

He held both my hands

Him: Please look at me

I slowly lifted up head and looked at him

Him: I Love you and I really mean it. I won't replace you with anyone

Me: If you say so

Him: Come on baby

Me: I will just open a room of disappointment, because I don't know you might come back talking which language.

Him: You being unfair

Me: Do you blame me?

Him: Onika....

Me: Phakamani

Him: Ndicela undithembe mfethu (please trust me)

Me: I can't Phakamani, I will just hope for the best

Him: I will prove it to you

Me: Will see

Him: Wow, you really don't trust me

Me: Why shouldn't I?

Him: I know ndikumoshile (I wronged you) but this time I mean business

Me: You always say that

Him: I don't know what to say or do for you to believe me.

Me: Action speaks louder than words

Him: I will prove to you

Me: Whatever!

We continued to eat, after eating I took the plates and went to put them at the kitchen.

The following morning...

The wind was blowing and it was cloudy outside.

I woke up a little later than usual, PK's arms were wrapped around me. I slowly removed them then got up.

"Where you going? " Asked PK

Me: It's half 10 Phakamani

Him: So? It's not like you have somewhere to go

Me: I'm hungry

Him: Come eat me

Me: Tell me you joking

He giggled, I went to the bathroom and did my morning hygiene routine and PK went after me.

I made cereal for the both of us as he was busy at the bathroom.

I quickly made the bed and opened the window for fresh air then closed it after few minutes.

PK's phone rang

"Phakamani iPhone! " I yelled

"Answer it! " He replied

It was an unsaved number.

Me: Phakamani's phone hello

Caller: Uphi uPhakamani?

It was a female voice

Me: He is at the bathroom

Caller: So you must be the girlfriend?

Me: Yes, You can leave a message or call him back after 5 minutes

Her: It's fine I will call him back, Just tell him Mihlali called

Me: Okay

She hung up

He walked in immediately after she hung up.

Me: Mihlali called

Him: Uthini?

He asked as he was walking to the wardrobe

Me: She didn't leave a message, call her

Him: Okay

I walked to the kitchen and ate my cereal, he joined me later.

Him: Why don't we go out today?

Me: It's windy outside njena

Him: So?

Me: Why don't we just order pizza and wine.

He stared at me

Me: What?

Him: Wine?

Me: Ewe

Him: Ndizosela nawe ngoku? (Am I gonna drink with you now?)

Me: Ewe tshini (Yes)

Him: Bhanxekile (You mad)

Me: Haibo, that cheap one baby. It has lesser alcohol volume, 7 %

Him : Where did you drink it?

Me: Someone once bought it and it's sweet

Him: Who bought you?

Me: A friend of mine

Him : Uzoyisela naye not nam! (You will drink it with your friend not with me)

Me: Like seriously? Uyakwazi uzenza ixhego kanjani! (You can act like a old man sometimes)

Him: Okay, One glass qha!

Me: Two qha

Him: Amen!

Me: Heee

Him: Let's go and buy this wine of yours

Me: Yepppppy

Him: ...

I quickly changed to something nicer.

As we were walking to the car, we bumped to Thobela.

Me: Hi

He just looked at me and didn't utter a single word, I really got worried.

We got in the car and drove, we drove to his friends house eMdantsane kwa 13 at the shacks side and there was no electricity there.

We got to this house, his friend had a nice car but the house was not nice.

We got out of the car, and went to knock . He was holding my hand and the neighbors were staring.

A skinny guy opened the door, he was topless only wearing a jean and sandals.

"Njayamiii! " (My Dog!)

He shouted as they hand shaked.

PK : Yizo!!!!

Guy: Zikhiphani?

PK : Zonke zingo Line Njayamiii!!!! Ndiyabona nawe uTop!

Guy: Introduce me to this beautiful lady PK : Baby this is my friend Bulelani but everyone call him Ma7

Me: Hello ma7

Him: Khancume ndibone! (Smile so I can see)

PK : Kancane!

Ma7: Just want to see

PK : See what? Voetsek

Ma7: I was joking

PK : By the way, this is ONIKA my girlfriend entlek (actually) Mamekhaya (My wife)

Ma7: Yizo lezo!!!(That's it!) Ubambe yona, Umhle Umhle!!!! (You made the right choice, she is beautiful)

I stood there awkwardly.

We went inside, I sat on a wooden chair.

I took out my phone while they were talking in a language I didn't understand.

Some beautiful girl walked in, Ma7 introduced me to her, she was his girlfriend .

PK : Baby

Me: Mmm?

Him: We will be back now now

Me: Where you going?

Him: We will be back

Me: I want to go with

Him: You safe here nothing will happen

He planted a kiss on my lips then he left.

Ntosh: Uyayithanda indoda

Me: Hehake

Her : They will be back

Me: I know

Her: You lucky to have him

Me: Why?

Her: He has money yhooo and do whatever he likes, he is not scared of anyone!
He has that powers.

Me: He is not that rich lol.

Her: But still

Me: Hayi sukaa

They came back later on.

PK : Sorry we took long

Me: Masambe

PK : It's still early

Me: Well, take me home

Ma7 : Don't be like this

Ntosh: Haibo girl...

Me: Fine

They made fire and played music at Ma7's car. I noticed that bayayithanda injezu.

Ntosh spiced the meat and placed it on the coals after a while. They were drinking and more people joined them.

Usile ke when he is drunk, a guy can not even look at me , or ask anything. He will cause a scene, I was so irritated and told him I want to go home.

We drove home, I was crossing my fingers because he was drunk.

We arrived s, I told myself he is not getting any tonight.

He begged me until he fell asleep then I peacefully fell asleep.

We woke up the following morning.

Me: You are rude when you drunk, you will get hurt one day

Him: ...

Me: I will never go out with you when you drinking. You humiliating!!!

Him: Xolo (Sorry)

He said as he was walking put the room.

I angrily got up and made the bed then opened the window.

I went to the kitchen and found Vuvu crying.

Me: Vuyokazi

She didn't reply but continued crying

Me: Vuvu, what's going on?

Her: Our house burned down this morning !

Me : Oh my God! What happened? Did anyone get hurt?

Her: My younger sister is in hospital! Me: I'm sorry

I pulled her closer and squeezed her tight

Me: Shiiii

Her: : Everything burnt ! We back to square one! My Sister Onika!

To be continued...

Insert 47

I tried not to cry but my emotions got the best out of me.

PK walked in while we were still in each others embrace and Vuvu broke out of the embrace.

Her eyes were swollen

Me: Everything will be fine

I said while I wiped her tears with my hands, holding on her cheek bones.

Me: God is in control

PK walked out with a glass of cold water from the fridge, he was suffering from a heavy hangover.

Her : I don't believe in God!

Me: Don't ever say that! God really exist and watch over us!

Her: Where was he when my father past away? Where was he when my mother lost her Job? Where was he when our house was burning? Why did he let my Sister burn?

She was talking out of bitterness, her eyes were filled with hatred and tears and her lips were shivering from anger.

Me: He was there!

Her : He was There???? Then why did he allow all to happen??? Why???? I don't believe in God .

Me: There is a song that says, (Singing) If you think God isn't there, take your time and just look around. Up in the mountains, down to the valley, just take your time and look around!!!!

Her : Why is he hating me so much???

Me: God doesn't hate you, it's just that he doesn't go where he is not invited.

Her : What do you mean?

Me: His ears are not deaf that he can not hear you and He is not blind. He sees everything and help those who call upon him. I know this may sound stupid and untrue but it is true. God is waiting for you to open up to him and put your trust in him. He will never help you unless you ask him to.

Her: What do you know???? Vele you gonna speak like this because you come from a rich family.

Me: If money could buy anything, I would be the happiest girl in the world but unfortunately money can't buy Love and happiness!!! So don't judge me by my cover page!

She kept quiet

Me : I know you hurting but turn to God and he will take away your pain and burdens, but only if you allow him to.

Her: How do I reach out for him

Me: He is everywhere, just go on your knees and talk to him

Her: I can't pray

Me: As long as you can speak, you can pray. There is no formula in prayer just speak your heart...Say what you want to say and you will see!!

Her: I hear you

Me: (Singing) Owuqalile umsebenzi, uzowufeza empilweni yakho, Nobu'Sathana ehlasela, Ndiyamethemba owase Calvery ! Akasoze akudele, owakufela eCalvery!

(The One who has began the work in your life, He will finish it and the one who died for you in Calvery will never Leave or forsake you.)

Tears flowed even more down her cheeks to her neck.

She pulled me closer and gave me a hug. She was sobbing, I brushed her back trying to shush her.

Me: Everything will be fine as long as you trust in God. He is Jehovah JIREH the Lord that provides, He is Jehovah RAPHA the Lord that heals, He is Jehovah NISSI our lord banner, He is Jehovah SHALOM our Lord of peace, He is Jehovah TSIDKENU our Lord Righteousness, He is Jehovah RAAH our lord Shepard and He is Jehovah SHAMMAH, He is always present. Just have faith in God!!!! Nothing is impossible with him, he was there at the beginning, he created us and he knows the plans he have for us, give him time.

We prayed after that then went to our separate rooms.

PK was laying on his stomach facing by the window, where the wind was blowing the curtain back and forth.

Me: Baby

He didn't answer

Me: PK

Still he didn't answer , I just raised my voice and yelled.

Me: PHAKAMANI MZWEKHAYA PONI!!!

He quickly lifted up his head with a frowned face, he really hated the Mzwekhaya name

Him: Hayi sekutheni!!!

Me: You were not answering me

Him: Was I dancing or sleeping???

Me: Hehake

Me: Don't ever call me like that as if you calling a mad man!!!

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Buzothini?

Me: Nevermind

Him: You just woke me up, just for fun?

Me: Vuvu's house burned this morning

Him: Oh

Me: Everything burned and her sister is in hospital!

Him: Shame, I was wondering why you were so cosy when I walked in the kitchen.

Me: I feel sorry for her yazi? I wish I can do something to help her. I don't want her to go sleep with man for money. I'm sure she is stressing about her family!

Him: Why don't you donate with building material?

Me: Where will I get such money?

Him: Talk to your parents, I'm sure they will love to help

Me: You right yazi, I will call them

Him: I can just help with grocery for a month, will talk with my bosses so Game could donate.

Me: Thank you baby

Him: How many siblings does she have?

Me: 4 , 5 I'm not sure but one is blind and attend a special school for blind children.

Him: Shame

Me: Yeah, poor Vuyokazi. She has to take care of them, it's stressful

Him: Yes it is!

He placed me on top of his chest and played with my hair.

Him: Baby

Me: Mmmm?

Him: I Love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Can you please do me a favour

Me: Listening

Him: Take care of yourself and focus on your studies .

Me: I am njena

Him: Please don't hesitate to call when you need anything..

Me: I have parents njena

Him: I know but don't want you to go after men just because they buy you expensive stuff. I can afford them just name what you want and I will do it for you. I will be one phone call away

Me: Uyithethiswa yintoni lento uyithethayo? (Why speaking like this?)

Him: Because I love you

Me: Ncoo

Him: One more thing

Me: What?

Him: Please wait for me, I will come back.

Me: As long as you do the same

Him: I will

Later on...

I was busy cooking at the kitchen, Vuvu walked in she was coming from Sabelo.

Her: I have good news

Me: Listening

Her: I'm leaving tomorrow and Sabelo is talking me.

Me: Wow

Her: He said I must not worry to much, he will take care of my financial stress. He will build us a new house with furniture and buy my siblings and mother New clothes .

Me: Wow, he is for the keeps

Her: He is very supportive but he said No more clubbing for me and I should focus on my education.

Me: He is such a nice guy

Her : Yeah I guess

Someone knocked at the door,

Her : I will get it!

PK was seriously busy on his laptop at the lounge.

"ONIKA Thobela is here "

She yelled, my heart started to beat fast. I stirred the sauce that was at the stove.

"Onika "

I slowly turn around and faked a smile

Me: Thobela

Vuvu walked in

Her: Where have been?

Thobela : Was busy with something

Her: Oh, I hear you

Thobela : Was just missing you guys, so I decided to come check on you guys.

Her: Ncoo

Thobela : Vuvu are you alright?

Her: I'm fine

Thobela : But your eyes tells another story

Her : Our house burned this morning and my Sister is in hospital.

Thobela : Sorry

He pulled her closer, I just stood there awkwardly.

PK walked in yawning

Him: Where is there food getting ready? I'm hungry

Me: In 5

Him: Okay

Me : Why you so serious on your laptop? it's Sunday!!

Him: I was checking my email

Me: On a Sunday?

Him: Haibo why not????

Me: Okay

Vuvu: You rude Onika! Why don't you introduce Thobela to your boyfriend.

I smiled in pretence

Me: PK this is Thobela my friend

PK : Okay

Me: Thobela this is PK my boyfriend, the one I told you about.

Him: Okay

He was looking me deep in my eyes, making me feel uncomfortable.

I finished cooking and we ate. After eating Vuvu and Thobela did the dishes.

PK : Why was this Thobela guy staring at you like that

Me: How?

Him: Don't act dump

Me: What you talking about?

He walked in

Him: Onika I'm leaving now. Thank you for the food!!! Will see you tomorrow

Me: Sure

PK was looking at us, Thobela left the we went to sleep.

To be continued...

Insert 48

"I'm still in East London... I will be in P.E by this afternoon.... No I can't come to work today...Sorry Sir that's impossible... Okay, will see you tomorrow, yes...."

I was woken by PK's conversation the following morning. I turned around and faced by his side.

He finished his conversation and hung up.

Me: Were you supposed to be working today?

Him: Yes but hayi wethu!

He got on top of me, we were both still naked.

Me: Do I have to remind you every time nge condom?

Him: Haibo baby

Me: I was serious when I said, we will be using protection every time

Him: It's not like I was not using protection with her

Me: I don't have proof

Him: I won't just buy Condoms just for fun

Me: I'm sorry baby, I don't want to take risks

Him: So you really don't trust me

Me: Honestly, I don't trust anymore

Him: Like seriously?

Me: Do you blame me?

Him: Baby come on

Me: Are we having sex or not?

He angrily stood up and went to search for a condom. He came back and put it on.

He got between my legs then slowly went in.

I moaned out of pleasure, he covered my mouth.

Him: We not alone

I giggled then he continued, moving back and forth .

My phone rang I ignored, it kept on ringing and ringing but we totally ignored it.

After the first round, he placed me on his chest.

Him: I'm gonna miss you

Me: I'm gonna miss you too

He played with my hands.

Him: Baby

Me: Mmmm?

Him: If I would ask you for a favour would you do it for me?

Me: Will depend

Him: If I would ask you to give me a baby would you???

Me: Like ndimithe?

Him: Yes

Me: My parents would kill me, OH my father would skin me alive

Him: I will be gone for two years baby then when I come back, we can start making a baby.

Me: I will be 20 years that time...

Him: Please think about it baby

Me: I don't want a baby

Him: Baby , I want to start a family when I come back and I want to start with you.

Me: I'm not ready for that Phakamani, I'm still young

Him: I know

Me: And-

Him: I love you Onikayo, you the reason I believed in love again. Every time I look at you, my heart beats abnormally... I don't even imagine loving someone else again. I know you may think I'm lying but I'm gonna prove it and that's a promise!

Me: Will see

Him: Will start testing for HIV every three months, starting today.

Me: Mmmm

Him : I'm serious

Me: Okay

Him: I have something for you

Me: What is it?

Him : Close your eyes

Me: For ntoni?

Him: Just close your eyes

Me: Okay

Him: No Krobingz

Me: Okay

After a few minutes, I felt something cold being place around my neck.

Him: You can open now

First thing, I felt my neck then gazed at the necklace. It was a silver necklace with a diamond ring.

Me: It's beautiful

Him: You like it?

Me: I love it!!!

He smiled

Him: I placed that ring as a promise ring that I'm gonna come back to you and start a new life with you. I promise to Love you and that I will never leave you no matter what!!!!!!!!!!

Tears formed on my eyes

Him: Ndiyakuthanda Marhadebe, Mabungane, Mashwabada, Mafuza zifulele... Hlubikazi lam elihle!!!!

Tears escaped

Him: I know I have disappointed you many times and I'm not that perfect boyfriend but my promise to you is to love and cherish you. I really want to make you Umakoti wase Mamfeneni, koLisa, KoJambase!!!!

Me: I love you too

Him: Do you promise to wait for me???

Me: I promise

Him: I love you

He softly placed his lips on mine

Me: I love you too...

" Are you still sleeping? "

Yelled Vuyokazi as she was knocking at my door.

I cleared my throat then replied .

" I'm coming "

PK : Are you gonna leave me like this?

Me: I'm coming

I said as I was giggled

I reached for my gown then went out.

Vuvu was sitting at the lounge

Me: Morning

Her: Morning

Me: Buzothini?

Her: I'm leaving at 1pm, Sabelo will come fetch me.

Me: Okay, I'm coming with

Her: Really?

Me: Yes

Her: Thank you

Me: You welcome

She hugged me tight

Her: Mmmm before I forget.... What's up with you and Thobela?

Me: Nothing why?

Her: Is it me or what? The way he looks at you... Its different man, it's like he is in love with you or something.

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Her: I'm just saying...

Later on...

It was round 11am, PK and I were going to the Pharmacy to take an HIV test.

Him: Ain't you nervous?

Me: I am tshini

Him: Don't worry I'm clean.

Me: I don't have proof

Him: Don't worry baby, I'm careful when it comes to that.

Me: Okay

We arrive there, we did the tests, I was scared I don't want to lie but luckily the results came back Negative .

We were both relieved and we came back happy.

Him: Told you

Me: Whatever

Him: The next date December baby

Me: Okay

Him: Will go together

Me: Kodwa you will be in Cape Town?

Him: I will send you money to come

Me: My parents will never approve that

Him: We will figure something out don't worry

Me: Okay baby

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

We arrived home but he didn't stay he just left.

I just packed my stuff then we waited for Sabelo.

Me: Won't your mother be asking many questions about Sabelo?

Her: No, I'm 21 years

Me: Okay

Sabelo arrived later on around 1pm, he was in a hurry.

Him: Are you guys ready?

We nodded then we left .

We arrived there later on, her family was given a small shack by the neighbour.

It was empty with only a mattress and few blankets.

The children were playing outside , but they ran inside as soon as they saw us.

We greeted and Vuyokazi introduced us.

Her: We hungry Vuyokazi, we don't have food. I told you long time that you must leave this Stupid school and find work!!!!

Her: But Mama I'm trying my best

Her: Look around, we have nothing. Were do you think we will get money to build a new house, buy furniture and food while you still busy waisting your time with school???? I need money mna!!!! You have to take care of your sisters, you passed matric neh? What more do you want?

Her: But Mama I send you money every month

Her: Hayisuka!!! I want you here full time!!!!

Sabelo: Don't worry Mama, I'm gonna build you a big house with full furniture and I'm gonna buy you grocery every month and electricity. Vuyokazi will continue with school, don't worry you won't lack anything while I'm still around.

Her: U don't care! As long as I will get what I want and my children will not go to bed hungry

Sabelo : I promise Mama

Her: Okay , but I'm hungry now as we speak!!!!!!

Sabelo: Baby let's go and buy take aways

Vuvu : I want to see Sihle first

Mama: We will go tomorrow morning

Vuvu : How is she?

Mama: The doctor say she is seriously injured. I was there this morning, she is bad, I couldn't stay longer

Vuvu : How bad?

Mama: Am a Doctor???? Don't ask me too much questions just go see yourself.

Vuvu: Mama why do you hate me so much????

Her: Don't ask me shit shit nonsense, just bring me food, I'm hungry!

Vuvu : What caused the fire?

Her: Andiyazi!!!!

Sabelo : Baby let's go and buy food

I could see tears forming on Vuvu's eyes.

Me: Let's go nyani

Vuvu: I'm coming back

She said to her sisters, they were beautiful beqolile.

We left

Me: Don't cry Vuvu, your Mom is under stress

Her: She will never love me, no matter what I do

Sabelo: She will come around, Onika is right. She is under stress, wipe your tears.

The following morning...

Sabelo spent the night at the car, while we squeezed each other at double bed mattress.

We went to the hospital early in the morning. We received sad news as we arrived there, the doctor told us that they did everything they could to save her life but she didn't make it.

Tears slowly flowed down her cheeks and she slowly went down.

My heart broke into million pieces, I just saw tears flowing as well.

To be continued...

Insert 49

"Why why why????? "

She said as Sabelo was trying to lift her up.

"I rather also die... Why didn't God just take me????? "

Tears were running down, she was fighting Sabelo.

Sabs : Baby don't say that

Her : She didn't deserve to die like this...NO!!!!!!

I just couldn't held back my tears anymore , I release them and they flowed like running water. Sabelo was just confused, didn't know what to do.

We went back home later on to tell the bad news.

"How is she doing??? Is she gonna be fine????? When can we go and see her??? "

Asked one of her sisters as we walked inside the house.

Vuyokazi just released tears and Sabelo pulled her and place here on his chest and brushed her back.

I just look the other way, I wanted to cry but just held back my tears this time.

Mama: Kwenzeka ntoni?????

She asked as she stood up from the mattress.

Mama : Ndiyabuza Kwenzeka ntoni!!!!!!!

Vuvu : She didn't make it Mama.... She is gone..... My sister is Gone!!!!

Mama : No No No..... Hayi hayi Hayiii

She said moving backwards , looking for a thing to lean on, her hands moving in the air.

I quickly went to her rescue and held her before she fell down.

The others started crying and everyone cried in the room except me and Sabelo.

They were giving each other turns crying out of agony. I felt my heart breaking literally, I had a lump on my throat , tears were also forming.

Mama: Vuyokazi ndifuna umntanam!!!! Umenzeni?????????

Her: Mama?

She said with a shocked facial expression.

Mama: I know you killed her didn't you?????

Vuvu couldn't utter further words out of shock...

Mama: Why Vuyokazi?????

Her: Yintoni lento ndakwenza yona Mama that you hate me so much?????

She asked on a low tone accompanied by tears.

Mama: You killed my husband, now my child????? You are a witch just like your Mother!!!!!!

Vuvu : How could you say that??

Mama : Your mother was trying to take my man away from me but didn't work out... Instead she died and I had to look after you!!!!!!!

Vuvu just stood there speechless

Mama: Now you want to kill my child?????

Vuvu: How can you be so wicked?

"Nantsika... call the police!!! "

She ordered to one of her children

Vuvu : Mama

Mama: I'm gonna call the police and they gonna arrest you for killing my child and my Husband... Yhuuu kudala ndikunyamezele!!!!

Vuvu: Mama why you doing this????

Vuvu was crying with a confused face

Mama: I'm not your Mother!!! I don't want to ever see you again , you are a witch!!!!!! And I know you here to kill me now and that won't happen, I'm protected by my ancestors, OoFakade bakas'Jadu!!!!

Vuvu : Mama please don't do this

Mama: I wish you died with your mother on that accident!!!! You are evil!!! The police are coming and they will lock you up and I will never see you again rhaaa!!!!

Me: Vuvu let's go

Mama : The Van is coming!!!!!!!!

Vuvu: After everything???

Mama : Witch!!!!

Vuvu : I sacrificed everything for you....why Mama?????

Sabelo pulled her out and I followed

"Hambaniii!!!! " "

She yelled as we got inside the car, Vuvu started sobbing.

Sabelo hugged her and tried to calm her down, then we drove back to East London and arrived later there.

Few days later...

It was a Wednesday morning, I found Vuvu sitting next to the toilet crying as I entered the bathroom.

I slowly walked in surprised

Me: What's going????

Her: My life is a mess

Me: What's going on?

Her: I'm pregnant....

I popped my eyes

Her: I don't have a house, family, I'm pregnant, I sleep with men for money... I just wish I was the one who died on that fire!!!!!!

I kneeled before her

Me: Don't say that

Her: It's true

Me: At least you have Sabelo

Her: It's not his baby

Me: Vuvu

Her : Say it!!!! Vuvu you irresponsible, Whore, bitch.! Say it!!!!

Me: It's not my place to judge

She bowed her head with both hands on her head.

Her: Sabelo is going to kill me Onika!!!!

Me: What you going to do?

Her: I'm gonna abort this baby

Me: Don't do that

Her: I don't have a choice

Me: Please I beg you

Her: You don't understand, Sabelo is going to kill me Onika!!!!!! I'm scared

Me: There must be another way

Her: There is no other way , I know I'm a bad person... I'm sorry my friend.. I'm gonna abort this baby... I'm not asking you to support me.

Even though I didn't like what she was going to do but I had to respect her choice.

Later that day....

Thobela came to visit and I was alone.

Me: Hi

Him:Hi

He went inside

Him: Where is Vuvu?

Me: She went somewhere

Him: Good, I wanted to talk to you

Me: About what?

He took a seat and I slowly sat on the opposite couch.

Him: Please don't take me as a funny person or trying to take advantage....

Me: What is it?

He was playing with his fingers and feet

Him: I tried to hide them but it seemed like the harder I tried to hide them the bigger they grow.

Me: What you talking about?????

Him: I can't keep them anymore and I can't control myself when I'm in front of you.

Me: Thobela you scaring me

Him: I love you Onika.... I really do

I just froze with no words

Him: Please say something....

He said as he was looking at the tiles

Ndaveske ndatshiswa yitoilet

Him: I know you have a boyfriend and I'm not saying you must leave him for me....I was just speaking my heart

Me: I... I...

I didn't know when he stood up I just felt his lips touching mine , my stomach reacted abnormally.

He kissed me and I kissed him back.

I quickly broke the kiss

Me: This is wrong, I love Phakamani

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Please leave

Him: I'm really sorry

Me: I hear you but please leave, I want to be alone

I said as I pushed him to the door then I closed and leaned on it.

Vuyokazi arrived later, she just walked to her room and locked herself.

I knocked to bring her food but she didn't open for me, I let her be and went to my room.

PK called, my heart started to beat fast. It was like he was gonna ask about what happened earlier.

I took a deep breath and answered

Me: Hello

Him: Baby, How are you doing?

Me: I'm good yOu?

Him : I miss you baby

Me: I miss you too

Him: Can I ask for a favour?

Me: Listening

Him: If I send you money to come this side , will you?

Me: Yhuu what if my parents see me?

Him: They won't baby, we will be in doors.

Me: Why don't you come this side?

Him : I'm working this weekend njena

Me: So that means I'm gonna be home alone when you at work?

Him: Please baby

Me: I won't be able to baby.... I'm sorry

Him: Please

Me: Next week

Him: Haibo

Him : This week Ndiyakucela

Me: Okay

We chatted then ndalala, Thobela called but I ignored his calls. I didn't want to speak with him.

To be continued...

Insert 50

"Yoyo....Yoyo.... Yoyo"

Yelled Vuvu's voice while knocking, it's seems like she was knocking for ages but I was hearing her from my sleep.

The next thing I felt her tabbing me

Me: Mmm??

Her: Please wake up

Me: What time is it?

Her: I don't know

Me: It's still night Vuvu, we will talk tomorrow

Her: Please Onika, I can't sleep

She kept on nagging till I finally woke up

Me: What is it?

Her: I'm afraid Onika

Me: Afraid of what????

I asked as I was yawning

Her : The abortion

Me: Then don't do it

Her: Sabelo is gonna kill me if I don't do it

Me: You never know, he might understand

Her: You don't know him Onika, that man can be so cruel...

Me: He is not that bad

Her : He is Onika, do you still remember that day when you came back from East London, when my face was swollen and my whole body was paining???

Me: Yes

Her: It was him, I was never mugged

Me: What???????

Her: His friends told him that they saw me with another man then he proved it.

Me: WTF!!!! He is bad!!!! Ndaveske ndoyika

She started to cry

Her: I'm scared, Onika

I pulled her to my chest and calmed her down.

Me: Why you still with him?

Her: I love him Onika

Me: Does He?

Her: He does

Me: You don't hurt someone you love

Her : Haven't PK hit you before???

Me: No , he just grab me then let me go and walk out when he is really angry

Her: How long have you been dating?

Me: Mmmm....Two years but next month we will be 3 years

Her: And he has never hit you???? Wow

Me: Yes

Her: You lucky girl, keep that man

Me: But yhoo yawathanda amantombaza!!!!

Her: Yhooo is there any man that doesn't cheat???

Me: My brother always say that

Her: You have a brother???

Me: Yes

Her: How old is he????

She asked as she broke from my embrace

Me: 25

Her: Haibo didn't know

I showed her photos on my phone

Her: He is so yummy,

Me: Mxxm, he is not!!!!

Her: Is he single???

Me: Do you want Sabelo to kill my brother?????

Her: Like seriously?

Me: That's true

She pouted

Me: But that's the truth Chomi

Her: Whatever

Me: So what you gonna do?

Her: I'm gonna say it's his

Me: What??????? No, no, no!!!! What if the baby doesn't look like him?

Her: He won't notice that

Me: You playing with fire

Her: What do you suggest me to do?

Me: Tell him the truth

Her: I can't

Me: Don't say I didn't warn you

Her: I'm scared and confused

Me: Just do the right thing

Her: I'm gonna abort it

Me: Your choice

Her: Yes and I made my choice

Me: If it will make you sleep at night then feel free.

She got under the blankets and laid next to me.

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Sorry for what?

Her : For being a bad friend

Me: I don't judge and I don't love you lesser.

Her: You are a good friend

A week later....

I was walking home from school with my headphones on. I felt someone tabbing me on the shoulder, I turned around.

It was Thobela, my heart started to beat so fast and my body was shivering a little.

I removed my headphones

Him: Why you avoiding me????

Me: I'm not

Him: I just want to apologize ONIKA, I feel so bad. I'm sorry for taking advantage of you. I just want our friendship back, I miss talking to you, seeing your smile and hear you laugh.

I promise I will control my feelings, I won't do funny things.

Me: It's okay, we cool

Him: Really?

I nodded

He hugged me , but that hugged felt so amazing. I didn't want him to let me go
I snapped out of it and broke from his embrace.

Him: What you doing this weekend?

He asked as we were entering the compound

Me: I'm going home

Him: Is everything alright back home?

Me: PK wants me to visit him

Him: Oh

We walked in awkwardness

Him: Why don't we play video games today?

Me: Why not

Him: Should I come to your house?

Me: Do we have a TV?

He giggled

Him: Forgot man

Me: I will come to your house

Him: Cool

We then went to our separate ways, I just put down my bag and made myself something to eat.

When I was done, I went to Thobela's place.

I just entered without knocking

He walked out half naked to see who was entering.

I stared at his body without knowing

Him: I'm coming now now

Me: Okay

I sat on the couch and watched what was playing. He came back with the Game set and handed me my controller.

Him: Something to eat?

Me: I just ate

Him: Are you sure?

I nodded

He sat next to me, we started playing.

Him: I'm gonna win this round

Me: Will see

We started playing and he won the first round.

Me: Say it

Him: Sundithuma Kaloku

Me: Let's play, I'm gonna show you

Him: Tshisaaaa

He said while giggling

Me: You think I'm joking

I played so focused , playing with my mouth as well.

He won again , I dropped the controller Me: Mxxm

Him: What did I do?

Me: Don't talk to me

Him: Then why you talking to me?

Me: I'm talking to you because I want to tell you to stop talking to me

Him: You still talking to me

Me: Mxxm

Him: I thought you were not talking to me

I stood up and went to the kitchen to make food

Him: I thought you said you were not hungry

Me: Go to hell Thobela

He giggled , I just ignored him

As I was busy taking out the bread , felt his fingers poking me.

I tried not to laugh but he didn't stop, I had to laugh.

Me: Stop it Thobela

I said as I was laughing out loud.

Him: You still angry????

I was slowly going down and he was not stopping

Me: I'm not angry

Him: Are you sure?

Me: 100%

Him: Good

And he let me go, I was still laughing

Me: You not right

Him: Nangoku! I'm left handed

Me: Mxxm wena!

He was really left handed

Him: What????

Me: You are left handed

He giggled

Him : Tell me something I don't know

Me: Do you also want a sandwich?

Him: Bring the whole loaf and the peanut butter plus neRama

Me: Okay

Him: And make coffee

Me: Okay

He took a tray and placed the bread and spreads then he went to the lounge.

I later joined him with the coffee.

We started eating, we were not shy.

Me: Imnandi lento ndiyitya apha

Him: I know

Me: I never ate bread like this

Him: This was my meal when I was coming from school

Me: It's nice

We ate while chatting in between

Him: Yhuu uyatya mntana ndini

We finished the loaf

Me: Don't lie, I only ate 8 slices and you?

Him: I'm a man kaloku

I giggled

Me: We finished a whole loaf

Him: I'm also shocked

Me: No man that life

Him: That's life nyani, anyways it's not like we are visitors

I giggled

Me: That's true

Him: Ndihluthi nyani

Me: And ndaziva ndiyaphiswa

Him: Sies....

Me: That's natural

Him: Go to the bathroom , I can smell it

Me: Uyaxoka Thobela oh

Him: Yhu yhu yhu mfondini

Me: Mxxm

I stood up and went to the bathroom

"Don't be Loud please! "

He yelled

Me: Go to hell!

I yelled back.

Few days later...

It was Thursday night, I was busy cooking.

Vuvu walked in

Her: I did it

Me: Did what?

Her: I killed my baby

Me: I'm sorry

I was shocked, didn't know what to say

Her: Do you hate me?

Me: Why should I?

Her: Thank you

Me: I'm just being a friend

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

Her: Sabelo asked me to move in with him

Me: And leave me here alone? Never!

Her: He said I must think about it

Me: And?

Her: I don't know

Me: But anyways, it's your decision. Do what makes you happy

Her: Yhoo

Me: Anyways, I'm leaving tomorrow

Her: Where to?

Me: Ku PK

Her : Mmmm.... I'm so jealous

Me: He sent me money for the bus ticket and money to do my hair

Her: Yindoda kodwa leyana

Me: He is just a normal guy

Her: I didn't notice, Sisiwakho! Your hair looks nice

Me: Really?

Her: Yes, he will get jealous

It was a nice two colour boycut

Me: He will vah

Her: Did you buy matching underwear?

Me: It's not necessary

Her: Duh! Haibo mfazi, you have to impress your man for a change

Me: How?

Her: Wear matching underwear and the sexy one's

Me: Then?

Her: And model kaloku ntombi.... Like afike unxibe zona..

Me: Okay

Her: And don't do the usual style, funeke ukhe iziwise phantsi and he will follow you

Me: I will try

Her: Don't try, do it!!!!

Me: Okay

Her: What time is your bus leaving?

Me: 12pm

Her: Fantastic, we will go shopping tomorrow morning before you leave

Me: Lol okay

I finished cooking then we ate, after eating we chatted for a while then we went to sleep.

PK called as I was about to sleep

Me: Baby

Him: Hey baby, I just can't wait to see you

Me: Can't wait either

Him: Do you still have your spare key?

Me: I left it at home

Him: Okay, just tell me when you get here and I will come fetch you

Me: Okay baby

Him: I have been thinking about you the past few days and especially today.

Me: Have been missing you as well

Him: Baby when are you planning to get a license

Me: Next year

Him: Better, it will be easier when you have a car

Me: What will be easier?

Him: To come visit me in Cape Town

Me: I'm only getting a car when I'm 21

Him: That's far

Me: My father is boring shame

Him: He is nyani

We chatted then I immediately slept after the call

Woke up early the following morning, I packed my things then tidied up my room.

Vuvu was already up

Me: I can't believe I'm missing a class

Her: It's not like you don't do it regularly

Me: But still

Her: Take a chill pill please

I giggled, I took a shower while he was using the bath.

After dressing up we left the house and went to the Mall.

We did some shopping and I bought shorts. I never wore them before but I liked it.

When we were done shopping, he accompanied me to the bus station, we waited there for the bus.

Her: Don't embarrass me

Me: I won't

Her: Just relax and give it to him like never before!!!!

Me: Hayi wena

Her : Remind him that you still got it!!

I giggled as she was talking. The bus arrived later on, we hugged each other and I got on the bus.

I arrived there later on and PK was waiting for me with his pink shirt.

Him: You look beautiful baby

Me: Thank you

We shared a kiss

Me: Is this your car?

It was so beautiful, I was even scared to touch it

Him: Yes, I'm tired of that old car. I have been driving it for ages

Me: You getting paid neh?

Him: it's not that. It's just that the installment is affordable

Me: Oh okay

He opened the door, Ndabheka bheka ndicela injezu.

He giggled then closed the door, he also got in and he drove.

Wow it was so comfortable than the old one.

Me: I like this car

Him: I knew you would like it!

We arrived at his apartment, his old car was parking outside. We got out of the car and we went inside.

Him: Baby, I have to go back to work, I will be back.

Me: You leaving me alone?

Him: I'm sorry baby, I will be back now now

Me: Okay

He went to fetch my bag and came back.

Him: See you later

He planted a kiss on my lips and he left.

I just released a great sigh then went to the bedroom.

I took out my phone and called Vuvu

Me: Ndifikile

Her: Okay chomi

Me: And I'm bored at home alone

Her: Haibo uphi ubhutiza?

Me: He is at work

Her: Shame friend but he will be back

Me: Ewe phofu

We chatted then I fell asleep without, I later heard the bedroom door opening Ndothuka.

Him: Wothuka ntoni?

Me: last time I checked I was alone

Him: But you left the door unlocked

Me: Shit!

Him: You risking

Me: I'm risking nyani

Him: I bought pizza

Me: Okay

I took up and walked to the bathroom, then I came back. PK was sitting at the lounge

Me: You must be tired

Him : You have no idea

I sat next to him and we ate

Me: Why didn't you bring ice-cream?

Him: I forgot

Me: But you know I love it

Him: Will bring it tomorrow

Me: Okay

We ate and watched TV, after Muvango we took a shower together.

Then we walked to the bedroom, I dropped my towel and applied body lotion and he did the same. As I was about to wear my pyjama, I felt his hands wrapping around my waist, his warm breath on my neck and his hands placed on my breast.

My whole body experienced goosebumps.

One hand went all the way to my vagina and a moan escaped my mouth. I felt his manhood feeling so hard behind me.

He walked me to the bed and took a condom first then he inserted without warning. I released a moan of pain, he gently moved back forth.

He turned me around he hold on my waist while groaning.

He went faster and faster, groaning louder and louder.... I was moaning out of pleasure holding the sheet tight.

He finally climaxed then we were both breathing heavily.

Him: Wow missed this

Me: Have no idea

We were both looking at the ceiling

Him: I love you

Me: Love you too

He stood up and went to fetch a towel. He cleaned himself first then handed me the towel.

He walked to the kitchen and came back.

He placed me to his chest and we took photos with his phone.

Him: I'm gonna miss you baby

Me: Gonna miss you too

Him: Really?

Me: A. A

He got on top of me and started kissing me , I just fell off the bed on purpose hoping he will follow me.

Waveske wandikroba and asked

Him: And then?

I felt so embarrassed, I slowly got up and he was watching me with an confused facial expression.

I went back to bed

Him: Uright?

Me: Goodnight!

Then I looked the opposite way

To be continued..

Insert 51

Warning : Too much Xhosa

"Baby... "

Said PK as he was tabbing me.

Me: I'm sleeping

Him: Hee, we are not done here kaloku

I was even embarrassed to turn around, i heard him opening a condom then i felt his hands touching my breast, I didn't turn around tuuu.

I felt his manhood wanting to insert, I just lifted my thigh, because I also wanted.

He giggled and made me more embarrassed.

As he was slowly going in, a moan of pleasure escaped my mouth, he kept on moving, I was feeling great pleasure.

He turned me around and got on top of me.

Few minutes later...

I was laying on top of his chest, he was playing with fingers, comparing them to his.

Him: Kawutsho baby... What happened earlier? I'm still confused

Me: Khawuyeke man

Him: Baby I have to ask because you fell off the bed...

Me: You were supposed to follow me

Him: Follow you?

He said with "Intoni " Voice

Me: Ewe

Him: Ndiziwise mna ebhedini???

Me: Yabonake

Him: Come on baby, this is not wrestling....

Me: Stop it already

Him: Khona, uzalaphi lento?

He gave me that curious face

I told him the truth, he started giggling Me: It's not funny

Him: Uzoyeka uthanda Izinto

Me: Mxxm

Him: Don't do it again because I'm not gonna follow you

Me: You should have followed kodwa baby

Him: And hurt myself? Ndazelaphi awuzondiphepha?

Me: Let's talk about something else

Him: I love you

Me: Mxm

Him : Hehake

The following morning...

I was woken by PK's manhood entering.

Me: Yathakatha

Him: I know

He moved back and forth, I was moaning out pleasure.

He moved faster and faster then he finally released, groaning out loud.

He stood up after that

Me: What time is it?

Him: Too 7

Me: You opening today?

Him: I don't have keys this week

Me: Better

Him: Yeah

He walked to the bathroom, I searched for the towel then wiped myself.

My phone started to ring, I searched for it ndayifumana.

It was Mom, I was even scared to answer it , what if she knows I'm here. Then I thought hayi wethu, she doesn't know.

I answered

Me: Mama

Her: Hello, how are you baby?

Me: I'm good and Mama?

Her: God is still good, wenza ntoni?

Me: You just woke me up

Her: I'm gonna deposit you money today. Do you still have food, Toiletries, airtime?

Me: Relax Mama, I'm still covered

Her: I was stressed baby

Me: Don't worry mama....

Her: Okay Mama

Her: I Miss you yhoo

Me: I miss you all, how is Lubabalo?

Her: He is handful....

Me: I can't wait to see him

Her: He is turning one in few months

Me: Yhoo he is growing so fast

Her: Your brother is moving out next year

Me: Haibo

Her: Yes, he says he doesn't want to be a Mama's baby

I giggled

Her: I don't understand why he is rushing

Me: He is turning 26 next year Mama

Her: Thobile left, he is also leaving and you also left.

Me: Kodwa Mama let's be realistic, We were not gonna stay forever

Her: But still

Me: It's not like we won't come visit but ke I'm still young I'm not gonna leave yet

Her: Yhoo

We chatted for a long while, we hang up later and PK walked in wrapping a towel.

Him: Who was that?

Me: Who

Him: The one you were talking with on the phone

Me: My mother

Him: Why you hanging up when I'm coming ?

Me: Hehake PK

Him: What???

Me: Come check yourself

Him: Mxxm

Me: Yhuu hayi wena ukhweletha ingathi awunabazali wacholwa

Him: Uthini????

He lifted up his eyebrow

Me: Ingathi wacholwa!!!!

Him: Ungandiqheli ONIKAYO!

Me: Awuphilanga

Yhuu he quickly came closer

Me: Uzokwenzani????

Bendicaphukisa ndabe ndimfinge intshiya mna qala.

Him: Ndoze ndikukhabe wena mini inye Me: Uyaziqhatha!!!!

Him: Ndiyakubona ucimba uyiSepha emanzini.

Me: I'm just saying

He took out his uniform and start dressing up.

I watched him as he was dressing up Me: Imdaka le flees

Him: Is it that bad?

Me: Ewe tshi

Him: But I'm cold

Me: Wear your Jersey

Him: Yhoo iyabanda

Me: And put your pullover on top

He did as I told him

Me: You look much better now

Him: Enkosi

Him: I have a match today at 3pm

Me: And?

Him: CJ will come to fetch you around 2

Me: Okay

Him: Should he buy you something to eat?

Me: No, I will cook

Me: But baby what if my parents see me?

Him: People look alike and your parents don't go to places like that

Me: Okay

When he was done he gave me peck on the lips

Him: See you later

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Then he left, I slept for a while then wake up.

I made myself something to eat , when I was done I washed his clothes outside because he didn't have a washing machine.

I cleaned the entire house and changed the linens after the washing.

The sun was out by that time and it was not cold as morning.

I made myself sometimes to eat after I was done with everything.

PK called as I was eating

Me: Baby

Him: Are you still safe?

Me: Ewe

Him: Was just checking on you

Me: I'm still okay don't worry

Him: Okay baby, CJ will come to fetch you get ready

Me: What time is it ?

Him: Too too

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

We hung up ,I finished eating then went to take a quick shower.

I applied body lotion , someone knocked at the door. I wrapped a towel and went to the door. It was a lady wearing a full kit

Me: Hi

Him: PK sent me here

She was playing with her face and I took a chill pill.

Me: I'm listening

Her: He left his soccer boots

My phone rang and it was PK

Me: Baby

Him: Baby there is a lady that will come fetch my boots apho, they are at the bathroom

Me: Okay

Him: CJ is running late, so he will come fetch you a little later vah?

Me: No problem

She was so annoyed

Me: You can come in

Her: I'm fine where I'm standing

Me: Okay

I went to fetch the boots and gave them to her

She didn't even say thank you, she just left.

I just turned around , PK called again

Me: Baby

Him: Baby please wear that T-shirt that is hanging behind the bathroom door

Me: Esi se Team yakho?

Him: Ewe

Me: Okay

I went to fetch it, his name was written on the back of the T-shirt.

I just took out my denim short and white Allstars.

I took my time and dressed up , fixed my hair, applied my eye pencil and Mascara then applied my pink lipstick.

CJ came to fetch me and he was with his girlfriend.

He giggled when he saw me

Me: What????

Him: I don't think PK will approve that short

Me: It's not that short

Him: Okay , don't say I didn't warn you

I got in the car and we drove to the field.

They were already playing and there were a lot of people there

Me: Where will we sit?

Him: Our sits are reserved don't worry

We walked all the way to the front and really our seats were reserved.

The female teams were playing at the other side.

I'm not really a soccer fan but I have to be because my boyfriend is a soccer player.

I watched as they please were yelling, others walking by the White line, I just stood there and watched.

Ase asked

Her : Do you drink?

Me: Not really

Her: You have to get something that will give you tha Vuma

Me: I don't need it

Her: Your man is playing, you have to give him that spirit

Me: Haibo

Are handed me a sider

Her: Here drink

I took and started to drink

CJ looked at me and shook his head

Ase: What?

CJ : Someone is playing with fire

Ase: She also need to enjoy herself, it's not like she is dating a pastor .

CJ : Nyani phofu

I continued to drink

CJ : I'm playing the second round

Me: Oh okay

He left us, I drank a second one ndaziva ja.

I started yelling out loud , I waved at him, he just smiled.

After the match....

They won the match 3-2 they almost lost. The coach was not pleased though, he was yelling that it was not their best.

As we were walking to the car, the team were mocking him.

Guy1: You don't have sex when playing the following day

CJ : Akholonto apha

PK : At least I have a goal what about you?

CJ : Tell them Mfethu

They giggled

PK : I suspect it was you guys that were having sex last night!!!!

CJ : Gcwala!!!!

They were mocking each other all the way.

Guy2: Will see you at the club

PK : I won't be joining you

CJ : Uyajiya

PK : My bae is here

Guy1: Sister do you mind if he goes out tonight?

PK : Ayingo Sister lona, awumazi uSister useDora unamagxa ebomfu?

They all giggled

CJ : Come on Mfethu

Ndabe mna ndimnandi kanjani

PK : Okay okay

They made a joyful noise , we got in the car and we left.

We arrived at home, he went straight to the bedroom.

Me: Baby

Him: Mmmm?

Me: I'm gonna drink neh?

Him: Hayi hayi!!!!

Me: You late, I have already started

Him: What???????

Me: Ewe

I walked to the bedroom

Him: Who gave you alcohol?

Me: Hehake, Ungatsho nje I'm a toddler??

Him: We are not going

Me: Why??? Ungakulinge uphole apha

He giggled in disbelieve

Him: Awuzophinde usele

Me: Tell me you joking

Him: Okay but you limited

Me: Good!

Him: Khulule lekaka uyinxibileyo

Me: Ntoni leyo

Him: Uzonxiba blukhwe

Me: I see nothing wrong with what I'm wearing

Him: If awufuni sixabane, just take off that shit!!!

Me: Mxxm, you boring shame

Him: Remove!

I took off everything and stood there naked

Him: And then?

Me: Let's go shower

We went to shower, after the shower wehla nomqhela.

I ironed his light brown Chino short and handed it to him.

I dressed up into my black skinny jean with a black Jersey written "SO WHAT?" in gold and the white sneakers I wore to the field.

I fixed my hair and applied make up.

PK : YOu look beautiful

Me: Enkosi, you also looking handsome

He was also wearing a white sneakers with a white round neck top and a blazer.

Him: Let's go

We walked to the car and we drove to the club, we joined the team, they were sitting at one of the long tables. Sive : I thought you guys were not coming

Me: Haibo why?

She shrugged her shoulders and poured me a glass of Amarula.

PK stared at me

Me: Khandehle please

I said without looking at him, he went to the counter and came back with a bottle of Amarula and other stuff.

He handed me the Amarula

Me: I'm not gonna drink this alone

He ignored me and start talking with his friends.

Ase: Khandikhaphe siye Toilet

She whispered

Me: Okay

She held my hand as we were moving, PK grabbed me by the arm.

Him: Uyaphi?

Me: Toilet

He let go, we went to the ladies

Ase : Let's by shots

Me: You naughty

She giggled , sagwegweleza to the counter and bought two shots each and she was paying.

Her: What about another one?

Me: Good idea

After the three shots, he asked for eyes and went back to the table . PK grabbed me and put me on this lap.

Other girls arrive, I assumed it was the female team and the girl from earlier was there, I was ready for her.

She waved at PK smiling , I looked at PK. He normally waved back

Me: Nguwe wedwa olapha??? Why is she waving at you alone???

He giggled , he was making me angry

Him: Jealous???

Me: Is she your girlfriend?

Him: Bhanxekile...she is not my type

Me: Okay

Him: Kutheni ingathi Unxilile???

Me: Mxxm

I stood up, he pulled me back

Him: Uyaphi?

Me: Joining the girls

Him: Okay

I went to join them, yandiqala yandenyuka lantombi.

Me: Yintoni wandiqala wandinyuka??? Ufuna uthetha?

She kept quiet

Me: Hayi ungandi qheli sekutheni

Ase smiled

Ase: Myeke

I felt someone tabbing me, I turned around and it was Bulie.

She hugged me and I was surprised

Her: Chomi

I smiled back

Her: Why didn't you tell me you here

Me: We don't call each other kaloku

Her : Hehake

She pulled me by the hand and went to introduce me to Her friends.

I chilled at their table

Me: Ain't you suppose to be at school?

Her: Came to visit for the weekend, I'm leaving tomorrow

Me: Okay

Her: Wena?

Me: Came to see your brother but my parents don't know I'm here.

One tabbed me I turned around and it was D my class mate from high school. He hugged

Him : Didn't know you come at places like this

Me: It's not my regular thing

"Kwenzeka ntoni apha? " Asked PK and D stepped back.

Bulie: Hai-

PK " Voetsek andithethi nawe!

Me: Yabhora shame

Him: Sundiqhela

He grabbed me by the hand and we went back to the table.

Him : Hlala apha

Me: Mxm

Ase came to my rescue, and sat next to me.

We talked a lot of Shit

A lady came to hug PK I stood up

Me: Kwenzeka ntoni apha?

Lady : Like seriously?

Me: Izojinga kuye xandimekho, ndicela uhambe.

I was doing the same thing he just did

Him: She -

Me : I'm not interested

Him: Kutheni ingathi ubuye unesigezo eMonti?

Ase: Not here

Me: myeke andibethe!!!!!!!!!! I'm not scared of him

He grabbed me by the arm and we went outside.

Him: Kutheni undiqhela?

Me: Hee ayikhomnandi xayiza kuwe??? CJ and Ase walked on us.

CJ : Guys please, not here

PK : We are leaving

Ase: It's still early

PK : Bye

We got in the car and drove home , we arrived home , safika salala.

To be continued...

Insert 52

"ONIKAYO.... "

I heard PK's voice yelling,

Me: Huh?

I replied with my eyes still closed

Him: Vuka

Me: You disturbing my sleep PK you know?

Him: Mxxm

I covered myself as I was turning facing the other side.

I woke up later on, my head was feeling heavy and my stomach was feeling sick.

I uncovered the blankets, it was so quiet only the sound of the Fridge.

I slowly went to the toilet, dragging my feet.

I sat on the seat ,I felt the urge to vomit as I was busy . I quickly stood up and started vomiting, the smell was not pleasant, it made me vomit even more.

I went to lay down after vomiting, my whole body was feeling weak.

I went to the kitchen and drank plenty of water. The house was still clean, i just opened all windows, I was so weak that I took more than 10 minutes to tidy up the bed.

I slept , I was not feeling well.

"Uzozunywa ngenye imini, uzothi ndandishilo... " (You gonna get raped one day and you gonna say I said so.)

Said PK as he was walking at the bedroom.

Me: Uya Rasa ! (you making noise)

Him: Bhanxekile!!! (You insane)

He spoke in a louder tone and I covered my head with a pillow , he grabbed that pillow

Me: Like seriously

Him: You didn't lock the door

Me: I was too weak to lock the door

Him: Tshotsho uphapha gqithi

Me: Mxm

Him: We need to talk

Me: What now?

Him: Look at me, ndiyayi thanda attention! (I like Attention)

Me: WHAT!

I looked at him and I was very annoyed

Him: Look at me carefully

Me: Why?

Him: Because I want you to mark my words.

His facial expression was very serious, He was wearing his work uniform and it was around 3 too 3pm.

Me: Listening

Him: I don't want to see you drink again yandiva?

Me: For the why kengoku?

Him: Jonga don't ask me nonsense

Me: Who are you to tell me what to do and what not to Do?

Him: I'm Phakamani Poni ,Lisa, jambhase....

Me: Eshee

Him : Listen to me and listen to me carefully....

His facial expression changed even worse .

Him: Ndizokukhaba unye zendiphinde ndikubone usela. (I'm gonna kick your ass if I see you drink again)

Me: Mxxm

Him: I'm not bluffing, test me

Me: You not my father !!!

Him: That's true , I will never be him.

Me: Good

Him: Just mark my words wena!!!!

Me: I'm not in the mood kanjani

Him: Okay

I stood up and went to take a shower, my body was still weak.

I wrapped a towel after showering and went to the lounge where PK was sitting busy with his phone.

Him: Are you gonna cook or...

Me: I'm lazy baby to cook, let's Buy pizza.

Him: I want real Food baby

Me: I'm not your wife

Him: You soon to be njena

Me: Hayi baby, I'm gonna cook next time

Him: There is a friend of mine that will join us tonight

Me: And who is He?

Him: You will know him don't worry. I just want him to meet you

Me: Okay ... Is he from here?

Him: East London

Me: So he drove all the way just to meet me? You lying

Him: He was in Cape Town, now he is going back to East London but he will sleep here tonight.

Me: Where??? There is no space here

Him: He is gonna use the couch

Me: Okay

Him: So.... You have to prove your cooking skills

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

Him: Please baby

Me: I can cook

Him: Okay, I'm not saying you can't

I went to the kitchen and took the meat then spiced it and marinated it, I let it soak .

I preheated the oven and turn on one plate , placed a pot of rice.

There was no veggies only potatoes

Me: You not healthy

I yelled

Him: Says who?

Me: ONIKAYO!

Him: I'm healthy mna

Me: Then why don't you have veggies ?

Him: I'm healthy mna, I ate enough veggies when I was still young. My body is on holiday and strike, #No_more_veggies

Me: Mxxm

I cooked the potatoes separately without being pilled then went to sit on top of him.

Him: Uzothshisa imbiza (You gonna burn the pots)

Me: I won't

I said as I started kissing him

Him: Not now baby

Me: We won't have time when your friend is here and I'm leaving tomorrow

Him: Dirty minded

Me: I know

I loosen his belt and unzipped his pants.

He unwrapped my towel and squeezed my breast.

I slowly inserted it, as I was moaning out of pleasure.

He went down to my neck and kissed my neck as I was on top of him.

He turned me around after few minutes, I wrapped my legs around his waist.

He moved back and forth, making me moan louder and louder.

Few minutes later...

He was still on top of me

Him: Baby

Me: huh?

Him: Promise me you won't drink again

Me: This Topic again?

Him: Okay fine

I cleaned myself and wore something more comfortable.

I grilled the meat while PK went to buy some veggies.

My phone rang and it was Thobela

Me: Hello

Him: Hello... Are you back yet?

Me: I'm leaving tomorrow

Him: I miss you Kanjani

Me: I will be back tomorrow

Him : You will miss a class again?

Me: Yes

Him: And you think it's right?

Me: Stop being my mother

Him: I was just asking

Me: I will see you tomorrow

Him: Okay, don't forget to inform me

Me: Sure

PK came back, I cooked some the veggies he bought.

Pk: He will arrive any minute

Me: Okay

Someone knocked at the door immediately after I turned off the stove. PK :

That's him

Me: Okay

I went to the door since I was the one who was at the kitchen.

A tallish guy with one hand tucked in, in his pocket was standing in front of me, as I open the door.

He smiled, showing his white teeth with one gold teeth. He had a bold voice, that charming voice.

Him: Hi

Me: Hi, you can come in

I made way for him to come in then closed the door.

He walked to the lounge and started greeting PK.

I took out three plates and dished out then served them.

Guy: I'm waiting for the intro

PK : Sorry mfethu.... Baby this is Siyabulela but everyone calls him killer...killer this is my beautiful queen, my wife , ONIKAYO

Killer : Nice to meet you Onika...

Me: Same here

We hand shake

PK : Hayi kaloku.... I didn't say massages her hand

Killer : (laughing) You still the same

PK : Ungandiqheli

Killer : Was just joking man!

PK : Mxxm

Killer : She is for the keep mfethu

PK : I know Mfethu , I will never let her go no matter what. Dead will do us apart

Killer : Khawungene! Yizo!

They hand shake again and that was annoying you know.

After eating I took the plates

Killer : The food was delicious

Me: Thanks

PK : Zamile shame (You tried)

Me: Mxxm

Killer: He is jealous don't mind him

Me: I know

Then rolled my eyes as I was walking to the kitchen.

I felt hands wrapping around my waist, I knew it was PK by the reaction of my body.

PK : Baby

Me: Huh?

Him: I'm coming now now

Me: Where you going?

Him: To buy some strong stuff

Me: You working tomorrow right?

Him : Ewe

Me: You not gonna drink on a Sunday

Him : Haibo

Me: I'm serious

Him: I won't drink to much

Me: PK you not gonna drink and that's it!

He begged me but I refused

Him: Mxxm

Me: I know!!!!

The following morning...

I woke up early, since my bus was leaving at 7:15.

I packed all of my stuff then took a shower with my baby. Killer was busy on the phone.

We dressed up while it was his turn to shower.

When we were all done, killer walked in with a small sport bag.

PK : Baby you gonna take this back with and Killer will come fetch it kuwe

Me: Why don't he take it with?

PK : It's a long story, just take the bag baby and please don't open it.

Me: You scaring me

PK : Baby I beg you

They keep nagging till I agreed.

Pk drove me to the bus station and we waited for the bus together.

The bus arrived later on, we kissed and hugged.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

I arrived at East London early in the afternoon, Vuvu was not home.

Curiosity got the best out of me because the bag was heavy , I open the bag.

I inched back after I opened the bag, I was shocked.

To be continued...

Insert 53

I inched forward after few seconds, I looked again at the bag.

I quickly closed it and looked around as if someone was watching me. My heart was beating fast, my mind was functioning fast, thinking stupidly.

I shoved the bag under my bed because Vuvu could walk in any minute.

I even closed the curtain thinking it will make a difference.

My phone started to ring and it was PK, I got nervous.

My hands were shivering, I cleared my throat and answered.

Me: He.... Hello

I said with a low voice

Him : Did you arrive safely?

I nodded then I thought again , he is not seeing me.

Me: Ye... Yes

Him: Are you okay?

I scretched my head nervously

Me: Ewe

Him: Did you open the bag?

He asked that " I know you opened the bag" voice.

Me: A.. A. A

Him: You opened it didn't you?

Me: What did you expect?

Him: Don't tell anyone

Me: Where the hell -

He cut me mid sentence

Him: I will explain later

Me: Pha-

Him: Could you just relax!

Me: What if I was-

Him: I'm sorry baby, you were the one I trust

Me: Phakami what is going on?

Him: Will explain everything to you Friday xandilapho

Me: I -

Him: I got to go, I love you

Me: I need explanation Phakamani and-

I realized I was talking alone, I just threw the phone on top of the bed then followed after it and gazed at the ceiling.

"Finally, I was bored being alone! " Said Vuvu's voice disturbing me from my sleep.

I just turned my head and looked at her

Her: Hayi yintoni wapholelwa ndim?

Me: How?

Her: Is he cheating again?

I shook my head

Her: Then why you so cold?

Me: I'm just tired

Her: Mmmm... Working all weekend????

Me: Don't be silly

I stood up

Me: Let's go sit at the lounge

I lead the way to the lounge closing the door behind, my body was not feeling free.

Her: So tell me how was your weekend?

Me: You don't want to know

Her: I'm listening

Me: You really don't want to know

Her: What's up?

I told her the story of falling of the bed, she didn't stop laughing even tears came out.

Her: Uthini apha kum? Uthi wazijula????

She laughed again and really got annoyed

Her: No my friend kaloku... I didn't say throw yourself...

Me: Mxxm... Why weren't you specific????? I embarrassed myself you know?

Her: Kaloku mchana-

Someone knocked at the door

Me: It's fine I will get it

I went to the door and on my surprise it was Thobela.

Him: Hey

He was looking smart, well dressed and he had a new haircut.

Me: Hi

He was smiling

Him: Can I come in or I'm no longer welcome here?

Me: I'm sorry, come in

I said making a way for him to walk in

"Mmm.... Tshisaaaa.... " Said Vuvu complimenting him.

I closed the door

Him: I'm here to see you Onika

Vuvu : Mmmmm

Me: For the why?

Her: Nothing

Him: Can I speak to you in private?

Me: Okay

We went to the kitchen, I gave him that "I'm listening look"

Him: How you?

Me: I'm okay , you?

Him: I'm cool... Well I just wanted to ask you if would you be able to go catch a movie with me?

Me: Now?

Him: If that's not a problem

Me: Er... I'm sorry not today

Him: Okay

I could see he was disappointed

Me: Wednesday?

Him: No problem

Me: I'm just tired, I want some rest

Him: No Akhonxaki

Me: Okay

Him: Uhhh.. I will see you tomorrow then

Me: Sure

We walked out of the kitchen

Him: Bye Vuvu

Vuvu: Haibo, for the why?

Him: I'm going somewhere

Her : Okay

He went out the door, I watched him as he was walking out till I couldn't see him.

Vuvu: If you like him then why you hiding your feelings?

Me: I don't know what you talking about

But deep down, I knew she was talking the truth.

Her: It's written all over your face

Me: I'm not in the mood for this

I said as I was walking to my room, I closed the door and tried to sleep.

Vuvu knocked at the door and walked in

Her: Yoyo there is two police men looking for you

My heart started to beat fast

Me: What do they want?

Her: I don't know

My whole body started shivering

Her: Are you okay?

I nodded not trusting my voice

Her : Come

I slowly followed her to the lounge where the police men were standing.

Guy1: Are you ONIKAYO?

I nodded?

Guy2: We have a search warrant to search this house because we were informed that you were part of a robbery and you have the money with you....

I just stood there blinking uncontrollably, I swallowed very hard

Me: That's not true

They started searching all over the house till they found it, they handcuffed me.

Tears started to flow as they shoved me to the Van.

I woke up breathing heavily, it was dark and I looked around.

I felt my hands, I realized that it was only a dream

I went to switch on the light, I checked the time, it was past 7pm.

I checked if the money was still there then went to the kitchen.

I noticed I was alone, Vuvu was not home.

I assumed that she was coming back, I made myself a sandwich and ate.

Someone knocked as I was busy eating, my heartbeat increased.

Me: Who is it?

Person : Killer

Me: Okay

I placed my sandwich down and went to the door.

Him: You such a coward

He said giggling

Me: I'm alone kaloku

I said as I closed the door

Him: Don't worry you safe here

Me: Says who?

Him: Killer

Me: Whatever

I went to the bedroom and brought the bag

Him: Thanks

Me: Sure...By the way how did you know where I'm staying?

Him: PK told directed me

Me : Okay

Him: I'm on my way....

Me: Sure

Him : Don't be scared, nothing will happen to you.

Me: Okay

He went out, I finished my sandwich then went back to sleep.

Wednesday morning...

I woke up early in the morning and prepared to go to school.

When I was done with my daily morning routine, I went to school.

After school we went straight to the movies with Thobela.

He bought snacks and milkshakes , we took the back row, phof we always sit at the back every time we catch a movie.

After the movie we went shopping, we even bought takeaway's.

Him: I really had fun today

He said as we were approaching my apartment.

It was already dark outside and I was getting goosebumps from the cold.

Me: I also enjoyed myself

Him: It's fun watching a triller with you

He giggled

Me: Continue making fun of me

Him: It's only a movie

Me: If don't sleep tonight, you gonna see

He giggled

Him: Don't worry they won't come here

Me: Mxxm

We chat for something like 30 minutes, I felt his lips against mine, I didn't stop him .I know it was wrong but it felt so damn right.

He wrapped his arms around my waist and inched further closer to me.

He broke the kiss

Him: I love you

I couldn't deny it I loved him

Me: I love you too

He kissed me again, his lips felt so magical .

I didn't want him to stop

Him: Goodnight

Me: Goodnight

I unlocked the door and walked inside, I couldn't stop smiling.

Vuvu was not home again, I went straight to bed and laid on my back thinking about Thobela.

My stomach even experienced butterflies , yangathi undityela iyeza.

My phone vibrated , checked the caller ID and it was PK.

I just got annoyed, I didn't answer it because I was really not in the mood for him.

Me kept on calling, I just ignored.

I later changed to my Pyjamas and ate my takeaway.

Thobela called, I immediately answered.

Him: Hey

Me: Hi

Him: I'm missing you already

Me: I miss you too

Him: Come over

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Please

I kept on nagging, I finally agreed.

I reached for my gown then switched off all the lights and locked up.

I knocked at the door

Him: Come in

I walked in holding my takeaway , he smiled

Me: What?

Him: Nothing, you just look beautiful

Me: I'm not gonna bluff ndikuxelele

Him: I'm just complimenting is that a crime?

He said as he locked the door, I took a seat and started eating.

Him: Let's go to bedroom

I stood up and followed him to the bedroom.

I looked around

Him: What?

Me: I'm just looking

Him: Oh

I sat at the edge of the bed and finished eating while he went to the kitchen.

He came back with a bottle of juice and two glasses.

I removed my gown and got under blankets.

We cuddled all night, laughing and kissing.

He woke me up the following morning, it's was around 6am.

Him: It's school

Me: Can't I sleep few minutes

Him: No, you gonna be late

I stood up reached for my gown.

I took my phone and key, he walked me to the door and I went to my apartment.

I had plenty of missed calls from PK, I just ignored him.

I prepared for school and I left.

To be continued....

Insert 54

After school, I went straight home and left Vuvu behind.

PK called again as I was unlocking the door.

Me: Hello

I felt hands wrapping around my waist, it was Thobela.

PK : Why you not picking up my calls?

Me: I was sleeping and I forgot my phone at home, because I was late this morning.

Thobela let go of me and went to the kitchen.

Him: Onika what's going on???

Me: Nothing

Him: Are you still angry about the Money? It's not mine

Me: Where did he get it?

Him: Baby, I will explain things tomorrow when I'm in front of you

Me: Whatever

Him: Baby come on

Me: Got to go Phakamani

Him: I love you

Me: Okay

Him: Okay?

Me: I love you too

I said

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

" I understand "

Said Thobela wrapping his arms around me, kissing my neck.

Every time he touch me my body respond in a way I could not explain.

I don't know why I love him this much. I just feel happy whenever he is around.

He pushed me against the counter and started kissing me.

Vuvu cleared her throat as she came in, we broke from each other embrace.

Me: Vuvu

Thobela : Hi

She smiled

Her: Heee

Then she walked to her bedroom.

We giggled

Thobela : Will see you later

Me: Sure

He kissed goodbye then he left.

Vuvu walked in few minutes later

Her: I'm listening

Me: You saw everything, what else do you want to know?

Her: Lol PK is gonna kill you

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxm... He just annoys me

Her: But chomi, I'm not judging you also need extra fun

Me: Mxxm kewena

Her: As long as you play your cards right

Me: Worse, PK is coming Friday

Her: Poor Thobela, did you tell him?

Me: I'm gonna tell him later, but he understands

Her : Okay if you say so

Me: Yeah

Her : So that means I'm gonna go party tomorrow

Me: Sabelo will kill you

Her: He is weekend away, he is coming back Sunday

Me: Mmmm....Freedom!

She giggled

Her: I'm gonna use it vah

Me: But don't abuse it

Her : Will depend

We chatted then we went into our separate rooms and studied.

Few hours later...

I was tired of studying, I packed all my books then stretched my body for a little.

I went to the kitchen and cooked supper since it was my turn to cook.

Thobela called

Me: Hello

Him: I miss you Tshini, are still studying?

Me: I'm cooking

Him: When you done cooking, please come visit me for few hours

Me: Okay

I hurried up cooking, you all know the feeling xaluqala uThando.

When I was done cooking, I dish out for Vuvu and I, then I called

"I'm coming " She replied back

We ate and chatting in between, after eating. I did the dishes then went to visit Thobela.

We chatting sitting on the couch, watching TV at same time but anyway the TV was watching us because we were not paying attention.

I just felt happy every time I'm in his arm. There was something unique and special about him, he was different.

Me: PK is coming tomorrow

He stopped playing with my hair

Him: Do he really have to come visit you often

Me: He is my boyfriend remember?

Him: At least you both from P. E, why can't he wait till holidays?

Me: Yafana we don't get enough time together because my parents are strict

Him: So I'm gonna watch him kissing and touching you?

Me: I know but there is nothing I can do

Him: No it's cool

Me: You mad now?

Him: I said it's cool

Me: Kodwa you been unfair

Him: I'm sorry, the problem is that I Love you a lot... I just ...

Me: If you can't deal with it then let's stop

Him: That's impossible , it's fine I understand

He said placing my head on top of his chest again.

I went back home late on, PK called as I was about to sleep.

We chatted for a while before he hang up.

I woke the following morning, the sun was blazing outside.

I decided to wear shorts at school with my sandals and dark blue shirt.

After school...

I went back home with Thobela

Him: I'm gonna miss you

Me: I'm gonna miss you too

We cuddled and played on the way back home.

We went to our separate apartment later on.

I spring cleaned my room and changed the linen,I studied after that .

Later on...

It was around 7pm, PK had not arrived yet.

Vuvu bought pizza since she was lazy to cook on a Friday night.

I called PK several times but he was not picking up.

Vuvu: Is PK still coming?

Me: I don't know, he supposed to be here now

Her: Maybe he is still coming

We ate then I went to my room after eating.

Around 10 pm, Vuvu came knocking at my door and she entered. She switched on the light, I slowly opened my eyes, since the light was bright.

Her: PK is not coming... Wake up let's go have fun

Me: Like seriously? That why you woke me up?

Then I covered myself, she pulled the cover.

Me: Vuvu I want to sleep

Her: I don't want to go alone

Me: It's not a must

Her: Please

She kept on nagging till I angrily stood up.

Me: I'm gonna get you Bonanje

Her: I love you too

I refresh and dressed up

Me: We don't have transport njena

Her: Don't worry that is sorted

Me: You starting again with this nonsense

Her : I'm just having fun hawu! Sabelo won't find out.

Me: You playing with fire

Her: As if you loyal

Me: Like seriously?

Her: Let's go have fun!!

A red car came to fetch us. We went to this club.

The guy bought us cider's and his friends joined.

Later on...

It was around midnight, I went to the ladies. My phone vibrated it was PK, the music was loud, I just ignored the call. I had several missed calls from him.

A whatsapp message followed "Onika uphi? " From PK.

Me: Sleeping

I replied back

Him: Open the door, I have been knocking for ages.

Hee what am I gonna do? I called Vuvu aside and told here the situation of the moment.

We were both stressing

Her: Tell him the truth

Me: Yhooo

Her: You don't have a choice

Me: We have to go

Her : Will ask JJ to take us home

Me: Okay

He didn't argue, he really drove us home, I was drunk but not that much.

He drove us inside the compound then we got off, I walked ahead leaving her with her man. As I was about to reach the door, I felt something tapping me Ndothuka.

" Where you coming from? " it was PK's voice

Me: Coming from the Club

I boldly said

Him: Please open the door

I searched for the key, I found it then got inside.

I walked straight to the bedroom and switched on the light.

PK followed

Him: Kutheni undiqhela nje?

I turned around, wazihlohla impama zambini.

Me: PK you hit?

Him: And I'm gonna hit you again

Me: You not my father !

He slapped me again

Him: What did I say about you drinking, going out to clubs?????

Me: You not gonna control me!

He slapped me harder this time , I fell on the floor.

Him: Stand up

He was furious, his facial expression said it all.

Me: This is bullshit

Him: Stand up or do you want me to help you stand up? I don't mind

Me: I'm not gonna stand up

He grabbed me painfully , I fought back .

Ndava ngengqindi esifubeni (He punched me on the chest)

It was so painful, I kept quiet for a moment.

Him: Why you acting like someone who was raised from a Tarven?

I ignored him

Him: Ndiyathetha

What were I suppose to say?

Him: ONIKAYO....why you acting like someone who was raised from a home where there is no order? Ngathi ukhuliswa linxila?

He slapped me again, I screamed.

Vuvu walked in and tried to stop PK, he slapped her too.

Him: Voetsek, get lost!!!

I never saw him this furious , he pushed her out and locked the door.

Me: I don't want you anymore ...I hate you

Him: What happened to that innocent Onika? Why you destroying your life???
Do you know you are your parents pride????

Me: Don't involve my parents

Him: I don't want to lie to you, I'm gonna discipline you tonight. I have lectured you enough but you don't listen.

He slapped me over and over till my face felt numb, till I could feel anything.

He was only slapping me, pausing and asking questions in between.

The following morning...

"Onika " Said PK's voice disturbing my sleep.

Me: What?

Him: I'm going somewhere, I will be back now now

I ignored him

He went out the door and I went back to my sleep.

I woke up later on, I made the bed then open the windows and curtain.

I went to the bathroom, did my daily morning routine.

I bumped into Vuvu at the passage

Her: Are you okay?

I nodded

Me: I'm sorry about last

Her: It's all my fault, I shouldn't have forced you to come with me

Me: You didn't put a gun on my head

Her: But still

Me: As you okay

Her: At least he didn't hurt your face that much

Me: but it's swollen

Her: It's not bad as I thought, you don't have a blue eyes and ayijumpisi only when someone ekuqwalasela.

PK arrived later on, I was sleeping.

Him: I brought you food

I ignored him

Him: If you expecting me to apologize then you just like someone who is waiting for KFC at CTM.

I ignored him again

Him: I did nothing wrong, I won't watch you destroy your life and I don't even feel sorry because I'm disciplining you and you will thank me later. So once you decide to speak again tell me!

He laid next to me

To be continued...

Insert 55

My phone vibrates, disturbing me from my sleep.

I searched for it under my pillow, I first checked the caller ID before I answered. It was my mother

Me: Hello

I said in a sleepy voice

Her: Hello, why do you sound like you just woke up

Me: Ewe you just woke me up

Her: Are you sick?

Me: No

Her: I mean like it's still 3pm at the afternoon and it's Saturday

Me: It's boring and I have been studying

Her: Shame, I should come visit you

Me: That would be great

I meant the opposite

Her : Don't worry, I'm gonna take my leave next month

Me: Oh okay

Her: So how is school?

Me: School is great

Her : Hope you not doing stupid things

Me: Heee... Never

Her: I hope that's true

Me: That's true

Her: That's my girl

Me: You know me mos

Her: Please do me a favour my child

Me: I'm listening

Her: Oh mntanam, don't disappoint us

Me: I won't

Her: Promise me

Me: I promise Mama, I won't disappoint you

Her: I'm counting on you my baby

Me: Don't worry my baby

Her: Your Sister Graduated And your brother as well. Please baby

Me: Stop stressing Mama

Her: I had a dream yesterday

Me: What was it about?

Her: Thobile was impregnated by Luvano...We were all shocked in shocked on the dream but they were blaming Me and your father!!!!

Me: I wonder what it meant

Her: Abomination

Me: Lol do you think Thobile and Luvano are dating? Come on Mom

Her: I don't know

Me: Probably something else

Her: You think so?

Me: Yes, because they would never do that.

We chatted till her airtime finished

"Let's go out for lunch?" Said Phakamani, I just zipped my mouth and placed my head on the pillow.

Him: You will be angry till when?

I just ignored him

Him: Hayi I'm taking to you

I stood up and left him in that room. I was not in the mood

I went to the kitchen, Vuvu was not around. I made myself a sandwich because I could feel my stomach making a sound.

After the sandwich, I went to take a shower and a long one.

I was missing Thobela, missing his sense of touch, his smell, his lips, his voice. I just missed everything about him, I just wished PK could just vanish into thin air that moment. His presence disgusted me, I really hated him, he thinks his my father.

I turned off the water, dried my body then wrapped a dry towel and went back to the bedroom.

PK was laying on his back then fixed his eyes on me immediately I walked in.

I took out my body lotion and started applying it gently on my body.

I felt his hands wrapping around my waist.

Me: Take off your hands on me

He ignored me and kissed my neck, I yanked myself

Me: Don't touch me

Him: You still every?

Me: Leave me alone tu

Him: Come on

Me: You know no what? Just leave

Him: I'm not going anywhere

Me: Or do you want me to call the police?

Him: What will they do?

Me: Put you behind bars

He giggled

Him: Okay

Me: I'm serious Phakamani if you don't leave here I'm gonna call the police.

Him: I'm sorry Onika

Me: It's too late, you don't have the right to lay a finger on me

Him: Xawungamameli ndithini? Tickle you?

Me: You not my father

Him: I know

Me: Good! Now please leave

Him: I'm not going anywhere

Me: I don't want you anymore.... It's over between us

Him: Are you still drunk?

Me: You think I'm joking?

I took off that necklace he bought me

Him: You waiting your energy because you gonna wear that chain again .

Me: Mxm

I gave it to him plus the watch he bought me

Me: Take it and leave!!!!!!

Him: Bhanxekile, I'm not going anywhere

Me: You think I'm joking wena

Him: You joking njena but the joke is not funny.... Try another one.

He locked the door

Him: No one is leaving here

Me: I'm gonna scream

Him: You inviting me kengoku

Me: Mxxm

I tried to grab the key on his hand but he was too strong for me.

Me: I hate you

Him: I love you too

Me: You don't hurt the one you love

Him: Xawungamameli??? I warned you may times But you wouldn't listen and I gave you many verbal warnings ... It's not like I didn't warn you!

He went back to bed and covered himself.

Me: Mxm Yadika shame. I curse the day I met you

He didn't reply

I wore my pyjama and socks then joined him.

Him: Khandiphe

Me: Andifuni

Him: Ndiyakucela

Me: Please leave me alone

Him: Awusavimbi

He kept on nagging, I totally ignored him kwaphela.

Later on...

PK went to buy takeaways because I didn't cook and I meant what I said earlier on. I was done with PK is and he is older than me anyways.

I called Thobela after he left.

Him: Hello

Me: Hey, how are you?

Him: I'm good you?

Me: I'm not good

Him: What's up?

Me: I miss you

Him: Where is your boyfriend?

Me: He went out

Him: Oh

Me: What you doing?

Him: I'm about to go to my friend's house

Me: At this time?

Him: Baby, it's boring here yhoo

Me: Shame baby, don't worry he is leaving tomorrow

Him: Nice, so you come visit me tomorrow?? Can't wait

Me: Can't wait either

We chatted for a while then he hung up

PK came back later on with KFC, I just looked at it but didn't eat.

I didn't want anything from him

Him: Here is food

Me: I'm not hungry

Him: I miss you

Me: Mxxm

Him: So you want me to give you freedom and destroy yourself? Do you want to turn like Bulelwa????

Me: Don't compare me with your sister

Him: Can't you see I'm saving you from a lot of stuff???? Onika let me tell you something, once you lose your dignity it will be hard to get it back. I don't want you to be like the girls outside, clubbing will take you nowhere.

I want you to focus on your studies, utywala zange kwasa mntu ndawo.

ONIKAYO you know your situation, you get loose when you drunk and you rude. You gonna get hurt, Alcohol is not for you.

Me: You won't tell me what to do and what not to do

Him: I'm protecting you here can't you see that?

Me: Protecting me from what? My group age is having fun out there while I'm stuck with you

Him: Are they Making any progress? Do they have a vision? Do they know where they going?

Me: Mxm what did I expect dating someone who is 7 years older than me???

Him: Ingenaphi Lonto?

Me: Why don't you date your age group? Maybe they are more matured

Him: You are my girlfriend don't tell me about my age group

Me: Ex girlfriend

Him: Bhanxekile

Me: I don't want you anymore

Him: I'm the one who came to you not the other way around

Me: So?

Him: It's not over till I say it's over

Me: You fooling yourself

Him: Okay

Me: I'm gonna take someone else

Him: Only if you will be able to dance to the music

Me: Don't worry I will be able

Him: Don't test me

Me: Mxxm

He took a piece of chicken and ate, I just covered myself and tried to sleep.

The following day...

It was around 12pm, PK was was going back to P. E.

Him: I'm leaving now

Me: Okay

Him: I'm leaving next week, I will come back on December for just a day or two

Me: Whatever

Him: Behave

Me: Just go

Him: Killer will be on the watch

Me: Whatever! By the way I don't want him coming here

Him: Awumameli kaloku, so he will come often.

Me: I will lock my door and ndingazonga hambu

Him: Then you looking for trouble

Me: Whatever

Him: Okay

He gave a peck on the lips then he left.

Few weeks later...

I was busy studying, someone knocked at the main door. I went to open the door because Vuvu was ignoring the knock.

It was killer

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

Him: Can I come in?

Me: How can I help you?

Him: Was just checking if still okay

Me: Why wouldn't I be?

Him: You got some attitude neh?

Me: What do you want?

Him: What's up with you?

Me: Look here, tell PK that he must stop sending you here I'm not a prisoner.

Him: Yhoo, calm down uzoxhuzula

Me: Please go

Him: Since you okay, I will be on my way.

Me: Thank you!

I was really pissed, I just packed my books then went to visit Thobela.

I found him studying, he packed his books

Me: Didn't mean to disturb you

Him: No not at all, I'm done

Me: Okay

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good you?

Him: I'm good, since I see your face

He pulled me closer to him and started kissing me then he broke the kiss.

Him: Are you okay?

I nodded

Me: Why?

Him: You not usually like this

Me: No, someone made me angry

Him: Your boyfriend?

Me: No, yes...

He kissed me again then broke it

Him: Wanna talk about it?

Me: No I'm gonna be okay

Him: Okay

Later on...

It was around 7pm, I had no intentions of going back to home.

I cooked for Thobela but he was helping me cheering me up. He always know how to put smile on my face .

When I was done cooking, I dish out for the both of us then we ate chatting in between.

After eating he helped me wash the dishes, how cute.

I sent Vuvu a message that I was not coming home then switched off my phone.

He gave me his T-shirt to wear since I didn't have my pyjamas with.

We played a game on his phone giving each other turns, when we were tired playing the game so talked about us and cuddled.

He got on top of me and started kissing me.

He got between my legs, his hands squeezing my breast.

He slowly stripped me naked then I felt his manhood between my thighs.

He took out a condom I waited till he finished. He kissed me again, a moan escaped my mouth as he slowly went in.

I held him tight, he moved back and forth. I was feeling so much pleasure, he was good at what he was doing.

He was moving at a slow pace sending me to heaven, my body was reacting abnormally.

I wish he wouldn't stop, he moved faster and faster groaning out of pleasure.

He squeezed me tight as he was about to release, his groans slowly decreased.

Then he stopped, breathing heavily.

Our bodies were sticky and my feet were feeling abnormal.

He kissed my wet forehead and said "I love you".

He slowly took it out and went to take a towel.

He wiped himself then wiped me as well.

He later placed me on his chest and we chatted till we fell asleep.

To be continued...

Insert 56

I opened my eyes the following morning, Thobela was staring at me.

I moved my head backwards because he scared me.

A smile appeared on his face, his eyes were full of love, I could tell by his looks, they said everything.

" You beautiful yazi? " He said touching my chin.

I blushed, not uttering a single word.

Him: You are amazing, God really took his time when He was creating you

Me: Stop it

Him: Serious Onikayo, you stole my heart the first time i set my eyes on you, I somehow felt connected to you. There...there was just something about you, I couldn't control my feelings.

Me: You making me blush

Him: I'm sorry it's just that, I can't believe that you mine, I can't believe this...
We... Us..like we are together... An item.

I smiled

Him: There is something about your smile, I just love it

Me: Really

Him: Umhle Umhle nezinyo lakho

Me: Mxxm

He placed a soft kiss on my lips then moved backwards.

Him: I love you ONIKAYO and I mean it

Me: What about your girlfriend?

Him: Let's leave her out of this... Let's focus on us...

Me: Do you also love her the way you love me?

Him: You complete me, I feel completed with you. It's like you are the missing puzzle in my life. I really don't know why I feel this way about you.

He got on top of me, kissed my neck.

Him: What if he finds out about this?

Me: Who?

Him: Phakamani

Me: Don't care

Him: What you mean?

Me: We broke up

Him: But he was here few weeks ago

Me: We broke up the weekend he was here

Him: Okay

He kissed my lips while he took out a condom.

Few minutes later...

We were both breathing heavily laying on our backs.

Him: That was good

Me: Yhoo

Him: Did I tell you how much I love you?

Me: Yeah

Him: (Singing)Baby I wanna be your soul provider, I want to stay like that as long as time, just let me be.... I have been waiting for so long for someone like you...

I didn't know he could sing this beautiful.... Wow, he made my heart beat triple times than before, He made me fall in love with him even more.

Me: Wow baby

Him: I really love you.... I wish I could take out my heart and show you.... I don't know why I love you this much.

Me: I love you too

He kissed me then broke the kiss

Him: We gonna be late for class

Me: Kanene

Him: I wish we could stay like this

Me: Me too

We woke few minutes later and took a shower together.

I used his toiletries, when I was done I went to change at my apartment.

I went to school later on, I was a happy joyful mood, couldn't stop smiling, thinking about Thobela.

After school....

We went to the Mall together with him, we chilled there having good time.

My phone rang and it was PK, I ignored it because I had nothing to say to him.

Him: Who was that?

Me: PK

Him: What does he want?

Me: Don't know

Him: He still wants you back?

Me: And I'm not interested

Him: Do you mind telling me what happened between you guys?

Me: He is a control freak, Womanizer and he hit me for going out.

Him: Oh, so where did you go?

Me: To the club

Him: Don't hear me wrong but ke there is no guy that love seeing his girlfriend going out to night club, drinking and all that!!!!

Me: Mxxxm

Him: That's the truth...

Me: To hit me?

Him: As I said I'm not siding with him. He was totally wrong.

Me: Haiskaaaaa

Him: You really a smart, intelligent and beautiful lady. Honestly speaking azikufaneli clubs, worse your father is a pastor.

Me: Your father is a Pastor as well but you drink.

Him: Asifani... He was never really been there for me, all he did was support me financially but physically he was not there. I guess He loves his family more than me

Me: I'm sure he loves you equally

Him: His wife really hated me at first, he didn't even want me near her house. But I see she came around

Me: Is she a cruel person?

Him: I don't blame her though, it must been hard to accept umntana wangaphandle.

Me: Shame man

Him: Yeah

Me: So do you communicate with your siblings?

Him: Er... Er...no

Me: Why????

Him: What if they don't like me?

Me: So they don't know about you?

Him: Yes...Anyways enough about me. Let's talk about us!

He said pulling me closer by the waist and we talked about us, giggling sicela injezu.

We went back home later on, Vuvu was busy cooking supper.

Me: At this time?

Her: Sabelo wants me to sleepover again, uyadika vah!

Me: Shame chomi

Her: I will be away for a few days

Me: And I will be alone? Say you joking

Her: Wish I was

Me: Mxxm

Her: At least Thobela is here

Me: Mxm

I went to my bedroom and studied for few hours, Vuvu left while I was still studying.

After studying, I took a shower then ate, when I was done eating I took my laptop , laptop and went to sleepover at Thobela's apartment.

Him: Baby can I ask you something?

Me: Listening

Him: Is Vuyakazi a prostitute?

Me: No why?

Him: Was just asking

Me: Khawutsho maarn, Why asking?

Him: Never mind....

Me: Mxm

Him: Hahaha

We chatted then went to bed early that night

A month and few weeks later...

It was a Thursday evening, I was packing my books because I was done studying for the day.

My phone rang and it was my mother

Me: Mama

Her: Baby, how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Him: God is still wonderful , I just wanted to inform you that I won't be coming to visit you

I pretended as if I was sad

Her: I'm sorry baby at least there is only few weeks left till you done with your exams

Me: Yhoo

Her: When are you starting with your exams?

Me: Next week

Her: Better

Me: I can't wait to be home

Her: Can't wait either

Me: How is Dad?

Her: Your father is still doing fine, but he is still that busy man

Me: I know yhoos

We chatted for a long while then she hung up.

I heard a knock at the door, I slowly walked to the door.

Me: Who is it?

"Thobela " he replied then I opened

Him: Hey baby

Me: Love

He pulled me closer for a long kiss then he broke the kiss.

Him: Promise me that you won't leave me

Me: I promise

I really loved him

Him: I love you

Me: Love you too, now promise me that you will never leave me

Him: I promise

I smiled

Him: I'm taking a break from studying, so I decided to spend my free time with my babe

I smiled

Me: I forgot, you already started with your exams

Him: Yeah, only have few modules left

Me: I'm starting next week

Him: Study neh, We must make our parents proud.

Me: Yayazi! Distinctions Kaloku

Him: Please

Me: Sound like my father

Him: Hahaha

We chilled for a while then he left and I went to sleep.

I woke up early the following day, I cleaned the house. Washed my clothes together nezika Thobela, I washed the linens, Vuvu spend most of her time at Sabelo's house. She was scarce but Thobela was keeping me company.

I studied later on after doing everything, I spent the day with my books, seriously focused because I didn't want to disappoint my parents.

Few hours later....

It was around 6pm, I was busy cooking supper for me and Thobela . Poor thing, He was studying all day . I called him and told him not to cook, I will bring him food.

Him: That's one of the reasons I love you

Me: Shame, I pity you because you have been studying all day.

Him: I think I have found myself a wife

Me: Hahaha

Him: Ewe Yhoo.... I'm not gonna let you go makuncanywe

I giggled, we chatted few minutes then we hung up.

After cooking I took a shower then wore my pyjama and gown.

Someone knocked at the door while I was busy searching for my socks. I assume it was Thobela, so I went to open as usual.

I was shocked to see PK standing the door.

To be continued...

Insert 57

"Can I help you? "

I said holding the door

Him: Khasuke wethu

He pushed me aside and walked in

Me: What do you want?

Him: What kind of question is that?

He said while placing his laptop bag on the couch, He still had his work uniform on.

Me: I don't want you here

Him: Your mind is loosing left

Me: I'm gonna call the police

Him: Go head

He said as he was heading to the bathroom, he was on a chill zone.

I stood at the door and waited for him to come out.

I heard water running, this dude was about to shower. He had no intentions of going.

" You still standing at the door? " He said as he was walking to my bedroom, he took of his clothes and went to shower, he was whistling making me more angry.

I slammed the door closed then took a seat out of anger.

He walked in wrapping a towel searching for his car keys.

His phone rang and he answered.

Him: Hello...No, I'm in East London visiting my girlfriend....

He went out then came back with a sport bag.

Him: Phola uzoxhuzula

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxm

Him: Love you too

I wanted to grabbed him and and....ndimbethe.

Someone knocked at the door, I already knew who was it.

I went to open the door and nyani it was Thobela.

Him: I'm starving

Me: Guess who is here

Him: Who?

Me: Phakamani

Him: What does he wants? Haven't you guys broke up na?

Me: We broke up, I don't know why he is here

Thobela walked in then shut the door.

Him : Where is he?

Me: Bedroom

Him: Tell him to go

Me: He doesn't want to listen..but you know what? Take a seat, I want him to find you here.

Him: Okay

I dish up for the both of us then went to sit next him.

PK walked in

Him: And then?

I ignored him

Him: So it's you that is busy with my chick?

Tee: Ex

PK : I see

He moved closer and grabbed him and headed him

Me: PK what is your problem?

Him: You better shut up

Thobela fought back, but PK heat him harder , I tried to stop him but he pushed me against the Wall. He hit him so hard, he started bleeding.

PK: She is mine and mine alone! Yandiva????

He said pushing him out of the door.

Me: I hate you!!!

Him: Listen here and listen carefully. I Phakamani Poni I'm not going anywhere, the sooner you accept it there better.

Me: You crazy

Him: And stop sleeping around before I kill someone!

He said with a angry face,

Me: Mxxm, I don't want you

Him: That's not for you to decide!!!! I'm sick and tired of this stinking attitude of your. You here to study not nothing else!!!! Or do you want to turn out like Bulelwa????? Vrawusha??? I won't let you trow away your mothers hard work!!!!!! Do you know how it feels to be disappointed by someone who you gave your best for???

Yhuu he kept on talking endixelela indaba zam

Him: I love you ONIKAYO and I care about you! I want the best for you!!!!!! What happened to that sweet, innocent, humble and obedient Onika I fell in love with?

Me: Mxxm

Him: Keep acting like this and you will see what I will do to you and please don't push me!!!!

He went to the bathroom and took off the T-shirt he had on then went to sleep.

I quickly went out to check on Thobela but he was not outside, I felt so bad. This is all my fault, he didn't deserve this.

I went back inside then closed the door and locked, I didn't have an appetite anymore . I just switched off the lights and went to sleep at Vuvu's room.

Next morning...

The sun was blazing like hell outside, I could tell by the heat from the inside. I had to remove the blankets and I couldn't sleep anymore. My eyes still wanted to close but the heat was unbearable. I stood up and opened the window and curtain, fresh air slowly filled the room.

I went to the bathroom to loo, I bumped into PK at the passage. I was not in the mood for him, he was the last person I wanted to see .

Him: Morning

I just looked at him without uttering a single word and walked past him.

He grabbed me by the arm, I was just not in the mood to argue with him.

Him: I miss you

He pulled me by the waist and started kissing my neck.

I pushed him away

Him: What's your problem

Me: You are my problems... I don't love you!

Him: Xokela ntoni? I mean like yintoni inyanzelisa?

Me: Arg, you so full of yourself

Him: I love you, why can't you see that?

Me: Well I don't

Him: I don't believe you

Me: That's your business

Him: Uyazisokolisa because I'm not going anywhere

Me: Mxm

Him: Andifuni uphinda ndibone lantwana apha yandiva?

Me: And who are you?

Him: Phakamani Poni

I just rolled my eyes and went to the bathroom.

When I came out of the bathroom, I found him standing at the same position I left him.

"We need to talk "

Me: I don't want to

Him: Please

Me: I don't want anything to do with you

Him: Uyaxoka Onika, you just angry

Me: ...

Him: Let's start over

Me: Just like that?

Him: It's not like I killed your mother and want forgiveness

Me: Really??

I pushed him out of the way but he grabbed me and pulled me closer to him. He tried to kiss me but I didn't allow him.

Him: So what must I do to make things right?

Me: Nothing

Him: So you want to go back to that boy? Unfortunately that won't happen

Me: Watch me

Him: Khona, how long uspina nala ntwana?

Me: Doesn't matter

Him: Uhamba ulalwa ngoku Onika???

Me: That has nothing to do with you

Him: It has everything to do with me

Me: Mxxm

Him: You started sleeping with him under my noise?

Me: I so wish

Him: Huh????

Me: Ewe... I'm tired to be your fool, you do whatever you want and sleep with ever you want to sleep with and I must understand?

Him: That's all in the past

Me: Do you feel how it hurts?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: It's TO LATE

Him: ONIKA ungumntu wam wena, start accepting that! Because Ndizokukhaba unye if ndikhe ndakubona or ndava kuthiwa ubuhamba nalantwana.

Me: You won't tell me what to do and what not to do.

Him: Okay

Later on...

He left to buy us something to eat, leaving me behind.

I went to check on Thobela

Him: What do you want?

Me: I'm sorr-

Him: Please leave

Me: Thobela please do-

Him: I don't want trouble, so now please GO!

Me: Just like that?

I walked closer to him but he stepped back shaking his head.

Me: Please don't do this

Him: Please leave

Me: You promised me Thobela, you promised to never leave me

Him: You stood there. You did nothing, you watched your man beat me up

Tears formed

Me: That's not true

Him: I love you ONIKAYO but-

Me: But what?

Him: Please leave, I don't want trouble. I don't want him to come finish me!!!!!!!

Me: So you giving up on us? On me????

Tears slowly escaped my eyes

Me: I thought you loved me

Him: I do

Me: Then why you acting like this?

Him: Just don't want to risk with my life ONIKA!!!

Me: What you talking about?

Him: Just leave

He pushed me out then closed the door on my face.

My heart broke into million pieces, I really loved him.

To be continued...

Insert 58

I couldn't believe what just happened, I couldn't stop my tears, they were flowing uncontrollably.

People passing by where looking at me just imagine the picture, I slowly slide all the way to the floor, there was not even a door mat I sat on the cold dirty cement .

I didn't mind the people but continued to cry.

I felt someone tapping me on my shoulder as I was burring my face, tears dripping at the floor making surroundings at the soil on top of the cement.

"Yoyo... What is going on here? "

I could tell by the sound of the voice that it was Vuvu.

I didn't reply

"Your parents are here! " I quickly lifted up my head.

I saw my mother coming from a short distance, her face said it all.

My heart started to beat fast, I quickly wiped my tears but it was too late she already saw that I was crying.

"ONIKAYO!!!!!! "

Yelled my mother in a bold voice.

"Ma.... Ma? " I replied in a soft and shaky voice

Her tummy was showing up

Her: I. Z. A A. P.H.A (Come here)

She said in an emphatic voice and I could tell she was furious, that made me scared.

I quickly stood up driven by fear

"ndiyahamba mna! (I'm going)" whispered Vuvu on my ear as I was following my mother to the apartment.

I saw my father sitting at the lounge with a serious facial expression.

I entered after my mother, I stood by the door.

Ndava ngenkunzi yempama emqolo (I felt a slap on my back) I bent feelings great pain.

"Umeleni emnyango? (Why you standing at the door) " Said my mother.

Firstly I was confused by the surprise visit and secondly why they where angry.

Dad: Sit down!!!!

I quickly took a seat

Dad: You are a disgrace, do you know that?

Xabekutheni?(Why?)

I couldn't fix my eyes on my father

Me: I don't understand

Him: What did I do wrong ?????

Me: What you talking about?

Mama: Have you ever saw me drinking???? Or your father????

I shook my head

Dad: Talk, I don't understand sign language

Mama: And I don't remember giving birth to a child that can't speak.

Me: No

Dad: Good, Now tell me my child. Why you drinking?????

PK walked in, I just wished the soil could swallow me.

Me: I don't drink

PK : Xokelani? (Why you lying)

Dad: If PK didn't call us, we would have known that you busy partying here instead of studying.

Me: He is lying Tata , where did he see me drinking???

Hawu!!!! Kanti PK unjani???

PK : Drop the act Onika!!!! I have witnesses, don't let me call them.

Dad: Onikayo did we raise you like this???

I looked down playing with my fingers

Me: No

Dad: Then why you behaving like this????? I asked the neighbours and they say different men with different cars come to this house, is that true?

I shook my head

Dad: I'm gonna hit you with this phone, it will break on your face and I will buy a new one if you use sign language again, do you hear me???????

Me: Yes Dad

Him: I'm asking is it true or not?

Me: That's not true

Dad : So they lying? All of them????

Me: I don't know what they talking about,

Dad : Don't let me loose my cool

Me: I swear

Tears formed on my eyes

Dad: I'm gonna ask you one more time Onikayo!!!!

His facial expression changed from bad to worse.

Me: It's Vuvu's boyfriends

Dad: Oh... Mmm Vuvu's boyfriends????? Me: I swear

I said licking my fingers as a sign.

Mama: I'm so disappointed on you Onikayo..... You disappointed me my child.

Me: I'm sorry

Dad : What next? Pregnancy????

I buried my face, they kept on speaking their heart, some word were so sharp, striking my heart painfully.

Dad: Thank you Phakamani, if it wasn't for you we wouldn't have known what she was up to.

PK : I just couldn't let her destroy her life like that. I don't want her to be like Bulelwa.

Dad : You did a great Job, if you see here going to those places again, pull her by the neck and give her a hot slap.

Mom: Thank you my son...please put an eye on her every time you visit East London. If you scared to slap her call me right a way, I know how I will deal with her. Take her as your own sister, do whatever you would have done to disciple Bulelwa.

Hee Amen!!!! Only if they knew that he was my boyfriend as he claims.

PK : Enkosi Mama.... I will be on my way now

Dad: Thank you Phakamani

PK : You welcome

Dad: When are you returning to Cape Town?

PK : Tuesday Tata

This guy can act innocent bathong

Me: Mxm

That word just escaped my mouth

Dad: We moving Her from this place , but don't worry we will give you the address.

PK : I have an Aunt who is staying down town, she is living alone and she wouldn't mind if she stay with her.

Dad : Is it not far from school?

PK : She has a car and she works at the school

Dad: Wow, that's a good idea

PK : Let me call her

He took out his phone and called him so called aunt, he talked on the phone for few minutes then hung up.

PK : She doesn't have a problem, but she says she will be going to church... So we have to hurry

Dad : Perfect!!!!

Mama : You such a wonderful young man.... You humble and obedient. I'm sure your mother is very proud of you.

I was so annoyed you know, it was like he was using muti on my parents, the way they loved him.

Dad: Let's hurry up

I locked the house then we drove to this house down town.

We arrived to this beautiful house, we stood by the gate and waited for it to open.

The gate slowly opened and a dark skinned lady was standing by the veranda with a smile.

She welcome us we approached her, she showed us in.

The house was beautiful and simple in the inside.

My parents spoke with her they agreed to pay rent and food.

She only asked R500

Dad: Don't worry money is not a problem, we willing to pay more

Her: It's fine, R500 is fine

Dad: Please call us when she is giving you problems

Her: Don't stress, I have a way of dealing with problematic children.

I just looked at my parents with pity because PK is playing with them. I don't remember him having a family this side, this is all just an act.

I seat back and watched them being fooled.

We drove back to the apartment to collect all my belongings and went back to that house.

The woman was gone to church as she proclaimed, PK had his own key and that was sign number 1.

I packed my bags to the room I was moving in, while my parents settled next door.

The following morning...

I felt the urge to loo, I went to the bathroom. As I was about to go back to my room, I felt an unbearable pain on my waist. I walked to my room and lay down for a moment, I listened to the pain with my eyes closed.

After a few minutes the pain disappeared, I just closed opened my eyes and relaxed.

I went to join everyone for breakfast downstairs later on. I just hated PK, I wish he could just vanish into thin air.

My parents left after breakfast. They went back to P.E and I was left with PK and his so called Aunt.

I took my books and tried to study

"I hope you really studying " Said PK standing at the door frame

Me: Please leave, I hate you

Him: You will thank me later

He said then walked away. I just wish I could hit him so hard.

I studied for a while then took s nap. I woke up hours later and it was already dark outside. I closed the curtain then walked to the kitchen because I was hungry. I felt a light headache as I was walking in the kitchen ,Sis' Thandi was busy cooking. I poured myself water then I drank.

Her: Are you okay?

Me: Headache

Her: I have pain killers upstairs, I'm gonna bring you now now

PK was not home that time. She came back and gave me the the pills, I drank and took a seat, I even lost apatite.

To be continued...

Insert 59

I went to my room and lay down, I slowly fell asleep without eating supper.

I woke up early the following morning since I had a lecture. PK was laying next to me, I just got annoyed early in the morning and felt the urge to vomit. I quickly ran to the bathroom pass Sis'Thandi at the passage.

I stomach felt sick after vomiting, I rinse my mouth.

"Onika are you okay " She asked, I didn't even hear her come in.

Me: My stomach

I said while slowly brushing my stomach , he just looked at me then walked out.

I went back to the bedroom, opened the window and curtain.

PK woke up very pissed

Him: And then?

Me: Who invited you to my room

Him: Mxxm

He sad covering himself , I went to Sis'Thandi.

Me: Sisi please talk to PK

Her: What did he do?

I started crying

Her: What is it?

Me: He slept on my room

Her : Are you not a couple?

Me: No

Her: I don't get you

She said with a curious facial expression

Me: Please talk to him!!!!

Her : Okay I will

I went to take a bath then went back to my room but PK was no longer there.

I made the bed out of anger then applied lotion on my body.

He walked in without knocking

Me: Can't you see I'm naked

Him: No ,I'm blind

He said as he was searching for something then went out.

I dressed up , fixed my hair and went to join them for breakfast.

I just couldn't stand the smell, I covered my nose.

Sis'Thandi : What's wrong?

Me: This eggs...they just don't smell..

They looked at each other

Sis'Thandi : I told you

Me: What?

Sis'Thandi : Nothing

Me: I lost my appetite

I went back to my room I waited till they finished.

We left later on leaving PK behind

Sis'Thandi : Can I ask you something?

Me: Yes

Her: Are you using protection with PK?

Me: We were using protection when we were dating

Her : Are you sure?

Me: Yes

Her: Are you preventing?

Me: Yes, I only went once

Her: When?

Me: At the beginning of the year

Her: Which month is it now?

Me: October

Her: 1 2 3 4...

Her: Why did you stop preventing?

Me: Because we were using a condom

She lightly giggled

Her : Okay

Then we drove in silence , we arrived at school and went our separate ways.

After school...

I saw Thobela walking at a distance. I ran to him.

Him: WHAT DO YOU WANT?

He said with a disgusted facial expression.

Me: Do you hate me that much?

Him: Just go please!!!!

He said then walked faster, I slowly turned back and waited for Sis'Thandi. We drove back home later on, Sis'Thandi just dropped her bags and left.

PK was sitting on the couch, watching TV.

Him: Please sit down

Me: I don't want to

Him: Did you use protection with him?

Me: Doesn't concern you!

I said walking to my room, he grabbed me by the arm before I reached the bedroom.

Me: What is your problem?

Him: Did you or did you not?????

Me: Let me go

Him: Answer me dammit!!!!!!

Me: You hurting me!!!!

Him: I won't let go till you tell me

Me: We used protection, happy???????

He let go of me and I went to the bedroom. I was feeling so tired, so I rested for a while.

I woke up later on, PK brought me food. Me: Who said I was hungry?

Him: You starving my baby

I giggled

Me: Which baby????

Him: The signs are there!

Me: You crazy

Him: Okay let's do a pregnancy test

Me: I'm not pregnant!

Him: Prove it!

Me: Okay fine! I'm gonna do the pregnancy test!

Him: First thing tomorrow

Me: Fine! Now leave

He went out with his food, I continued studying.

I joined them for supper then went to sleep.

PK woke me up early the following morning.

Me: Huh?

Him: Let's do the test

Me: When I wake up

Him: Now please

He kept on nagging till I woke up.

We did the test, unfortunately for Pk it showed one line, he was disappointed.

Me: Told you

Him: Let's go see a doctor

Me: I'm not gonna do that!

Him: Please

Me: I'm not pregnant Phakamani!!!!!!

Him: Okay!!!!!!

Then he walked out, I went back to sleep.

Few days later....

It was Monday and I was writing my first exam.

I woke up early, made the bed. Ad I was about to take a shower, I discovered that I was on my period.

I didn't have pads, so I went to ask Sis'Thandi for one and she gave me.

Her: I thought you were pregnant

Me: Haibo why?

Her: The vomiting

Me: Hahaha I'm not pregnant

I said as I went to take a bath , I dressed up after bathing then she drove to school later on.

Weeks later...

I was done with my exam and that was a relief yhoo!

PK was back to Cape Town, my parents sent me money so that I can come back home.

I booked a bus ticket and left few days later.

I felt home when I arrived at P. E. I really missed this place. Mom came to fetch me at the station with Lubabalo.

He was a big boy about to turn one the following month.

I cuddled with him while we were at the car but he was busy, pulling my hair, my necklace.

"Hayi, hayi "(No, no) he yelled every time I removed his little hands.

Me: Haven't Bulelwa came back to her senses?

Mama: I doubt if she will ever get back to her senses.

We arrived home and we went inside, Dad was not home.

I placed Lubabalo on the floor, he ran around the house, making a lot of noise.

I went to take my bags from the car , it felt so good to be home. I missed my brother, I called him but he didn't answer. I assumed that he was busy, so I left him a voice note.

I slept with Lubabalo on my first night, he didn't give me trouble. We peacefully slept together. PK called in the middle of the night.

Me: What do you want?

Him: I miss you

Me: Mxxm

I hung up then switched off my phone.

I woke up the following morning, there was a noise coming from the other room. Lubabalo was still sleeping, I went to check, it was my mother she was moaning out of pain and Dad was helping him to walk.

Dad: Go open the car!

He yelled, I took his car key and went to open the car, He helped her get in the car then they left.

Gloria arrived later on, I was just worried about my mother. Isn't it still soon? What if something happens to her??? I had millions of questions running on my mind.

I called Luvano again, he answered

Him: What a sweet surprise

Me: Mom is in hospital

Him: What? What happened?

Me: I don't know. She just left!

Him: Which hospital?

Me: I don't know, ask Dad!

Him: Okay!

He immediately hung up and I was left in suspense.

To be continued

Insert 60

"Lubabalo is crying" said Gloria as she was busy ironing.

I rushed upstairs and brought him down stairs.

"He is probably hurry " Said Gloria as I was reaching downstairs

Me: I will make him cereal

Her: Let me help you

She took Lubabalo and walked to the kitchen.

Me: Is Mom gonna be okay?

Her: Yes my dear, don't worry too much

Me: Let's hope

Her: She will be fine

I bath myself and Lubabalo later on. We cuddled for a while but he got tired and started roaming the house, literally destroying everything he touched.

" Lubabalo!!! "

He blinked uncontrollably with both of his hands behind his back.

Me: Come here

He stood and stared at me, I smacked him on his hand, his facial expression slowly changed and began to cry.

Gloria came and lifted him up, He pointed at me with one hand covering his eye.

Gloria : Onikayo Ndizokubetha, uhlu kumeza umntana ka Luvano!

Then she shush him and placed him on her back.

I pick up the stuff he dropped and cleaned the mess he made.

Luvano arrived later on, he looked kinda pale.

Me: What's going on? Is Mom okay??? Where are they?

Him: Mom is Okay

Me: She has a baby?

He shook his head

Me: Is she on her way back?

Him: Mom lost the baby

Me: What???? What happened?

Him: I don't know... They said something about high blood pressure.... She is swollen, she look bad!!!! It was either her or the baby

Me: Oh no! Where is Dad?

Him: Still at the hospital

Me: Can I go see her????

Him: No, she will be back

Me: I want to see my mother

Him: Stay here with Lubabalo

Me: But Gloria is here

Him: Gloria is leaving at 4pm and what is the time now? ...3:45 pm

Me: Mxxm

Him: You will see her tomorrow

Me: Whatever

He walked upstairs and came back after a while with a small sport bag.

Me: What's that?

Him: Mom toiletries and clothes

Me: Is she going to stay longer there?

Him: No

Me: Then why do you bring her clothes?

Him: Uyabuza maarn (You asking to much)

Then he left, Mxxm my brother can be a *** Sometimes.

Gloria left later on and I was left with Lubabalo.

He was giving me so much trouble, wanting this, wanting that.

I placed him on my back because he was too much trouble.

I prepared supper, My phone rang while I was busy cooking.

It was a strange number, I picked up

Me: Hello

Caller : Please don't hung up

It was PK

Me: What do you want???

Him: Why you acting like this?

Me: I'm gonna hung up

Him: Baby.... Onika please don't do this, I Love you

Me: You an asshole do you know that?

I was flaming just out of the blue, I just get angry every time I hear his voice.

Him: I know you angry at me, I was just helping you out

Me: By involving my parents? Like seriously?

Him: You don't listen when I'm speaking, It was the only option I had

Me: I don't want you!!!!

Him: Why????

Me: You are a control freak and selfish

Him: Let's start over please

Me: So you can beat me again ?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: It's too late

Him: I don't believe in those words

Me: You don't listen NE?

Him: Let's make things right because I'm not going anywhere

Me: That's your business

Him: I feel so lonely without you.... I'm used to hear your voice every night. I miss your smile, your laugh. Please baby let's make things work

Me: I don't want to

Him: I love you Onikayo and I won't give up on you!

Me: Whatever

Him: I'm serious

Me: Bye PK

Him: I love you!

I hung up and finished cooking.

I bath Lubabalo after feeding him then we went to bed.

I gave him his bottle and switched off the light.

He cried didn't want to sleep, he also didn't want the bottle.

I found myself asking him WHAT DO YOU WANT LUBABALO!!! as if he was gonna answer me, instead he cried even more.

I lost patience, I just wanted to throw him by the window and sleep.

I placed him on my back then cover him with a fleece blanket.

I walked up and down shushing him.

He finally slept after a while, I carefully placed him down, I didn't any mistake to wake him up.

Then I switched off the light again and slept.

PK called again in the middle of the night, I ignored the call. He kept on calling disturbing my sleep, I just switched off my phone.

Lubabalo woke me up the following day, he was pulling my hair.

Me: It's still early go back to sleep

As if he understood what I just said, I gave him my back.

He pulled my Hair again, I ignored him.

He crawled over me then. I felt his finger on my nose. I opened my eyes and he was looking at me.

I had to wake up even though I didn't want to.

I lifted him up and went downstairs, I placed him in front of the TV and turned it on.

I went to the bathroom and quickly brushed my teeth and washed my face then I made Lubabalo cereal and he ate.

Dad walked in looking pale

Him: Morning

Me: Morning. How is Mom?

Him: He is fine, thank to God

Me: When is she coming back?

Him: Tomorrow

Me: Can I see her?

Him: She is coming back tomorrow

Me: Bu-

Him: Don't worry yourself your Mom is fine!!!!

Then he lazily walked upstairs

The following day...

Mom came back, she was still swollen but not that much and she was looking stronger.

Me: Are you okay?

Her: I'm okay sweetie

Dad walked her upstairs and said she need rest.

Few weeks later....

It was early December, the schools were closed and the streets were full of children playing different activities, yelling and screaming.

It was Lubabalo's birth month, he was turning one.

Mom was better, actually she was strong from day one.

It was only my father that was struggling.

Well...

It was a Thursday morning, the sun was blazing outside. I just wanted to go to the beach and swim for a while.

I heard Lubabalo hitting on my door, I ignored him but he didn't stop.

I stood up and opened the door, he stood there and looked at me. He was holding his bottle, the one he used to hit my door.

I lifted him up

Me: Awuva wena (You naughty)

He smiled showing his incomplete teeth.

Me: Awusembi (You ugly)

He continued to smile, I loved him kodwa.

We walked downstairs and Mom busy at the kitchen.

Him: Mama... Mama

Mom: Andikufuni mna (I don't want you)

Me: Say I don't want you either

I said looking at Lubabalo then went to sit in front of the TV.

I felt sharp pain on my waist like last time.

I closed my eyes, wanting to cry the pain was just too much

Mom: Are you okay?

I laid on the floor trying to reduce the pain but it got worse, my whole body heated, my feet felt abnormal.

Mom: Onika

Me: Huh?

The pain stopped after few minutes of suffering. I stood up

Mom: What is going on?

Me: I think I'm gonna have my period.

Mom: Sluma?

Me: Ewe

Her : Drink Lukewarm water and vinegar.

She made some and I drank, I then walked to my room and slept.

Woke up later on, my head was feeling heavy.

I made my bed then took a shower, I was not feeling well at all.

I didn't have apatite for anything, I just slept almost the whole day.

Few days later...

It was a Tuesday afternoon, I received a message from PK telling me he is in Town.

I didn't reply back , he called.

Me: Hello

Him: Can we meet please

Me: Why?

Him: We need to talk

Me: About what?

Him: Us

Me: There is no Us

Him: Please I beg you

I kept on nagging till I finally agreed.

Him: Can I come fetch you

Me: I will take a Taxi

Him: Okay

Me: We gonna meet at Greenacres

Him: Okay

We hung up

I bath Lubabalo and myself and we dressed up, I simply wore a white dress with blue sandals, I put on my hat and shades.

I packed Lubabalo's stuff I would be needing and closed the baby bag.

We walked downstairs

Mom: Niyaphi nawethu? (Where you going)

Me: Greenacres

Mom: Mmmmm

Me: See you later!

We waved at her then we left. I took a taxi to Greenacres.

We arrived there, PK called and told me where he was.

We met him by Shoprite

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

He took Lubabalo

Him: Let's go to the car

Me: Okay

We walked to his car , he unlocked it and we went in.

Then awkward silence filled the car

Him: I miss you

Me: So?

Him: Please let's fix things

Me: Why?

Him: Because I love you....

Me: I want to be free PK

Him: Okay, okay.... I won't tell you what to do and what not to do

Me: You just saying it now

Him: I promise, I just can't lose you

Me: I want to go where I want t when ever I want to

Him: Some places are not good!!!

Me: But you also clubbing

Him: Asifani (We not alike)

Me: How?

Him: You are a woman, Places like that decrease your dignity and respect.

Me: Then why you going?

Him: Okay to make it fair, I won't go to clubs. I will drink at home

I didn't reply

Him: I love you

Me: I hate you !

Him: You still angry, please baby I know you feel the same.

I didn't answer him, he lifted my head and next thing out lips met.

Lubabalo made a noise

We broke the kiss

Him: Please think about it, I love you.

Me: You must stop treating me like a child

Him: Then you have to stop behaving like a child...

Me: Mxxm

Him: I love you

I didn't answer him

Him: It's three months now

Me: ??????

Him: HIV test remember????

Me: So you think I'm HIV positive????

Him: Amen!!!

Me: If I have it I got it from you!!!!!!!

Him: You like being angry for no reason NE? Suyeza Lonto izokuxhuzulisa!

Me: OH I like being angry for no reason?

I started shouting, yelling at him.

Him: What's wrong with you? I mean like Uryt?

Me: I'm left

Him: Let's go

Me: I'm not gonna test

Him: Okay fine!!!!!!!!!!

Me: Take me home

Him: Haibo

I opened the door, he pulled me back

Him: I'm gonna take you home

I took Lubabalo and he started the car, we drove.

Him : Don't you want something to eat? Me: I'm not hungry

Him: Okay

He stopped at the garage for fuel then he went inside and bought lot of snacks for Lubabalo and juice then we left.

I ate Lubabalo's chocolate because it looked yummy.

PK : You said you don't want anything

I finished it but I wanted more, I was so craving for more. I swallowed my pride and cleared my throat.

Me: I want a chocolate

Him: Okay

I was really craving for nyani, I couldn't control myself.

We stopped at the nearest Garage and he bought me one.

I felt so good after eating it

Him: You loosing weight Yazibona?

Me: So I have AIDS?

Him: Mxxm

He dropped us in front of the gate this time.

Me: You brave

Him: They won't suspect anything

He pulled me closer for a kiss then I got out of the car.

I walked inside feeling sleepy

Mom: Wasn't that Phakamani?

Me: Yes, He gave us a lift

Mom: Oh shame, He is going somewhere. I just wish he could stay that way.

I walked upstairs with Lubabalo, we both slowly fell asleep at my room.

To be continued...

Insert 61

I was woken by Lubabalo later on, I stood up yawning.

I took him and went downstairs, Mom and Dad were seriously talking.

Me: I'm sorry to interrupt

I handed her Lubabalo than I went back to upstairs.

I realized I was hungry, I went back down and made myself sandwich.

I was feeling better and light, I don't know why.

I saw Dad walking out then Mom went upstairs. I went to sit at the lounge and ate my sandwich.

"We eating out tonight " Yelled my Mom

Me: Okay!!!!

I replied as I was was lifting my Legs On the couch.

She walked downstairs again

" Removed your feet from my couch " She yelled

Me: Yhoo Mama kodwa

Her : Those couch are expensive and they were not a gift.

I rolled my eyes as I removed my feet

Her: Thank you!!!!

My phone vibrated and it was PK , I answered.

Me: Hello

Him: I'm miss you baby

Me: Robots ziyadanyaza (Are flashing)

Him: Okay I will call you later

Me: Okay

Later on....

It was around 5pm, I was preparing to go out.

I wore my denim jean with my white sneakers and white Jersey.

I comb my hair into a neat bun , I didn't apply make up, I was just natural.

We left at 6pm , we drove to spur. I was excited because we always go to those fancy restaurant with those abnormal food.

I ordered spareribs with chips and milkshake.

Mom : I will have the same but with orange juice.

Dad ordered a heavy meal with coke, while Lubabalo was eating Mom's chips.

Around 8pm we left, we got home too 9pm.

I was tired so I just undressed and went to bed.

PK called as I was placing my head.

Me: Hello

Him: Can I come fetch you?

Me: I'm sleeping

Him: Okay

Then I hung, as I was sleeping I wondered why he didn't beg me or argued.

Maybe he is expecting someone else, I got angry.

I stood up and dressed up then I tip-toed all the way downstairs.

I slowly unlocked the door then jump over the fence.

I was boiling, talking to myself, bare in mind, it's around 10pm in the night and I'm walking alone eZwide.

I stood for a while waiting for cab, luckily I got a cab.

Driver: Where you going?

Me: Dwesi

Him: Ndawoni?

Me: Next to the Mqhayi high school

Him: Get in

I got in

Him: Are you not scared to stand at the road alone this time?

Me: I'm not scared

Him: You won't be lucky next time

Me: Hayi wethu

He drove then stopped when we were reaching the school.

Him: Where you going? I'm gonna stop at your door

I directed him , he stopped by the apartment.

Me: Thank you

Both PK's cars were parked at outside, I took out the R50 note I had and handed it to him.

Him: Thank you

I opened the door

Him: Change

Me: It's fine keep it, you really helped me.

Him: Okay

I got out and went to knock at the door.

There was no answer, I knocked harder, still no reply.

I banged the door and at the windows.

Yelling " Phakamani open the door, I swear I will break this windows if you don't open the damn door.!!!!!!? "

The bedroom light went on I went to stand at the door.

He opened half naked, only wearing his boxer. I pushed him aside as he was rubbing his eyes.

I went straight to the bedroom and there was no one. I opened the wardrobe and checked underneath the bed.

PK : What you doing?

Me: Where is she?

Him: Who????

I switched on all the lights and search in the bathroom, there was no one.

Me: Where did you hide her?

Him: What the hell are you talking about?

He asked with a confused facial expression.

Me: Why did you take long to open the door?

Him: Onika are you okay ?

He asked with a concerned face and I got angrier.

Me: Give me your phone

Him: What are you going to do with it?

I searched for it under the pillows that's where he normally place it. I found it and started paging it, he just stood there watching me.

I searched and searched but couldn't find anything.

Me: I'm gonna hold it until that someone calls

Him: I have been asking myself which tank are you, it's obvious now that you are a half tank! Uhalf

He said pointing at his head.

Me: Ndi half????????

Him: How did you get here?

Me: Jikeleza

Him: At this time????? Uphilile kakuhle? (Are you mad?)

Me: I'm not mad

Him: What if something happened to you???? Why didn't call me? I would have come pick you up????

He started yelling at me

Me: Don't yell at me

Him: I will yell at you!!!!

He said yelling louder

Me: I'm not your child, don't yell at me!

Him: What's up with you lately???? You full of shit!

Me: Shit???? Do you know what is shit?????

Him: You know what?

He walked out the room, I followed him, yelling, provoking him.

He locked the main door, then went back to the bedroom.

Him: Onikayo shut the hell up!

I yelled louder, pointing at him, pushing him.

Him: Stop this madness, there is no one here.

He got under blankets, I pulled the blankets and continue yelling at me, telling him shit.

Him: Onikayo, what is your problem?

Me: You!

Him: You sick!

He pulled up the blankets and covered himself again.

I pulled the blankets again.

He angrily stood up and grabbed me

Me: You hurting me

Him: Damn right!

Me: Let me go

Him: You making a noise.

He let go ,pulled me closer and kissed me.

I pushed him back, he pulled me back and kissed me again.

I let go and kissed him back, he broke the kiss.

Him: There is no one here. I'm sorry I took long to open. I was already sleeping.

Me: I don't believe you

Him: Serious

He kissed me again then we went to sleep.

Woke up early the following morning, PK was still sleeping.

Me: Please take me home

Him: What time is it?

Me: 4 am

Him: Okay

He lazily stood up, I dressed up and he took me home.

I arrived home, I was scared. I slowly opened the door and went in. I locked it again, my heart was beating fast, I was really scared.

I took a deep breath after unlocking then I tip-toed upstairs, minding each every step I take.

Yazi it's easy to go out at night but ziyabuya when you coming back.

I got to my room and quickly changed to my pyjamas. I relaxed as soon as I got under my blankets.

Few months later....

It was early March, I was doing my second year and had passed with flying colours the previous year.

I was still staying with Sis'Thandi, she was cool after all and she was opened but strict.

PK was in Cape Town, we were getting along and taking things slow.

Well....

It was a Monday morning the 10th of March.

I woke up to excruciating pain, I assumed it was period pains.

The pains got sharper and sharper. I stood up and went to Sis'Thandi's room to ask for pain killers.

I remember entering her bedroom then collapsed.

I woke up in hospital bed, with nurses around me.

Me: Where am I?

I was experiencing great pain

" We need you too push"

Said one nurse , I got scared

Me: What's going on here????

"You about to give birth "

I didn't understand

Me: I want to go home

"Push sisi! "

I screamed Sis'Thandi's name.

I pushed for the first time, second time then I heard a baby's voice the third round.

I cried out of fear, I was really scared and shocked .

Nurse : It's okay

Me: Uvelaphi lomntana? (Where is this baby coming from?)

I asked in a crying voice

Nurse : Will explain later

I was thirsty but they refused to give me water.

Few hours later....

A nurse brought the baby, Sis'Thandi was sitting next to me.

Me: I don't want this baby!!!

I said shaking my head

Nurse : It's your baby

Me: I was not pregnant, where is this baby coming from????? Take it away

To be continued...

Insert 62

Mini

The nurse went back with the baby, I didn't want to look at the nurse . I just didn't want the baby.

Sis'Thandi : Sweetie come down

Me: You also know I was not pregnant neh?

Her: This is shocking I know but you have a baby.

A doctor walked in and stood next to me.

Him: I know you shocked, they all get shocked when they find out at the last moment.

Me: I don't follow

Him: Okay , What you experienced is called Cryptic pregnancy.

Me: What is that?

Him: A cryptic pregnancy is when there is low or no detectable hCG in the mothers system, due to a hormonal imbalance.

Me: But I did a home pregnancy test and my period were normal. I don't understand.

Him : Well the fetus may go undetected by mother and Doctors until birth. The characteristics are, negative urine and blood pregnancy test, continued period and even negative ultrasound.

Me: Why didn't my tummy grow or baby movements?

Him: The baby grow slower than normal pregnancy

Me: This is strange

Him: Are you using birth a control method ?

Me: I was using injection, but only went once early last year.

Him: That's one causes of cryptic pregnancy. When you recently or are currently using birth control control method such as Norplant , injection etc, they continually release hormones to the body .

Me: This is this is just too good to be true

Me: So all alone there was a soul growing inside me?

Him: Yes my dear

Me: It's scary though

Him: You will be fine

Me: Can I see the baby?

Him: They will bring him

Me: Okay

They brought my baby, he was so tiny, it felt like a dream.

Everything was just tiny, I was even scared to hold him for long, I was afraid to break him.

They took him away after a while, I didn't name him. I used Sis'Thandi's phone to call PK.

He answered after several rings.

Him: Baby

Me: I have a baby

Him: You have a baby?

Me: Ewe, I'm at the hospital

Him: You adopting without telling me?

Me: No, I just gave birth

Him: Stop playing

Me: Serious, they told me to push, I pushed and a baby came out.

Him: Onika what's you talking about? When did you get pregnant?

Me: I don't know, they say it's cryptic pregnancy.

Him: What's that?

Me: Come to East London

Him: Are you for real?

I handed the phone to Sis'Thandi, she explained to her then handed the phone back to me.

Me: Hello

Him: How you feeling now?

Me: I'm okay

Him: I can't believe I'm a father!!!!

He was over excited

Me: My parents will kill me

Him: Relax baby will talk xandilapho

Me: I'm scared PK

Him: Don't be, everything will be okay

Me: I haven't named him

Him: Wow, it's a boy...

Me: Ewe

Him: Will name him when I get there

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Thank you

Me: Whatever

He giggled

Him: I have to get back to work, will call you later!

Me: Okay!

He hung up Sis'Thandi left and I just rested.

Later on...

Sis'Thandi came back with food and my toiletries.

Me: Thank you

Her: How you feeling?

Me: I'm Feeling better

I took the food and started to eat

Her: Remember I asked if you were not pregnant?

Me: We did s home pregnancy test and it was negative as the doctor Just said

Her : Phof nyani

Her: Did you inform your parents?

Me: I won't tell them now

Her: When you planning too?

Me: I don't know. But not now, I'm scared.

Her: I understand

I was discharged few days later, PK sent money for baby stuff.

I bought baby clothes, nappies, bottles and formula because I was not breastfeeding.

PK arrived 4 days later after I was discharged , around 8pm.

I was at my room trying to study while the baby was sleeping next to me.

PK walked in smiling,

Me: Please don't wake him up

Him: I just want to hold him

He lifted him up

Him: Hello boy

Me: If you wake him up, I swear you gonna put him back to sleep.

Him: I don't mind

Me: You just saying

Him: Mangalisohis name is Mangaliso

Me: I will go change it, I named him Luthando.

Him: Perfect..... Mangaliso Luthando Poni

Me: Mangaliso Luthando Silo

Him: He must take My surname

Me: We are not married, He is Silo!!!

Him: Okay won't argue with you.

Me: Good!

Him: So have you told your parents? So that I can prepare Money for damages.

Me: I'm not gonna tell them

Him: They find out njena

Me: I know but I'm not ready

Him: You will have to go home for the Easter holiday

Me: I'm not even going to the Easter conference. I will make something up

Him: They will get more upset when they find out later

Me: I'm not ready okay?

Him: I will go with you

Me: My father will kill me, and my mother will burry me.

Him: They will be upset for only a moment then they will come around.

Me: I'm but I'm not gonna tell them

Him: Till when?

Me: Till I'm ready

Him: You-

Me: I'm not gonna tell them and you not gonna tell them either... And I mean it
PK

Him: Okay

Me: Good

Him: So who will watch the baby when you not around, for instance June holiday?

Me: I will make a plan

Him: Okay but please let your parents know soon.

Me: Maybe next year or after my graduation

Him: Bhanxekile , Who will stay with the baby while you in P. E?

Me: Ask Sis'Thandi

Him: I'm not gonna do that

Me: Then it's simple I'm gonna give him for adoption

Him: Bhanxeke hureee kengoku!!!! (You mad)

Me: My parents can't know, please talk to her. I beg you PK.

Him: Your parents won't kill you

Me: My father aborted Thobile's baby, can imagine how he will reach kum?

Him: The baby is already gone

Me: I know my father, he can give him out for adoption.

Him: I will personally deal with him if he does that

Me: No, No, they can't know!

Him: Okay, but please tell them soon

I nodded , I made a bottle for him and placed a flask next to the bed with his formula and cold water.

We went to sleep later on with PK.

To be continued...

Insert 63

I was woken by Luthando's cry at midnight.

I gave him his bottle he rejected it, he continued to cry. I checked his nappy it was still dry.

I panicked, the baby wouldn't stop crying.

I switched on the light and lifted him up. I pace with him around the room trying to calm him down.

He continued crying, he wouldn't just stop. PK woke up

Him: What's going on?

Me: Let's go to the hospital, there is something wrong with Him. He just can't stop crying.

I said as tears formed

Him: Bring him to me

He said stretching his arms, I handed him the baby.

He removed the baby blankets Luthando was wrapped in and placed him on his chest.

He paced with him humming a lullaby.

Him: Give me the bottle

I quickly handed him the bottle , he gave Luthando the bottle. He slowly fall asleep in his arms. just couldn't believe I failed to calm my baby down.

When he was finally asleep, he placed him down.

I sat on the edge of the bed with tears flowing.

PK : Baby

I sniffed

Him: Why you crying ?

He asked as he sat next to me

Me: He doesn't love me

Him: That's not true

Me: I always fail to calm him down Phakamani.

Him: You just have to be patient with him, try to understand him.

Me: I'm not ready to be a mother, that's why he hates me.

Him: Mangaliso is just a baby, what does he know about hate?

Me: Why didn't he calm down?

Him: Because you panic to much, just relax and calmly calm him down.

Me: Okay

He pulled me closer

Him: Let's go back to sleep

He said kissing my forehead , then we went back to sleep.

He woke me early the following morning.

I changed his nappy then made him a bottle.

I then bath him later on and warmly dressed him then wrapped him in his baby blankets.

He went back to sleep, I took a bath and dressed up preparing for lecture.

Sis'Thandi walked in, still wearing her gown.

Her: Good morning...

Me: Morning

Her: How do you feel today?

Me: Better and I'm even ready to attend today.

Her: Stop worrying, I spoke to the school, I told them what's going on, So you will study at home till you super ready. You will do your assignments at home then I will submit them for you.

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome , now go back to bed and bond with your baby.

I changed to My pyjamas and went back to bed.

PK was still fast asleep, I joined them, ad I was falling asleep. Luthando woke up, I had to woke up too.

Me: What kind of a child are you?? Why don't you sleep?

"Hayi hayi Onikayo "

Said PK's voice

Me: I want to sleep

Him: Hoya umntana

He said with a serious voice

I lifted him up and placed him on my chest and shush him.

PK : I'm leaving tomorrow

Me: You just arrived

Him: It's work baby

Me: So you leaving me alone with this baby?

Him: Let's go to Cape Town together

Me: Luthando is still young, you know he is not a full term baby.

Him: I will call everyday

Me: Won't make a difference

Him: Onikayo don't be unfair

Me: You are the one who is being unfair, you living me with this baby.

Him: You want me to stay and lose my Job? Then who will take care of Mangaliso?????

I kept quiet

Him: Baby listen... I not running away. I will come visit when I have enough time.

Me: Whatever!

Him: I love you

Me:

Him: I love you both and I will never leave you.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: I understand , I will be just one phone call away.

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Few months later...

It was early July, the wind was blowing like crazy outside.

I was not planing to go home for the winter holiday.

Luthando was now four months, he was growing so fast, he was no longer that tiny doll, he looked like a real baby and he was healthy and active.

I was even done with my exams for the semester.

I was sitting at the lounge watching TV, while Sis'Thandi was cuddling with Luthando.

Me: I need to get him a nanny

Her: I'm here njena

Me: I mean when we both at school

Her: I will ask my sister to come babysit during the day

Me: That would be a huge relief

Her: Don't stress, you can go home for holidays. I will take care of Mangaliso

Me: Really?

Her: Phakamani explain to me and I don't mind.

Me: Thank you

Her: But you have to tell your parents sooner

Me: Okay

My mother called later on, I was making Luthando his formula.

Me: Hello

Her: Tell me when are you coming home?

Me: September Mama, I joined a team to teach at the winter school for Matriculants.

Her: You are a teacher now?

Me: I'm just sharing the knowledge, they struggling with Maths and physics

Her: I'm proud of you

Me: I'm just helping out

Her: Okay my baby, I will send you money

Me: Okay Mama

We hung up.

I took Luthando and fed him his bottle.

Sis'Thandi : He is growing

Me: It's like he is growing every hour

Her: He is cute though

Me: I'm just happy he is not that crying baby anymore

Her: He is used to the environment and he is growing.

Me: His father can't wait for him to speak.

Her: Whoa! We still gonna have trouble, he is going to destroy everything

Me: He must not be like Lubabalo, my brothers son. That one..... Yhoo he is just trouble!!

She giggled

Her: Babies are like that

Me: Let me go and bath him

Her : It's fine I'm gonna bath him, just prepare supper

Me: Okay

I just made pasta with mince, I dish out for the both of us.

Her: I will him first

Me: Okay

Sis'Thandi was spoiling me, she was doing everything.

PK called wanting to talk to his son, I put the phone on Luthando's ear.

I mean like Luthando don't know anything, he is just waiting his airtime. I put the phone on my air

Me: He doesn't understand

Him: He does

Me: He is only 4 moths Phakamani

Him: I want him to recognize my voice

Me: Uwo!!!

Him: Is everything fine? Nappies, Formula etc?

Me: Yes

Him: I'm gonna send money first thing tomorrow. Just in case of emergency.

Me: Okay

Him: I'm coming this weekend

Me: Okay

Him: Can't wait to hold him and put him to sleep.

Me: So you not coming for me

Him: Politics must fall

Me: I feel like this baby has taken my place

Him: You both important to me....

Me: Whatever

Him: Don't tell me you jealous

Me: I am

Him: Don't worry I will show you some love as well.

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

We chatted for a while then hung up.

Sis'Thandi : I'm gonna sleep with him tonight

Me: Okay

Her: You also need rest

Me: Thank you

Her: You welcome

The following day.....

It was chilly outside, Luthando was going for check up.

Sis'Thandi drove us, Everything was fine , he was healthy but he got an injection.

My heart broke into million pieces, the sound of his cry made me want to cry as well. I wish i could take the pain, I managed to calm him down and gave him his dummy.

We went back home later on and we rested for a while.

I decided to call my brother later on

Him: Ntondo (Last born)

Me: Bhuti wam

Him: What a surprise , how you doing?

Me: I'm fine, everything is fine

Him: Good to hear, so do you mind explaining why you didn't come?

I just cried out of the blue

Him: Onika

I tried to calm down but couldn't

Him: What's wrong???? Talk to Tom

Me: I'm sorry

Him: What's going on you scaring me

Me: I'm a disappointment.....

Him: Okay, calm down.

I tried to calm down

Him: Now tell your Luvano what's going on

Me: I..... I..... I..... I have a baby

Him: Baby?

Me: I was pregnant

Him : Pregnant? When? How?

Me: Cryptic pregnancy

Him: Cry cry ? What's that?

Me: Will explain when we meet

Him: I'm lost

Me: I have a baby, I gave birth. Please promise not to tell Mom and Dad please!

Him: ONIKA what you saying?

I hung up and sent him Luthando's pictures, he was shocked with no words to utter.

To be continued....

Insert 64

My brother was speechless after seeing the pictures, he was also disappointed, actually he was mad at me.

Him: Onika why?

Me: I'm sorry

I said while tears were flowing

Him: Undiphoxile Onikayo!!! (You disappointed me)

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Is it PK?

Me: Ewe (Yes)

Him: I don't have further words to utter to you now ...

Me: It was a mistake

Him: Bye

He hung up the phone on my ear, I released more tears. My brother was not picking up my calls, I tried several times but he just wanted nothing to do with me that moment.

Couple of days later...

It was a Friday afternoon, I was busy changing Luthando's nappie at the lounge.

Sis'Thandi was not around, I heard a car driving in , I assumed it was Sis'Thandi and I continued with what I was doing.

Car doors banged as a sign that she was not alone.

I picked up Lutha as I was about to go to the bathroom.

PK walked in followed by Killer and Ma8

" Oh Madoda, look at my boy! " He was all smiles as he took him from me.

Killer: Madam !

Ma8: 8ta Madam!

Me: Molweni

PK: Baby didn't cook? We are hungry

I looked at him as I folded my arms

Him: I'm sorry baby , I was missing my boy.

Me: So I'm invisible now and Luthando is shinning star?

He giggled

Him: Xolo, hello baby. How are you?

Me: Mxxm!

He looked at Lutha

Him: Uyasixabanisa noMamakho!

I left them there and went to the bathroom thereafter I went to my room.

As I was about to take a nap, PK walked in. He was holding Luthando

Him: You mad at me?

Me: Yes, you don't love me ever since Luthando was born and you don't give me attention.

He giggled

Him: That's not true

Me: It's true

Him: Baby come on, don't tell me you jealous

Me: Mxxm

He walked closer and sat next to me.

Him: I love you both, you both complete my life.

Me: You just saying it to make me feel better.

Him: I'm still excited about being a Daddy... I still can't believe I'm someone's father... Look baby. I love you and no one will ever replace your place in my heart. I'm sorry about earlier vah?

I kept quiet , he placed a kiss on lips.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Do you know what is on my mind this moment?

He gave me a dirty look

Me: You not serious

I stood up

Him: Yhoo baby when last did we?

Me: Not now PK stop it!

Him: Eshee kodwa nawe uyafuna

Me: Don't fool yourself

He giggled

Him: I'm joking

Me: Yadika vah!

Him: I'm hungry baby yhoo, please make us something to eat

Me: You should have told me you coming

Him: I wanted to surprise you guys

Me: Mmmm....

Him: Please baby

Me: Okay

Him: First take of that jean ingathi utsiba amanzi .

Me: Isigezo

Him: really baby, it's like you gonna cross a river

Me: Mxxxxxxxxxxm

I quickly wore another jean then went to the kitchen.

I just made fried eggs with port sausages and luckily there was enough bread at the bean. When I was done I served them the food.

PK : Oh bethunani Makoti wase Mamfeneni!!!!

Ma8: Would you mind if we share her?

PK : Bhanxekile!

Killer: Qondile!

I left them and went back to the kitchen, tied up then went to my room and took a nap.

Later on....

I felt hands touching my tights, I opened my eyes. His scent relieved me, his breath warming my neck, causing it to experience goosebumps.

Me: Where is Luthando?

Him: He is sleeping

He said as he was getting on top of me.

Me: He will wake up

Him: He won't, he just fell asleep

Me: Where are your friends? Sis'Th-

He placed his lips on mine and started kissing me.

He undressed me then I felt his manhood entering without warning and a moan of pain escaped from my mouth.

Him: I'm sorry

He gently moved back and forth , I moaned out of pleasure this time around, I was feeling great pleasure, he was sending me to heaven.

Few minutes later...

PK was still on top of me, Someone knocked at the door.

PK: Yes?

Sis'Thandi : Was just checking on you

PK : We coming

Sis'Thandi : Okay

Me: Maybe Lutha has woken up

Him: Relax baby Thandi ukhona

Me: No man, She is not a nanny

Him: She doesn't mind njena

Me: No

Him: You stubborn I forgot!

He got off me, I stood up and wore my gown.

I went to the bathroom, I took a quick shower then later went to join Lutha and Sis'Thandi.

Her: I didn't disturb you

Me: I miss my baby

I said as I took him

Me: He needs to eat and bath

Her: I will do that

Me: No it's fine. I will do it myself sisi

Her: I don't mind ketana

Me: Next time

Her : Okay

I made Lutha his cereal and he ate then bath him later on.

When I was done with Lutha, I went to check on his Daddy. He was fast asleep, to think it was around 8.

I didn't want to disturb him, so I went back to the lounge.

Sis'Thandi : I bought chicken

Me: Mmmm

Her: We not cooking tonight

Me: Yepppppy

Her: you cooking tomorrow don't be excited because your boyfriend love real food

Me: And I know sisi vah

She giggled

My phone rang as I was chatting with her and it was my brother.

Me: Hello

Him: So for how long are you going to keep this from Mom and Dad?

Me: I'm gonna tell them next year

Him: They gonna be more upset with you!

Me: I'm scared

Him: I'm giving you two months to tell them or I will!

Me: Bhu-

He dropped the phone

Sis'Thandi : What's going on?

Me: My brother wants to tell my parents

Her: Tell them before he tells them

Me: I'm scared

Her: The sooner the better!

PK walked in yawning

Him: What we having for supper?

Me: Chicken

Him: Qha?

Me: With bread

Him: I'm so tired of bread

Me: Then cook

Him: Mxxxxxxxxxxm

He said as he was walking to the kitchen. Luthando was now asleep, so I took him to the bedroom and placed him down then I laid next to him.

I just couldn't stop thinking about what my brother said earlier on, his word were playing on my head over and over.

PK walked in chewing, he joined us in bed.

Me: I told my brother about Luthando and he is angry.

Him: Zoba strong

Me: It's not funny

Him: He will come around doing stress about him

Me: He is going to tell Mom and Dad

Him: So?

Me: I'm not ready yet!

Him: Baby your parents need to know, it's been too long.

Me: My father will kill me

Him: He wont trust me!

Me: You don't know him

Him: They will find out eventually..

Me: I'm scared

Him: Don't be scared baby, everything will be alright.

Me: ...

Him: At least, Your parents will know about us and we won't have to play hide and seek anymore!

Me: Know about us????? You don't know my father wena!

Him: Don't worry he will be angry then come around!

Me:

Him: I will come with you

Me: No

Him : I told my mother about Mangaliso, so next month he is going to stay with her

Me: No

Him: You need enough time to study as rest

Me: My baby is nowhere, let's find a nanny then

Him: I don't want you to loose focus, I want you to pass with flying colours

Me: I will, but please don't take my baby away

Him: It's only few months, you can take him ngoDecember

Me: No

Him: Please think about it

Me: I'm not gonna send my baby away.

His phone rang and he picked u

Him: 8ta...let's meet tomorrow morning....I will bring promise with... Sure ntwana!

Then he hung up

Me: Who was that?

Him: Friend of mine

Me: Okay

Him: Won't I get my sweets tonight?

Me: you got your sweets earlier on, I want to sleep

Him: Please

Me: No PK!!!!

Him: Yhuu ungandibethi.....

Me: Goodnight

Him: I still want to chat

Me: I'm listening

We talked for a long while then fell asleep.

To be continued

Insert 65

I was woken by Luthando the following morning ,His father was still fast asleep . I have to woke up alone early in the morning while PK is enjoying beauty sleep, it's unfair isn't it?

I changed his dipper then refilled his bottle because he cried after he finished the one I just gave him.

I walked to the kitchen with him in my arms, Sis'Thandi woke up and took him from me

Her: I'm gonna feed him

Me : No i-

Her: Go back to sleep

Me : I-

Him: Go hav some fun with your man before he leave, remember he is staying in Cape Town.

Me : Yhooo okay!

I said as I went back to the bedroom, Shame my man was still fast asleep. I stared at him and found myself smiling, he was looking adorable and cute.

I took my phone and took a picture of him but he woke up

Him: What you doing?

Me: Taking a picture of my man

Him: Picture? ???

He said in that Xhosa assent

Me: Ewe

I said in a toddler's voice

Him: I don't want to see my picture on Facebook

Me : Why not? You look cute njena

Him: Bhanxekile! Delete that picture

Me: yhuu yavuya

Him: If I see that picture on facebook, yhooo !

Me: What you gonna do?

Him: upload it wena and you will see

Me: Will see!

Later on....

PK was insisted that we should go and buy Luthando new clothes, but he had plenty of clothes. PK was just overdoing everything, what i noticed is that he is going to spoil Luthando and I'm not going to entertain him on that one.

We took a shower together while Sis'Thandi was bathing him, yhuu PK love sex bathong ! I can't even breath property, every chance he get he want some.

After showering, we dressed up and went to the Mall . He was holding Luthando wearing shades, I wanted him to remove the shades, It was like he was going go trip or drop him.

Me: Take of the shades, you gonna trip

Him: Am I blind?

Me: You see dark

Him: You sick wena!

I was that carefully, over protective Mom.

Me: Give

Him: Women! Can you just relax ?

Me:

We kept quite till we walked in the shop and started shopping. We almost bought the whole shop, PK was just taking ,talking and talking.

Me: I wish your card declines

Him: That won't happen!

Me: You have been spending too much on him , since he was born!

Him: This is first born, if I don't spoil him , who will?

Me: But not like this

Him: Is Mangaliso complaining?

Me: Can he complain?

Him: Thank you

Me: Yhhuu shame

I said as we were walking to the till , he took out his debit card and handed it to me , while the cashier was scanning the items.

A lady came out of the blue and screened Pk's name , she was excited.

Him: Hayi hayi ntoni wandiphaphela ngathi ndiyi celebrity?

Her: You rude kanene

Him: Bazothini abantu? Hayi sundijongisa kangaka

Her: You never change

Him: A normal person don't yell like that in public... by the way ugrand?

I paid the cashier as they were chatting then gave PK his card

PK : Keep it by you, I will take when we get home

The lady undermined me

Me: Is there a problem?

I asked looking her deep in the eye

She faked a smile

Her: Hayi

Me: The way you look at me says something else

Her: Heeee

I just turned and walked straight to the door PK followed.

Him: Where from here?

Me :Let's buy something to eat then go home

Him: It's still early njena baby

Me: What do you suggest?

Him: Uske ubenje kewena

Me: I don't know where else to go

Him: Let's go to Ma8?

Me: I don't like your friend shame he is odd.

Him: Ngqina lam ke eliyana!.

Me: I'm just saying

Him: Let's buy something to eat then go back home

Me: Yes

I went to stand at the queue while PK and Luthando went to wait at the car.

" Hi " Said a male voice behind me, I turned around and it was a tall guy smiling at me.

Me: Hi

I said in a low tone

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Him: I'm Siya and you?

Me : Onika

Him : Where do you stay ?

I ignored him because he was annoying

Him: Can I have your number?

Me: No

Him: I just want to be your friend

Me: No thanks, my boyfriend don't want me to have male friends

He giggled

Him: He won't know

Me: Enkosi bhuti

I said as I placed an order , I searched for the card, when I was about to pay the cashier smiled

Her: Your boyfriend has already paid

Siya smiled , I just played cool with serious facial expression.

I waited for my order while he was ordering , he came stand next to me

Him: Can I please get your number, just your number

Me: I don't want to!!!! Can you please leave me alone!

I said as my order arrived, I angrily took the food and walked out.

I got to the car and opened the door and took out my anger at the door.

PK :And then?

Me: Some-

I thought to myself No, he will make a big deal out of it

Me: The cashier was rude

Him: Mxxxm zifuna isihlangu emlonyeni ezanto!

Me : Yeah

I took Luthando and he started the car , as driving PK's phone rang .

He answered

Him: Hello....What????... Where????.... Yerr....nxaaaa!

He drove faster, he was furious

Me: What's going on?

Him: Killer will take you home

Me: Why ?

He ignored me , looking ahead of him . We stopped at this garage

Him: Wait here Killer is coming

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Onika just do as I say

Me: I'm not gonna stand here like a mad woman

He: I'm not asking you I'm telling you!

Me: Andifuni

Him: Stubborn kanene

He got out of the car and opened my door

Him: Onika ndicela uphume

A car arrived and it was killer

Him: He will take you home!

I got out and he drove out with high speed

Me: What's going on?

Killer: Let's go

He didn't answer me, we got in the car and left. He dropped us home and left immediately after dropping us.

I went inside the house with Luthando, Sis'Thandi was watching Tv .

Her: You back already?

Me: Ewe

Her: Can I have him?

I handed Luthando to her

Her: Where is Phakamani?

Me: He left me at the garage not even saying where his going.

Her: He will be back

Me: Undishiya Malini?

Her: Who brought you home?

Me: Killer

Her: It's not like he left you there , Killer brought you back

Me: And he doesn't tell me what is going on

Her: No man it must have been something serious...Suqumba kaloku sisi

Me: ...

He came back later on, it was around 10pm and Luthando was fast asleep.

Me: Where you coming from?

Him: I was helping out at a stock take at another Game store here.

Me: Till this time?

Him: Yes , it takes time

Me: Okay

He undressed and went to shower , taking a long one till I fell asleep.

Weeks later ...

It was September holiday, I decided to tell my parents about Lutha . I was scared but I had no choice because Luthando was nearly 7 months.

I called PK the previous day since I was leaving the following day.

Him: Baby

Me: I'm taking Luthando home

Him: Like you gonna tell your parents about him?

Me: Yes

Him: That's good baby, I know you scared but there is no other way.

Me: I'm scared baby

Him: I'm gonna drive to P.E this evening, Will meet you there

Me : They gonna kill me

Him : They won't I promise

We talked for while then we hung up.

I packed Lutha's clothes and mine, Sis'Thandi was worried and sad that we were leaving.

She took us to the bus station the following morning, we arrive at the afternoon .I called Luvano to come pick me up but he was still not answering my calls. I called PK to find out if he was in P.E

Me: Baby have you arrived yet?

Him: I slept this side

Me: Come fetch us from the station

Him: Okay Love

We waited for a while then he came fetch us

Him: Calm down

Me: I'm scared

Him: Do you want me to come with you?

Me: No, you will make matters worse

Him: Okay baby

He stopped few houses away

Him: Relax

Me: I can't

tears started to form

Him: Please don't cry

Me: My parents will be disappointed

Him: I know but they will come around

A stepped out of the car after a while, my heart was beating fast and my hands shivering.

I slowly walked the remaining distance, I took a deep breath when I arrived by the gate then I opened the gate. Dad's car was parking outside, I wanted to cry out loud . I walked in and slowly went inside the house.

There was no one at the lounge, I continued walking in .

Mom walked in coming from the kitchen, my joints began to fail me.

She smiled walking towards me

Her: My baby is back!!!!

She yelled as she was walking closer to me

Her: Who's beautiful baby is this? ?? He looks cute

I swallowed very hard, my mouth failed me.

Her : You baby sitting now?

I shook my head

Dad walked in smiling

Mom: Ngoka bani bethunani?

She said as she kissing him.

Tears just escaped from my ears

Me: I'm sorry

Mama: What's up baby? Are you okay?

Me: I'm sorry

Dad: About what?

Me: For having a baby

Mom: Having a baby? What you talking about?

Me: This is my baby

Dad: What?

Mom: Your Baby?

Me: I gave birth early this year and was afraid to tell you

Mom: Heee mntana ndini bumithe nini?

Me: I didn't know nam

Mom: So you kept quite and said nothing?

Me: I was scared Mama

Mom: Get out!

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Onikayo get out of my house!

I looked at Dad

Him: Phuma

Me: I'm sorry Mama

Tears flowed , Mom shoved me out of the house

Her: You want to be an adult? Now go to your boyfriend and ask him to make you his wife!!!

Hatred and disappointment was written ob theirs face , they were angry and wanted nothing to do with me.

I begged them but they didn't listen, my presence disgusted them .

To be continued...

Insert 66

I wish I could turn back the time, go back to that Mamas baby, the one she used to sing lullabies to, the one she used to tell how much she loves, Iqayiya nebongo lakhe. Her little princess, her last born.

Why am I such a disappointment? Why didn't I listen to my brother when he told me to play safe? My mother told me to behave and not disappoint her, They gave me everything I wanted. What did I do in return? Ndababulela ngomva wesandla. I'm really a disappointment, how could I hurt them like that?

Tears were flowing uncontrollably turn my cheeks to my neck wetting my baby.

He was looking at me touching my cheeks and pulling my hair. I squeezed him tight against my chest, he calmly stayed in that position as he was sensing that I was hurting.

" Onikayo I don't want you in my house, neither my yard! Now go!" Said my father with a furious tone, he even wanted to throw me outside the yard.

Me: Tata ixolo...

I said in a sorrowful way

Him: Heyi mntana ndini! !!!!

He said stepping closer, I stood up and slowly walked to the gate hoping he will call me back but he didn't.

He just locked the gate after I went out, I stood at middle of the road crying looking all directions like a lost kid.

I wiped my tears and called PK

Him: Baby

I cried

Him: Baby what is going on?

Me: They hate me Phakamani

Him: What happened?

Me: They chased me away. ...

Him: Where are you now?

Me: I'm outside our yard

Him: Stand there I'm coming

I waited for him, I saw my sport bag flying at the air then my father turned back.

I slowly went to pick it up , PK arrived and fetched us.

I was quite all the way , we arrived at the apartment.

Him: Ain't you hungry?

I shook my head, He took Lubabalo

Me: My parents hate me PK

I said as I slowly sat down, I was weak, I didn't have energy. The only energy I had was to cry .

Him : Don't cry baby, they just angry. They will come around

Me: What if they don't?

Him: They will trust me.... This is still shocking to them. Give them space

Me: I hate myself...

Him: Baby please don't do this to yourself. We all make mistakes

Me: I disappointed them Phakamani, I wish you saw the hatred on their faces....

Him:They won't be mad at you for long. They were not gonna say " Halala she brought us a grandchild! " and make a part of the year

Me: You not helping

Him: Im speaking the truth... They hurting you disappointed them

Me: This is your fault!

He gave a shocked facial expression

Me: You are the one that made me pregnant!

Him: Haibo!

Me: You don't love me wena ! You just want to destroy me!!!!

I stood up , walked to the bedroom banging the door and locked myself.

"Baby I'm sorry. .." "Onika please open the door. .." " Baby I know you hurting, please open the door....Let's talke"

Said PK while he was knocking at the door, I ignored him as I was sobbing with one pillow covering my head.

I got tired of knocking and left , I later heard the car driving out.

I removed the pillow and took out my phone, I called my sister.

Her: What a surprise

Me: Sisi ndimoshile

Her: What did you do?

Me: I have a baby , Mom and Dad chased me away. They don't want anything to do with me.

Her: Wait...Are you pregnant or you already gave birth?

I explained everything to her I didn't miss a single detail

Her: Why so long?

Me: I waa scared

Her: You should have told me at least

Me: I'm sorry

Her: 7 months? ?????

Me: I was scared Sisi , I just didn't know what to do

Her: So does your boyfriend know? Is he supportive?

Me: He knows and yes he is supportive I don't want to lie. He buys everything. He calls everyday, he does it all, I'm even at his house.

Her: How old is he ? He is 26

Her: Yhuuuu 26? What did you expect dating an older guy?

Me:

Her: Where does he stay?

Me: Dwesi

Her: Do I know him?

Me: Bulies brother

Her: Phakamani?????

Me: Ewe

She giggled but not in a happy way

Her: Amen!!!

Me: I know

Her: Heee wethu , funa ukuthi you didn't crush anyone your age?

Me: He came first

Her: How long have you guys started dating?

Me: He is my first love , We dating when I was 15 about to turn 16.

Him: Onikayo!

Me: Yabo why I didn't tell you

Her: Hamba phakamani! So what you going to do?

Me: I'm gonna continue begging them

Her: I will help you although I'm disappointed as well

Me: I'm sorry

Her: What is done is done and can't be reversed

Me: I'm sorry for disappointing you guys

Her: We all make mistakes wethu...

Me: Luvano don't want to talk to me, he is angry

Her: Nxilile lowo!!!! He forgets easily.

Me: I wish this could just blow away

Her : It will but it will take a little time

Me: I hate myself

Her: Don't mntase....anyways what is the gender?

Me: It's a boy

Her: Ncooo, don't you want to sleep over here tonight?

Me: PK and the baby are gone

Her: Where too?

Me: I locked myself in the bedroom then he left

Her: ONIKA!

Me: I was angry okay

Her: You can't take it out on the poor guy

Me: Hayi wethu

Her: Don't say nyayi wethu...You must apologize to him when he comes back

Me: I won't

Her: He is gonna leave you if you acting this way

Me: I don't care

Her: Don't be selfish Onika, at least he didn't leave you and you should appreciate that

Me:Whatever

Her: I'm still your older sister

Me: Xolo

Her: You gonna apologize to him when he comes back and that is an order.

Me: Okay yhooo

Her: Please come stay with me

Me: Won't your husband have a problem?

Him: I will talk to him

Me: Enkosi

Her: Just be strong okay?

Me: I will try

Her: Good girl

We hung up after a while

PK came back later on , I was now undressing and the door was unlocked.

He knocked

Me: Come in

He opened the door

Me:Where is Luthando?

Him: I left Mangaliso with my mother

Me: Without my concern?

Him: You locked yourself , so what were I supposed to do?

Me:

Him: Baby , I know you hurting but crying won't help. Just give them time and they will come around.

Me: I wish that was easy

Him: I'm here for you ...

Me: I want my parents

Him: Baby just calm down, They are still angry.

We went to sleep later on.

Few days later...

I was staying at my sister's house, Pk had to go back , because he was working the following the following Monday. He left me money for Luthando .

My parents were still angry at me, Thobile volunteered to look after Lutha while I'm at school. She didn't want him to go stay with PK's Mother.

I went back to school the following week, my father cut off my allowance. He didn't send me money for rent, he totally cut me off his life .

The greatest pain is to be hated by your own parents , it hurts and affect you emotionally and physically.

I tried to contact them but they wanted nothing to do me and that was just painful even words couldn't describe the feeling.

PK was supporting me financially and Thobile was helping were she could.

I understand my parents reaction but I didn't understand why Luvano was acting that way. I just let him be and was angry at him.

I know I disappointed but he was supposed to help Thobile to beg my parents.

To be continued...

. Insert 67

I felt incomplete without my baby by my side. I missed the sound of his crying voice, when he cry , when he holds my fingers, pulling my hair.

He was everything, I didn't know I loved him this way. I just wished Thobile could bring him now , so that I can lullaby him to sleep.

Well...

It was late October , the exams were around the corner. My parents were still not talking with me , I have just accepted that and hoping that one day they will find it in their heart to forgive me.

As for Luvano I didn't care if he forgive me or not. I didn't understand why he was acting like b*tch. I was not contacting anymore, I'm sure he was wonderful why I'm not calling, why am I not begging him anymore.

Sis'Thandi brought her sister to come stay with us, She was a yellow bone with a beautiful smile. She was going to study management the following year at Forthare. Her name was Babalwa and she was very talkative, I liked her.

At least there was some at same age group as me. We almost talked about everything and we were sharing the same room, although there was an empty room for her but she wanted to share with me.

She respected me and I respected her , we just bonded as if we were sisters.

One Friday afternoon, I was coming from school. I arrived home and went straight to my room and took a nap back because I was feeling tired.

Babalwa and Sis'Thandi were not home, so it was quite kamnandi.

My phone vibrated it was an incoming call. I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

Caller: Hey beautiful

It was a male voice

Me: Who is this?

Him: You scarce

Me: Who are you?

Him: I told you that I will get your number

Me: If you don't tell me who you are , I'm gonna hung up

He giggled

Him: It's me Siya

Me: Siya waphi?

Him:Haibo Onika, remember paying for you at the takeaway place?

Me: Where did you get my number?

Him: Doesn't matter

Me: Please dont ever call me again!

I hung up,

He called again, I rejected his call. He send me a message.

"Onika please don't be like this I love you...can I come pick you up? I know you have a boyfriend and I'm not saying break up with him. I just want you to give us a try."

I just read it and didn't reply.

Later on...

Babalwa and Sis'Thandi were not yet back.

I went to the kitchen and started cooking supper. PK called as I was chopping my veggies.

Me: Baby

Me: Love

Him: What you doing?

Me: I'm cooking

Him: Mmmm...I wish I was there . I'm tired eating bread almost everyday.

Me: Why don't you cook?

Him: By the time I get home , I'm already tired

Me: Hayi you lazy PK

Him: I don't like cooking mna

Me: Shame on you

Him: At least I have you, you will cook for me

Me: Aint you dreaming?

Him: I'm not dreaming

Me: Mmmm

Him: I miss you

Me: I miss you too

Him: I sent your sister money yesterday for Mangaliso

Me: Okay

Him: I miss him yazi

Me: I miss him too, this house feels empty without him.

Him: Will you be able to come see me after the exams?

Me: Cape Town?

Him: Yes with Mangaliso

Me: I don't think my sister will approve that

Him: Please baby

Me: I will talk to her

Him: Please

Me: Okay baby

Him: Thanks baby...I will send you Monday first thing tomorrow

Me: I'm still fine

Him: Pride kanene. I'm gonna send you money

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Then we hung up

Sis'Thandi and Babalwa arrived later on , I was even done cooking.

Sis'Thandi : MmmMmm....I'm hungry

Me: I will dish up now now

Babalwa: Hurry up yhoo

I giggled then dish up for all us . We ate chatting in between, When we were done eating, Babalwa did the dishes.

I went to study at my room while they were still Tv.

I studied till midnight, I was extremely exhausted. I closed my books and went to join Babalwa in bed.

I woke late the following day. Everyone was already sitting at the lounge.

I searched for my phone under the pillow, I had 10 missed calls. From PK and two different numbers. I called PK

It rang several times without being answered, I assumed he was at work. I stood up and went to the bathroom, I did my daily morning hygiene routine.

When I was done, I went back to the bedroom and tied up then went to join everyone at the lounge.

I greeted everyone and they greeted back

Sis'Thandi : I made porridge

Me: Isidudu?

She nodded

Me:Yummy!

I went to the kitchen immediately and dish out for myself then went to sit at the lounge.

Babalwa: I feel like going out

Me: Mmmm

Her: Let's go to the Mall Oni

Me: And do what?

Her: Window shopping and buy ice cream

Me: Mmm

Her: Please, hello it's Saturday

Me: Okay

Her : I love you

Me: Mxxm

Sis'Thandi : What about me?

Babsi: Next time

Sis'Thandi :Mxxm

I finished eating then I took a quick shower, the sun was blazing outside.

So I wore my white shorts with a transparent blue shirt and my white sandals.

babalwa almost like me but she was wearing a tank top and flipflops.

We also wore our shades and hats, she made me miss Bulelwa.

Me: You remind me of my high school friend, we were this close and bought the same clothes, doing everything together.

Her: Where is she?

Me: We not close anymore

Her: Shame

I giggled

Me: I hate that word

Her: Shame

Me: Mxxm

We took a taxi and went to the Mall.

Her: Promise you won't be mad at me

Me: About what?

Her: Your ex boyfriend asked for your number and gave it to him. He said he wanted to make things right with you.

Me: Ex boyfriend?

Her: Bethetha kabuhlungu and I felt sorry for him. He was even crying.

Me: Thobela?

Her: Siya

Me: Siya?????? Rhaa undiqhela kakubi!!!! I never dated him

Her: Huh?

Me: Ewe we met once

Her: He is the one that said I must bring you here....he played me

Me: Let's go back home

"Ladies " Said a male voice and it was Siya

Me: Babalwa let's go

He grabbed my arm

Me: Don't touch me

I said yanking myself

Him: I'm gonna cause a big sin

Me: Go ahead!

I said walking away

"What kind of mother abandon his child? Onikayo umntana uyakudinga lona umhlale!" He said as he was grabbing my arm.

Everyone was looking at us, I was so embarrassed

Him: She still needs you, she is only one month .

I was boiling inside, anger was written on my face.

Him: I will stop if you allow me to take you home

He whispered

Me: Let me go

Him: You aborted my first and second chi-

Me: Okay fine!

We walked to his car, I just wished I could vanish into thin air.

He opened the door and I entered while Babalwa took the back seat

Her: I'm sorry, I didn't know

I was just angry at her as well, Siya got in also and started driving.

Him: Onika

I looked ahead of me and didn't answer him

Him: I love you , I'm doing this out of love

Me:

Him: That's the only way I could get your attention

Me: Mxxm

Him: Ndithini joe xandikuthanda?

Me: I have a boyfriend...What part don't you understand?

Him: Mandela said people shall share!

Me: Mxxm

Him: Why do you hate me so much?

Me:

Him: I don't mind being a spare wheel.

Me:...

Him: I will buy you anything you want, whenever you want .

Me: Do I look poor to you? By the way my boyfriend does it all so I don't want and don't need your money.

Him: Okay just allow me to love you

Me: My boyfriend loves me enough

Him: You playing hard to get and I like it

Me: Mxmm

He dropped us in front of the gate

Me: Who told you I was staying here?

Him: That doesn't matter

Me: Mxxm

Him: I won't give up on you

I opened the door and walked straight without looking back.

"I'M TRULY SORRY "said Babalwa as we entered the house.

Me: How can you give out my number without confirming with me?

Her: He tricked me and I felt for that. I'm really sorry

Me: Mxxm

Her: Onika please I didn't know, I promise it will never happen again

Me : You know I'm dating PK right? Now, why did you give out my number?

Her: I don't know

Me: What if he called while PK was here?

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Hayi sukaa!

I said while walking to my room, she followed

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Where is my shades and hat?

Her: I don't know

Me: Shit I left them in that car

Her: Yhoo

Me: Mxxm I'm gonna by new ones

Her: So are we cool

Me : I just want to be alone

Her: O-

Me:Please leave

She left and I took a nap.

To be continued...

Insert 68

I woke up later on, it was around 6pm.

As I was walking to the bathroom, I over heard Sis'Thandi and Babalwa arguing.

"Worse you know how PK is when he is angry, he will make this house feel tiny"

Bulelwa: I don't know what got into me

Sis'Thandi : If PK finds out about this, uzosikhaba sinye sonke apha amazinyo ajonge phezulu akazokhetha.

Babsi: I said I'm sorry

They stopped talking when I stepped in

Me: What will make him that angry?

Sis'Thandi: This siya guy

Me: It's not like I'm dating him

Sis'Thandi : You better tell him before someone else tell him

Me: Why you so scared of him?

Sis'Thandi: Sit wena and don't tell him then you will know why.

Me: Haibo you are his aunt he will never involve you

Her: hayi!

She said shaking her head as she was walking to her room.

Me: What's going on?

Her: So awuyazi?

Me: Know what?

Her: I don't want more trouble... let me leave it like that!

Then she left me there with lots of question marks.

I went to my room and didn't even felt to loo anymore.

I took my phone and called PK

Him: Baby

Me: There is someone troubling me here

Him: Who is that?

Me: Some guy named Siya...you won't believe what he did today.

Him: What did he do?

Me: He humiliated me in the Mall saying I had abortions ...he was yelling everyone was looking at us.

I told him everything not leaving a single detail.

He giggled in a upset way

Him: Don't worry I will deal with him

Me: I'm scared what if he comes here tomorrow

Him: Don't stress baby, he won't

Me: How do you know because you in Cape Town

Him: I will send Killer to wake him up

Me: Will Killer be able to do that? Because that guy is full of himself

Him: Don't worry baby...I will call killer and Ma8 now

Me: Thanks goodness

Him: Don't worry baby if someone mess with that people person is messing with me as well.

I giggled

Him: Why you laughing

Me: Ezinye izinto azifani nawe

Him: Akhonto ifana namntu

Me: That's true

Him: Any luck with your parents?

Me: No

Him: They will come around just be patient

Me: Yeah

Sis'Thandi's phone rang, she answered.

Her: Hello...Okay

She said as she went outside, She came back followed by Ma8 and killer.

Killer: Molweni

We greeted back

Ma8: Ni grand?

Me: Fine thanks and you?

Him: Im good!

Killer : Call Siya and say he must come you want to talk to him

Me: Okay

Babsi: O'h yini!!!!

I reached for my phone

Babsi: Please don't kill him

Me: Haibo they won't

Babsi: Onika...don't

Killer : Babalwa what is your problem?

She kept quite , I called Siya and he agreed to come.

He called back after a while telling me he is outside, I told killer.

Killer: What do you think?

He was referring to Ma8 and Ma8 smiled. Sies I hated that guy yhoo.

Babsi: This is all my fault....No no no

Me: You over reacting

Killer : Go first Onika

I went out to the car and opened the front door.

He was smiling

Him: I knew you will miss me

Me: Mxxm

Him: You look beautiful do you know that?

Me: You playing with fire

Him: I love you

I saw the doors opening, wabheka bheka.

Me: I warned you

Killer : So you the one busy troubling my girlfriend?

Him: I'm sorry bra....I'm leaving

Ma8: Voetsek move

I got out of the car while he shifted and set on the seat I was sitting on and Ma8 sat on the driver's seat.

Killer : Go inside , we will deal with him

I went walking away as the car was driving, I don't know where they were taking him.

I walked inside, Babalwa was pacing around the lounge

Me: Hayi what's up with you?

Her: Do you realise what you just did?

Sis'Thandi : Hayi Babalwa

Her: This is not right, that poor guy does deserve this

Me: So what should I have done?

She just walked out of the room and went to the other room.

I went to my room and slept because I was not in the mood for her drama.

Few weeks later

In late November, I was done with my exams. I was really missing my man Kodwa I last saw him when we were in P.E .

Thobile didn't have a problem with me going to Cape Town because I said PK was missing his son.

So PK sent me money to go to P.E and again to Cape Town. I fetched Luthando in P.E then left for Cape Town the following day.

PK fetched us at the bus station that afternoon. He was excited seeing us.

Him: Someone is growing and heavy

He said as he was taking Luthando from me then he placed a kiss on my lips.

Him: I missed you guys yhoo

Me: Miss you too

Him: How long are you guys staying?

Me: Only a week

Him: Bhanxekile

Me: Thobile said so

Him: One week qha?

Me: Ewe

Him: Im going to call Thobile and tell her at least two weeks

Me: You can try

Him: This is abuse

I giggled as we walked to the car, he opened the door for me to get in then handed me Lutha.

He took my bag and put it at the back seat then he drove us to this apartment . It was three room apartment , One bedroom, bathroom , small kitchen and a lounge.

Him: I have to go back to work, will see you later

Me: Okay

Him: Call me if experience any trouble

Me: Okay

He placed a kiss on my lips again then he left.

I placed Lutha down as I took a seat.

He crawled all over the lounge , I was sleepy but Lutha didn't allow me to sleep because he was demanding so much attention.

Later on...

It was around 4pm, Lutha was sleeping, so I started cooking.

Because I know PK will be complaining ,wanting real food.

I just made chicken, rice , potatoes and pumpkin. I was not in the mood to cook many pots.

I finished cooking early, Lutha was still sleeping. Wow! He woke up when i finished bathing.

He was crying non stop, I gave him his bottle an he kept quite.

He didn't want me to put him down , So I just wore my gown without applying lotion, I was naked underneath.

PK arrived as we were sitting at the lounge watching cartoons. He didn't want me to move an inch. Yhooo this baby is demanding to much.

PK : This is a nice feeling yazi

Me: What feeling?

Him: Coming home to your family

Me: Amen!

Him: I love you njena

He said as he came sit next to us.

Him: Wow I see teeth

Me: Two phezulu and the other two ezantsi asaphuma.

Him: Khawungene!

He said forwarding his fit to Lutha

Me: Please take him, I want to dress up

Him: You naked?

He said as he was moving my gown

Him: Mmmm

Me: Mxm

I handed him Lutha and went to the bedroom, I applied lotion on my dry skin then dressed up in my pyjama

"Why you dressing up ? Because you gonna remove them again "

Said PK as he was standing at the door frame holding Lutha.

Me: Whatever

He giggled and I rolled my eyes

I went to dish out at the kitchen then served him his food.

I fed Lutha mash and gave him a piece of meat. He spread it all over and cried when I tried to take it from him.

PK : Let him be, this is his father's house.

Me: Eshee

PK : Come to daddy boy

he said to him

Me: Anisebabi

PK: You love us njena even though we ugly, isn't it boy?

After we were done eating, I took the plates and washed it as they were watching Tv.

I cleaned the mess Lutha made after washing the dishes then joined them.

PK: Some made a mess

Me: Luthando yhooo

PK: He is just a baby

Me: Why don't you change him?

PK: Are you okay?

Me: Mxxm

I took him and change his dipper, PK took a shower while we settle in bed.

Lutha slept late that night, not giving us a chance to do our business.

To b continued...

Insert 69

*Mini skirt *

"Baby...Onika" Whispered PK the early the following morning.

Me: Huh?

Him:Wake up

Me: Why?

Him: Let's do it now before he wakes up

Pk can be annoying sometimes, Sex beyikhathalele nga ntoni lena? I felt his hand tucking on my pants.

He slowly moved it a little lower, he was breathing on my neck causing my body react strangely.

He turned me around and got on to of me. I was not feeling free I was afraid of Lutha waking up.

As I was on my thoughts, I felt his manhood slowly entering . A moan of pleasure escaped my mouth, it felt so good.

He slowly moved back and forth rubbing his feet against mine.

I slowly wrapped my legs on his waist. He moved faster and faster causing me to moan even louder.

He covered my mouth as he was softly groaning.

Later on...

I woke up and left PK cuddling with his son. I made Lutha his serial and went back to the bedroom. He was giggling as his father was cuddling with him.

Me: I want to feed him

Him: I will do it, please do me a favour and iron my shirt and pants.

Me: Okay

Him: first door of the wardrobe

Me: Okay

I took his uniform out and iron it, when I was done I took Lutha as PK was about to bath.

I placed Lutha on my back and cooked Oats for PK .

"Mamamamama..." Said Lutha while he was on my back

When I was done, I dished up for him

Him: I'm gonna wear size 40 soon

Me: Are complaining?

Him: I'm complementing

Me: Okay

Him: Should I send you someone to keep you company during the day?

Me: No, I will be fine

Him: Are you sure?

I nodded

Him: Okay

When he was done eating a placed a kiss on my lips and kissed his son as well.

Me: Uyahamba uTata...bye bye tata

I said looking at Lutha on my back, he just looked at his Dad and smiled.

PK: Bye bye

I waved my hand , Lutha started crying I shush her and gave him, his bottle.

I then cleaned the entire house and cooked pumpkin for Lutha.

I sent PK a message that he must buy carrot .

He came back later with two game plastic bags.

Me: I didn't say you must buy the entire shop

Him: Yazi uzozitya ezinto

I opened the bags and took out the items. He bought me a chocolate and the rest was Lutha's.

Me: Chocolate? Come on?

Him: I didn't know what to buy for you

He said as he was walking to the bedroom, I just kept quite and didn't utter further words.

I unpacked the items and dish out the food I cooked. I served Pk his food after he took his shower.

Me and Lutha were done eating that time

PK : So ,You gonna watch me eat now?

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: Did you give Lutha his Yogurt?

Me: I will give him tomorrow

Him: Don't worry I bought two six packs and I'm gonna buy more

Me: Kumnandi ubano Tata shame

Him: Life is too short so I must do my best while I'm still alive. You may receive a call saying I'm dead

Me: Like seriously?

Him: That's reality baby... Just promise to take care of Mangaliso

Me: I'm not gonna sit and listen to this nonsense

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Baby can I ask you something?

Him: Shoot

Me: Why is Sis'Thandi scared of you ?

Him: Scared of me?

He said giggling

Me: Ewe, She was the one insisted that I must tell you about siya and that she doesn't want trouble with you

Him: I'm uncontrollable when I'm angry ... I react out of emotion and regret later on.

Me: You lay your hand on your aunt?

Him: No....Can we talk about something else?

Me: What is going on PK? Are you hiding something?

Him: What do you want to know and I will tell you

Me: I don't know, you tell me

Him: Im not in the mood for this

He stood and went to put his plate at the microwave then he went sleep.

I stood up , Switched of the television and lights then we went to join him in bed.

The following morning...

I woke up early as usual, PK was coming out of the shower wrapping a towel.

Him: Thandiwe is not my aunt

I turn around and faced him

Me: Huh?

Him: She is not my aunt

Me: Then what is she?

He sat on the edge of the bed and released a sigh .

Me: Phakamani

Him: I paid her to pretend to be aunt

Me: Paid her???

Him: You needed a some to guide you

Me: So you fooled my parents and I?

Him: What were I supposed to do? You were busy partying

Me: What else are you hiding from me?

Him: I was slept with Babalwa

Me: Tell m you joking...

Him: That was before we dated

Me: And you let her stay in that house? Are you still sleeping with her?

Him : No!

Me: I don't believe you

Him: That's all in the past

Me: I want her out of that house

Him: If that's what you want then it's fine

Me: Are you also sleeping with Sis'Thandi?

Him: Hell no!

Me: When were you planing to tell me this?

Him: I was gonna tell you

Me: When Phakamani? ??

Him: Eish...

Me: What else are you hiding?

Him: Something's are better untold, don't worry you will know as time goes.

Me: I want to know now

Him: I will be late for work

Me: Mxxm

I left him and angrily went to the kitchen. I didn't even replied when he said goodbye.

We always want to know the truth but once the truth is told we can't handle it, we don't do want to accept it.

Two days later...

It was Saturday morning, Sandile was working half day.

Him: Baby come on are you still angry?

Me : Please leave me alone

Him: You think I'm still sleeping with her don't you?

Me: Ain't you?

Him: I'm not sleeping with her anymore, I don't even dream about her. She was 17 that time still in high school.

Me: ...

Him: It was Five years ago ...I was visiting East London for the first time.

Me: And you allow her to stay in that house???? And who's house is that anyway? Because you can't afford it.

Him : It's mine

Me: Yours?

Him: Would you be able to handle the truth?

Me: I'm listening

Him: I steal

Me: Steal what?

Him: Masiyeke lento!

Me: No, I want to know

Him: I'm a gangster....Robbing banks , ATM's etc

Me: What?

Him: Where do you think I get so much money? Do you I have a three producing money?

Me: Why?

Him: I won't answer further questions...You wanted to know the truth , that's the truth.

Me:

Him: Go and tell the world what I just told you and you will be sorry

He stood up and went out the door, he drove out in high speed.

I was sitting there , Shocked, disappointed, and angry.

I couldn't believe my ears, Why is my life falling apart? I was angry but I loved him. He is Luthando's father at the end.

But I don't think I will be able to continue dating a gangster, there is no future.

To be continued...

Insert 70

"I steal...I'm a gangster. .."

His words were playing on my head like a tape record that is on repeat.

I was sitting on top of the couch with my hands on my cheeks.

I didn't know how to handle the truth and I even regretted asking at the first place.

Later on...

It was around 17:00 , I was changing Lutha's dippers.

Me: Phuuuu boys

he smiled

Me: Wonder why you smiling

PK walked in the room with a tired facial expression.

Him: Hello

He said placing his bag ontop of a chair on the corner.

Me:...

Him: Molo!

I just stared at him then picked up the used dippers and went to throw it at a plastic bag that was at the bathroom.

"We need to talk" He said as I walked in the room.

Me: I don't want to talk

I replied with a serious facial expression, while I tidy up the bed.

Him: So you gonna give me silence treatment?

Me: I want to go back home

Him: Go back home???

Me: Yes, I don't think I want to continue with this relationship

Him: Baby you don't mean that

Me: I can't continue dating a gangster....

Him: Baby please

He said inching closer, Lutha started crying. I picked him up and shush him.

PK : I shouldn't have told you

Me: Thanks God you told me. I'm done!

Him: Baby I love you...You still angry

Me: You know what?...Your presence disgust me

I said exiting the room.

"I'm hungry, What did you cook? "

Me: No

Him: Haibo what Will I eat?

Me: Eat me. Take a knife and start with my ear

Him: Hehake

He said walking to the kitchen.

I went to bed with Lutha later on, there was awkward silence in the house.
He followed few minutes later, he also had his mouth zipped this time around.

I woke up early the following morning, I packed Lutha's stuff and mine.

"What you doing? " Said PK's voice as I was busy zipping the bag.

Me: I'm leaving

Him: Leaving?

He said in that Xhosa assent.

Me: I want money for transport

Him: You not going anywhere

Me: I'm not asking you ,I'm telling you

Him: You not going anywhere

Me: Watch me

Him: So you gonna leave me just because ndili gintsa? (I'm a gangster?)

Me: Yes!

Him: I'm just like everyone else....

Me: You not! You are a criminal! and I don't want Lutha near you

Him: Bhanxekile....Mangaliso is my son

Me: He is no longer your son

Him: Are you sure you okay upstairs? Because it seems like your mind is losing left.

Me: Mxxm

I said as I was about to wake Lutha

Him : Don't you dare wake my son up for this madness because you not going anywhere.

Me: You think I'm playing

Him: Jonga Wena, buyelebhedini!

Me: I won't!

Him: Then stay awake and leave my son alone

He said covering both Lutha and himself.

I uncovered them

PK : Onika what's your problem? ??? If you want to go , go but leave my son

Me: He is my son as well

Him: Then stay

Me: I don't want to stay

Him: I know this is still hard for you and scary but you will get used

Me: Mxxm

Him: I'm gonna take you back to P.E Tuesday

Me: I want to go now

Him: You not going anywhere, I will personally take you home.

Sorry guys couldn't continue, I'm sleepy.

I'm sorry to disappoint. Will continue tomorrow.

Insert 71

I had no other choice but to go back to sleep, PK just turned and faced the opposite way.

Lutha woke up few hours later, demanding special attention.

I woke up and made him cereal and refilled his bottle.

I fed him while he was still in bed ,I tried to sleep after I fed him but NO, I couldn't because of Lutha who was too busy.

PK woke up later because Lutha was now troubling him as well.

Him: Morning boy

Lutha smiled, He placed him on top of his stomach.

Him: How are you today???? You miss your daddy?

He cuddled with his son and later went to sit at the lounge with Luthando.

As I was laying on my back thinking about that current situation, I heard voices at the Lounge.

It was two female voices then I heard footsteps heading to the bedroom, the door slowly opened.

"Baby..." said PK as he was walking in, holding Lutha .

Me: Mmmm?

Him: There is two girls here, their electricity is giving them problems,

Me: So?

Him: They want me to go and fix it for them

Me: Are you an electrician now? Hamba lungisana nemibane yamantombaza alapha kweliKapa?

Him: Hehake!

Me: Tell them to call a professional

Him:...

He just turned and walked out, I didn't care.

Later on...

It was around 3pm and I was about to take a shower.

PK walked in the room as I was undressing

Him: Are you not hungry?

Me: No

Him: I'm going to work, but won't stay long....there is a small crisis there needing my attention.

Me: Olay

Him : I'm taking Mangaliso with

Me:Okay

Him: If you need something just call

Me:Okay

He then left with his son and I was alone in that house.

I finished undressing, took a shower then dressed in a simple short black dress with my flip flops.

When I was done ,I went to the kitchen and made myself something to eat.

After eating I felt bored , I decided to take a walk.

I lock the house and slowly strolled down the road, it was so quiet and peaceful in that place.

I came across to this four way stop, I didn't know which way to go , I just walked right through entering a new street.

I was not tired, I was enjoying the walk. I walked far till I got lost, I didn't know the the way back home.

I started to panic because I didn't know the way home and my phone was home. I walked back guessing the way but still I was getting no where.

It was getting late and getting dark ,I was stressing .

If I could just see the four way stops, I will be able to get home.

As I was wandering like a lost sheep, a car stopped next me .

The window rolled down, It was a dark skinned guy but he was not Xhosa, I could see by his facial appearance and he was communicating in English.

Him: Hello

Me: Hi

I said in an doubtful voice, inching backwards

Him: Relax ,I don't bite

I just stared at him

Him: Where do you stay? Don't you want a lift home?

I was not sure if I should tell him that I'm lost, but I needed help.

Me: I'm lost I don't know the way home

He smiled

Him: How can a grown-up lady like you get lost? I you new here?

I nodded

Him: Oh I see, So where do you stay

Me: I don't know but if I could just get to the four way stops, I know the way from there

Him: Get in ,I will take you home

I stood there

Him: Come on, don't tell me that you don't trust

Me: Do you blame me?

Him: I won't hurt you relax

I got in the car and he start driving

Him: I'm Tumelo and you are?

Me: Onika

Him: First time hearing someone with that name

Me:...

Him: Do you stay with family this side?

Me: NO

Him: Do you mind me asking who are you staying with?

Me: I stay with my boyfriend

Him: Oh

We arrived at the four way stop

Him: Where from here?

Me: Drive straight

I directed him to the house, he stopped next to the apartment.

Me: Thank you

Him: You welcome, can you please give me your phone number?

Me: No , I'm sorry

Him: Please

Me: My boyfriend is that jealous tipe

Him: Okay

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

I got out of the car and went inside as he drove off.

PK was standing at the kitchen, feeding Lutha who was on top of the counter.

Me: Hello

I could see he was pissed by look in his eyes

Him:..

I walked to the bedroom, I undressed then went to take a shower.

After a long shower, I went back to the bedroom. I dropped the towel.

"Where you coming from this time? "

I turned around, it was PK standing at the door frame, His facial expression said it all.

Me: Was taking a walk

Him: It's 18:50 now...Where you coming from?

Me: Mxxm

I searched for my lotion

Him: Who just dropped you now?

Me: Why didn't you ask him?

Him: I'm asking for the last time, Where you coming from?

Me: Mxxm

I felt his hand turning me around, as I was about to speak, he slapped me across the face .

I screamed

Him: Shut the hell up! You left without informing me....uthi umntana utya ntoni? Utshintshwa ngubani????? What if something happened to you?

He was mad

Me: Undibethela ntoni?

Him: I will do it again

Me: I hate you!!!!!!

Him: Grow up please!!! I won't tolerate this madness yandiva?????

He said with his eyes wide open

Me:...

Him: Who dropped you here?

Me: He just gave me a lift

Him: Lift ???? Do I have a bicycle ?

Me: I was lost okay ! And he gave me a lift home

Him: Lost xabusiyaphi?????

Lutha started crying at the lounge

PK : I don't want this to happen ever again yandiva???

I rolled my eyes

Him: I don't want to hurt you kanjani....

He walked out after saying those words, Lutha stopped crying.

Tuesday morning...

We woke up early, Lutha was still sleeping.

I packed all our stuff while PK was showering then I also took a shower after him.

When I was done, I dressed up in my two pieces tracksuit and black sneakers.

PK just wore a black Jean with a red hoot and his sneakers.

There was still tension between us, I woke Lutha up and changed his dipper.

I didn't bath him, I just clean his face.

We left later on and there was silence in the car only the soft music playing.

We arrived at Port Elizabeth in the afternoon. Thobile was still at work together with her husband.

PK: Let's go wait at my house

Me: Okay

We drove to his house, Lutha was sleeping.

I was tired as well , As I was laying on the couch. PK got on top of me

Me: I'm not in the mood for this

He tucked his hand on my pants , he slowly moved it down.

A moan escaped my mouth, he kissed my neck going down to my nipples, unzipping my top.

I was feeling so much pleasure, although I was angry at him but I couldn't stop him because the feeling was good.

He slowly removed my pants together with my panty .

He got in between by legs , I felt his manhood hitting my thighs.

He started kissing me then I felt his manhood gently entering.

I moaned out of pleasure as he was banging me hard. I liked it when he goes rough , banging me as if it is the last time. He turned me around and banged me from the behind, I hold on the arm rest . He went faster and faster with groans.

He held me tight, as he was moving super fast, I knew he was coming.

I was feeling great pleasure ,moaning out loud.

He finally released then he let go, he stood up and went to the bathroom, I was feeling so weak.

He came back with a towel and wiped my vagina.

I just wore my panty and went to lie next to my son, I just went straight to dream land.

I woke up later on, Lutha was not next to me.

I walked to the lounge and found him cuddling with his father.

PK : Mommy is up yepppy !

I went to the bathroom and ran water at the shower then went to fetch my toiletry bag , I took a quick shower .

I applied lotion afterwards and wore the same clothes.

PK : Ready to go?

I nodded

Him: Okay

He drove us to Walmer where my sister was staying. She was home this time around and was happy to see us.

She took Lutha and kissed him all over, her husband was not home yet.

PK : Can I have a word with you in private?

He was referring to Thobile

Her: No problem

They went to the kitchen, I was seeing them at a distance and they were talking softly.

They both looked at me as an obvious sign that they were talking about me.

I just stared at the TV and didn't mind them, they walked in , in silence.

PK : I must be on my way

Me: Bye

T: Bye...I will think about that matter

PK : Okay

Then he left

T: He is a nice guy kodwa

Me: Yeah right

I said with my eyes fixed at the Tv

T: Man like that are rare

Me: Okay okay okay , can we now talk about something else?

Her: I was just saying. ..

Me: Any news from Mom and Dad?

Her: Nothing

Me: Okay

Her: Luvano wants to reach to you but he is scared, He says he feels like he let you down.

Me: What ever!

Her: Don't you want to visit him tomorrow?

Me: Whuuuu shame! I won't do that

Her: Come on

Me: I'm sorry but I won't do that !

To be continued...

Insert 72

Few days later...

It was a sunny Saturday afternoon. I was home alone with my baby, Lutha was crying non stop I assume that he was sleepy because he was rubbing his eyes. I placed him on my back and paced up and down , so that he can fall asleep.

I decided to refill his bottle while I was waiting for him to fall asleep then let it cool in a jug with cold water.

After few minutes he was sleep, Thank goodness!

I slowly walked to my room with his bottle, I carefully placed him down. He cried for a moment , I gave him his bottle as I was shushing him and he slowly closed his eyes.

Someone knocked at the door, open the door without me saying come in.

I fixed my eyes on the door and sign that she must not make a noise as she entered.

She nodded as she softly closed the door.

"Someone is here to see you" She whispered

I made a nose signal

Her: Come see

Me: Phakamani?

She shook her head

Me: Then who is it?

I said with an irritated tone

Her: Luvano...

Me: I don't want to see him...

Her: Come on

Me: Lutha will wake if we keep on talking

Her: He is trying okay

Me: I don't need him

Her: You do need him

Me: I do not

Her: Yes you

Me: ...

Her: Please Ntondo , you guys used to be close

Me: Used to be....

Her: He was angry and disappointed

Me: At least I'm 19 years old compared to Bulelwa.

Her: Did you expect him to clap hands for you and say well done Mntase , you did it ?

Me: No

Her: At least he came to his senses, please forgive him. We are the only family that you have this current moment .

Me:.....

Her: Please just for the sake of peace

Me: I can't

Her: Yes you can

Me: He was supposed to be there for

Her: Let's put the past behind us and focus on the future.

She begged me till I finally agreed, She opened the door and we walked to the lounge. Luvano was sitting at the one seat Sofa ,playing with his fingers and immediately stopped as we walked in.

He stood , he couldn't look me in the eyes . Tears just formed on my eyes , he walked towards me.

Him: I'm sorry

I just hugged him , he slowly wrapped his arms around me and held me tight.

Him: I'm so sorry

I felt safe in his arms, I missed his comfort , I really missed everything about him.

I just sob out of the blue

Him: I'm sorry mntase, I will never abandon you , ever again.

Later on...

I was now calm and we were now chatting together with my sister.

Lutha woke up and he was crying, I went to fetch him and brought him to the lounge.

Luu: Copy and Paste shame

Me: What?

Luu: He looks just like his father

T: He really looks like PK , you haven't seen him smile. He has PK's Smile everything.

Me: At least he has my nose

Luu: Yeah ungafane utsho

T: Shame

Luu: PK would not had made it ,if he had decided to deny him.

T: Tuuu

Luu: What's his name?

Me: Luthando, Mangaliso

Him: Which one should I use?

Me: I use Luthando and PK uses Mangaliso , So its chose makhethela .

He giggled

Him: Thando

Me: That's cool

Him: pass him

He said as he stretched his arms, I handed him the baby.

He cuddled with him ,phof emntlonta umntanam.

He left later on and I was left with Thobile and Her husband who just arrived. I cooked supper and we ate, after eating I washed the dishes.

Someone knocked at the door as I was cleaning the sink. Thobile went to open the door with Lutha on one arm. I knew it was PK by the sound of his voice .

"ONIKA" she yelled

Me: C?

Her : Phakamani is here to see you

I wiped the sink then went to attend.

Me: Hello

PK: Hello, Ugrand?

He was holding Lutha

Me: I'm fine thanks and yourself?

Him: Ndigrand

Thobile took the the box of nappies PK bought and went to put it at my room.

PK: I'm going back to Cape Town tomorrow

Me: So soon?

Him : They calling at work

I stared at him

Him: They-

My sister walked in

Her: Thank you for the nappies

Him: No need to thank me, it's my responsibility

Her: I wish you can stay like that and never change

Her: My son will never suffer while I'm still alive.

T: Good

PK: Onika can you walk me to the car?

Me: Okay

T: I was not born yesterday

PK : Haibo Sister what you talking about?

T: I know she is not coming back

Me: Heee sisi

T: Am I lying?

PK giggled

Me: Ewe

T: Zundenze muncu

Me: Hee

PK didn't utter a single word he was just smiling.

T: Take your parcel with

Me: Amen!

T: Ewe

Me: I'm just walking him to the car

T: I'm just saying

Me: I'm coming back

PK handed the baby to Thobile

Her: If you go , you will find him waiting for you by the gate

Me: Hayi kengoku !

I walked out with PK , we got in the car

Him: I will miss you

Me: I will miss you too

Him: I might not come back for Christmas

Me: So we gonna spend Christmas without you?

Him: I'm only off at the 25 of December and I'm working the following day.

Me: Mxxm

Him: I will see you next year

Me: Whatever

Him: I love you

Me: I hate you

He giggled and came closer for a kiss , I didn't stop him.

Him: Am I not getting any tonight?

I shook my head

Him: You not for real

Me: You heard my sister

Him: One Round qha

Me: No

Him: Please

He started kissing me

Him: Let's move to the back seat, I laid on my back while he lifted up my dress and took off my underwear. He entered without warning, I moaned out of pain. He slowly moved back and forth.

I moaned out of pleasure this time around, I was feeling great pleasure.

He moved faster and faster until he finally released.

He didn't pull it out , he just stayed on top of me.

Him: This feels amazing

Me: It really does

Him: Thandiwe and Babalwa are moving out by next year

Me: Why?

Him: They are not needed anymore

Me: Haibo , am I gonna stay alone in that house ?

Him: No

Me: Nabani?

Him: Killer and her girlfriend are moving in

Me: I don't want to live with them

Him: Come on baby

Me: I won't live with strangers

Him: They not strangers come on baby

Me: I'm used to Sis'Thandi

Him: You will get used to them as well

Me: They not moving in

Him: You will be safer when Killer is living with you

Me: Nothing happened when Sis'Thandi was around

Him: I don't want that women near you or in my house

Me: Mxxm

Him: She is a snake

Me: Since when?

Him: I'm just telling you

Me: Hayi suka

Him: They gonna stay with you for only a year

Me: Yamqonda phof umnyaka?

Him: Come on baby , it won't hurt

He kept on begging till I agreed.

Then I felt his manhood raising inside of me.

Me: You said one Round

Him: Never mind what I have said

He said as he was slowly moving back and forth, making my body react abnormally.

After the second round, we said our goodbyes and he gave me money.

Him: That's for you to spend, I have already given your sister money for Mangaliso.

Me: Thank you

Him: Please go to the salon and do your hair ,because now you look like someone who survived from a Tornado.

Me: Mxxm

He giggled

Him: Look kaloku, I'm not making fun of you. I want my baby to look beautiful.

Me: Whatever

Him: You not ugly but you look like a Tornado survivor .

Me: Mxxm

Him: I love you too.

Me: Yadika shame

He giggled and placed a kiss on my lips

Him: Look ,your sister is standing by the door.

I checked and she was really standing at the door with Lutha on her back.

Me: I have to go before she start yelling

Him: Okay

I opened the door and went out.

I walked inside with my fingers crossed, luckily she didn't say nothing, she just stared at me .

I walked to my room and adressed , I was ashamed to take a shower . So I removed the underwear I was wearing and went to the bathroom and cleaned lower body with a wet towel then wore another one with my Pyjama .

Thobile brought sleeping Lutha to me and I finally fell asleep.

To be continued...

Insert 73

My phone vibrated early the following, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I said in a sleepy voice

PK : Did I wake you ?

Me: Yes you did

Him: I'm sorry ,was just checking on you

Me: Oh, okay. What time are you leaving?

Him: I'm on the road

Me: Already?

Him: Yes baby

Me: Are you sure you in a hurry for work or....

Him: Or what?

Me: You know

Him: I don't know anything

Me: Robbing banks

Him: I'm not always on a mission

Me: Better

Him: They need me at work

Me:Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Is Mangi still asleep?

Me::Yes he is still asleep

Him: I miss you guys already

Me: We miss you too

Him: I will call when I get home

Me: Okay drive safe

Him: Thank you

We hung up and I got back to sleep, unfortunately Lutha woke me up as I was starting to fall asleep.

I had to wake up and make him something to eat then gave him his bottle.

T: Good morning

Me: Morning

Her: We going to church ,you know that right?

Me: Which church?

Her: We not going to Dad's church...

Me: Better

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: Listening

Her: Do you love Phakamani?

Me: Heee sisi

Her: feel free

Me: Ewe

I said in a low tone

Her: Do you see a future with him?

Me: Why you asking all of this?

Her: I'm just asking, he seem like a good guy.

Me: I guess

Her: Actually he is a good guy... hold on to him, men like him are rare to find.

I really don't understand why people think PK is good guy. I wish they knew better

Me: I will hold on to him

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

"I love the bond" Said Thobile's husband as he walked in.

We giggled

Him: Molweni, How you today?

Me: I'm good wena Bhuti?

Him: I'm Glorious....

T: We must start preparing for church

Him: True babes , or otherwise we won't have seats.

T: I will bath Lutha

Me: Okay

We prepared for church then we left at 9am .

The church was kinda far but it was 20 minutes drive. We arrived early at the church , we sat at the front.

After church we greeted everyone then I waited at car while they were talking non stop with the church people.

We left later on , we were talking about the service all the way home.

We got home, Thobile started preparing a Sunday meal, I just went t rest at my room because I was feeling tired.

Weeks later...

It was Christmas eve, I had long black singles on my head. My family were gathering for the following day but Thobile and Luvano said they not going to attend , they gonna spend Christmas with me. I was happy but sad at the same time, I really missed my parents, I wished I was home with them.

Well...

We were busy at the u kitchen making salads and desert for the Christmas lunch.

T: Won't mom and Dad be angry?

Her: I don't care

Me: Haibo

Her: I really don't understand why they reacting this way.

Me: I disappointed them

Her: But still ...bekuk'dala ngoko tshini....I mean like They should be the last people to react this . Mom got pregnant with me at the age of 17....then she got married the following year

Me: You not for real, she got married at that age?

Her: Yes

Me: Wow

Her: I really don't understand why she react like this.

Me: I miss them yazi

Her: Mxxm

Me: But unfortunately they don't miss

Her: They will come around wethu

Me: Yeah I guess

I woke up early the following morning, I checked my phone hoping to find a message or missed call from PK but unfortunately there was non.

I called him but his phone sent me straight to voicemail,I called again, same thing. That's unlike him, but first thing that crossed my mind was that he was busy with another women.

My phone rang as I was in deep thoughts and it was my brother, he wished me merry Christmas then hung about after a short conversation. I stood up ,Lutha was still sleeping. I went to the bathroom and did my daily morning hygiene, then slowly went to the kitchen.

" Merry Christmas! !!!!" Yelled my sister

Me: Merry

We hugged and kissed

Her: Why you so down ?

Me: I tried to call PK but his phone is on voicemail

Her: So?

Me: What if he is with another women?

Her: Don't be silly there must be a good reason.

Me:Let's hope

Her: That guy is so serious about you, I don't think he would do such thinf

Me: Maybe I'm overeating

Her: You are really over reacting

Later on....

I tried to call him, same thing, voicemail. I don't want to lie, I was really stressed, because I know PK would cheat on me, he did it before. Not once, not twice and he can do it again.

He spoiled my entire day because I couldn't reach him especially knowing that he was off.

To be continued....

Insert 74

I received a phone call the following morning around 5am from a private number.

Me: Hello

Caller: Baby it's me PK

Me: Why you calling with a private number?

Him: It's a long story, I need a favour baby

Me: You didn't call to wish me merry Christmas or even your son , where where you? With a women?

Him: Come on baby, I passed that stage .If I wanted to cheat I would have done it long time ago not on Christmas.

Me : I don't believe you

Him: I don't have enough time, Do you still have your spare key to my house?

Me: No

Him: Shit...What happened to it?

Me: I left it at home and my parents don't want me there

Him: Please ask your sister to go fetch it, I need something there baby...it's an emergency

Me: What's going on?

Him: Please baby just do as I say, I left money there , move the dressing table you will see a small safe , The password is Mangaliso but start backwards. I only need 30 000 , please don't tell anyone not even the guy that will come fetch the money. I only trust you, please baby my life depend on that money .

Me: What's going on ?

Him: He will be there at 2pm , he will call you.

Me: What's going on Phakamani, you freaking me out.

Him: Don't stress baby , I got things under control.

Me: Phakamani-

I realised that I was talking alone, I couldn't even call back because it was a private number.

I couldn't sleep anymore, I stood up and went to the kitchen.

I found my sister busy washing dishes .

Me: Hayi caphukisweyi ntoni?

Her: How?

Me: It's past 5 to 6 in the morning and you not working today.

Her: I couldn't sleep

Me: What's going on?

Her: My husband wants a baby

Me: You guys do have a baby

Her: Do you see a baby in this house?

Me: Isn't he with your in-laws?

Her: Don't tell me you don't know

Me: Know what?

Her: He passed away

I popped my eyes

Me: Why do I only know now?

Her: I thought Mom told you

Me: We speak often on the phone and you didn't tell me??? I don't understand

Her: I didn't want to worry you and it was not easy to tell

Me: Come on , it's not like it was my baby. Hayi really don't understand why you kept something like this from me.

Her: You didn't tell us you pregnant

Me: It's not the same. It is not like I was aboard. ...

Her: Okay...Mom and Dad don't know about this

Me: SISI!

Her: I killed my baby

Me: You killed your baby njani?

Her: I was coming from work as usual , I didn't do it on purpose, I didn't see him coming...I was busy talking on the phone...I just saw him when I was close, it was already to late when I stopped the car, my baby was lying there hopeless..

Tears were flowing on her eyes, I couldn't hold my either.

Me: Oh no

Her: I didn't kill him on purpose, I swear

I pulled her closer and squeezed her tight

Me: It's okay , You didn't kill him on purpose.

Her: Maybe that's why God is not giving me another baby , because I'm a bad mother.

Me: Don't say that please

Her: It's true, I'm a bad mother...

Me: You didn't see him

Her: I was not supposed to be on the phone ngokomthetho

Me: Don't blame yourself, Everything happens for a reason .

Her: I'm a horrible person

Me: You not a horrible person

I tried to console her until she calmed down.

Me: Why didn't tell Mom and Dad?

Her: I know they would have blamed me and I would never had heard the end of it.

Me: No they wouldn't

Her: I know my parents, especially Dad

Me: No SISI...you have to tell them please. You need their support, the wound is still new

Her: So that they can judge me , me like they did to you?

Me: They won't sisi I promise, you need them . You need their support, No wonder you love Lutha. He reminds you of him isn't it?

Her: Yes

Me: You need to talk to Mom and Dad about this . You can't face this alone

Her: At least my husband was supportive, but now we are trying for another baby and I'm not falling pregnant.

Me: You will , just be patient

Her: What if he leaves me?

Me: He won't

Her: I need a baby mntase

Me: You will get pregnant , Stop stressing.

Her:Okay

Me: Stop crying kaloku

she giggled

Her: I wouldn't have asked for a better sister

I smiled

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

She made cereal for the both of us , we ate and chatted in between.

Me: SISI

Her: Huh?

Me: I need something pha endlini

Her: You want me to go fetch it for you?

I nodded

Her: Yintoni leyo?

Me: My key to PK's apartment, I left something there and I need it

Her: Okay

Me : If don't mind fetching it now

Her : No problem, let's clean the house then we will go.

me

Me: Okay

We cleaned the house , after cleaning the house she insisted that she will bath Lutha. I quickly bathed, wore my blue skinny jean with a white tank top and sneakers. I tied my braids into neat bun then we left later on.

We arrived at my parents house , I waited outside with my baby while my sister entered , I had already told her where the key was.

She came back after a long while

Me : Got it?

Her: Yes

She said handing me the key

Me: Thanks

Her: No problem

Me: How is Lubabalo?

Her : He is a handful like always, he speaks with mouth yhoos

I giggled

Her: I just wish he could meet his nephew

Me: I can't wait

She smiled then we drove to Dwesi,

We arrived at the apartment.

Me: I'm coming now now

She nodded then I got out , I did as PK told me.

I found the money, it was in stacks, I counted the amount needed then closed the safe. I took a small bag that was standing by the corner and packed some of PK's clothes on top and towels, I didn't want Thobile to be suspicious.

I locked the house then we drove back to Walmer.

A strange number called me, I answered.

Me: Hello

Caller : I'm in P.E now ... is the money ready?

Me: You have to come to Walmer

Him: You have to direct me, I will call you when I'm in Walmer.

It was a white man ,I could tell by the way he speaks.

Me: Okay

A while later...

He called and I directed him and waited for him by the Somalian Shop.

He was driving a white BMW, He was in his early 40's .

Him: Thank you

He said after I handed him the money.

Me: Okay

Him: Say Hello to Mangaliso

Me: How do you know about my son?

Him: Mr Poni always speaks about him.

Me: Okay

I said in a soft tone

Him: I got to be going

Me: Bye

He left , I watched the car till I couldn't see it anymore then I went back home.

T: I didn't notice you were not home

Me: I needed airtime

Her: Okay

Her: Did you get hold of Phakamani?

Me: He called this morning

Her: And?

Me: He lost his phone

Her: Oh

Me: Yeah

Two weeks later...

It was early January, I was leaving the following week. I wish I couldn't stop the time , because I was going to miss my baby.

Thobile found a new nanny for him because the lady that used to help her was leaving P.E.

The new nanny was not bad though, I liked her.

Well...

It was a Saturday afternoon, Thobile ,Lutha and her husband went out for the day and I was not in the mood so I let be.

I received a call from PK as I was chilling at the lounge watching Tv.

Me: Baby

Him: Can I come fetch you?

Me: You in P.E?

Him: I arrived last night

Me: Oh, no problem and by the way I was home alone

Him : I will be there in 40

Me: Okay

Him: I missed you like crazy

Me: Missed you too

Him: You must be done when I get there

Me: Okay

He hung up

I searched for something to wear but was not sure what to wear, I took out black maxi dress , it was opened at the back and by the side's, I refreshed and wore it with my gold sandals and loosen my braids. I fixed my face and wore my shades .

I called later telling me he was outside, He was driving a different car.

I got inside and he welcomed me with a hug and kiss .

Me: I liked the previous car, Why changed it?

Him: I like this one, That car is full of bad luck

Me: Eshee

Him: I'm joking, I had to sell it to the Scrab yard because yi Wanted.

Me: Oh , Since when?

Him: You asking to much questions

Me: You were robbing isn't it?

Him: Not really

Me: You lied

Him: I DIDN'T

Me: You did

Him: Haike

Me: So that's why you were calling with a private number.

Him: I don't want you stress baby...

Me: Mxxm

Him: I like this dress , it suits you perfectly

Me: Whatever

Him: I miss my boy , why don't you spend the night tonight?

Me: Thobile would never approve that, you will see him later when they back

Him: Sister wakho kanjan, uneJealous

I giggled

Me: Ewe neh?

Him: Ewe yshini

We went to chill at the beach till it was late.

Him: I wish you knew how mush I love you

I smiled

Him: I don't imagine dating someone else....Dead will do us apart and that is a promise I will keep as long as I live.

Me: I love you too

Later on...

He took me home and the lights were on, we went in.

We greeted, he stayed a little longer then he left later on.

To be continued

Insert 75

Days Later...

I was now in East London living with Killer and his Girlfriend Sondezwa.

It was not that bad staying with them under one roof, it was just all in my mind. Sondezwa was talkative, she loved to laugh with that sharp voice.

Let me give you brief description of Sondezwa, She is Thick and light in complexion with long dreadlocks, she has that loud voice and was older than me.

She was always indoor, she never goes out without killer, If killer is out with friends she must be indoors or out with him.

Well back to the story

It was a friday morning , I was preparing for school. As I was busy dressing up, I felt the urge to vomit and I rushed to the bathroom.

My stomach was feeling sick , I rinse my mouth after vomiting then I slowly walked back to my room.

Few minutes later....

I went to the kitchen, I didn't have appetite, so I just took a seat at one of the high chairs with an grinned facial expression.

"And then zikhiphani? (What's up?) "

asked Killer as he walked in

Me: I'm not feeling well

Her: S'moko? (What's up?)

Me: I don't know, my stomach

I said while I was brushing it

Him: Must I take you to the pharmacy on our way?

Me: No, I will manage

Him: Okay , but I will call PK and tell him

Me: For the why kengoku?

Him: Yamazi lam'jita (You know him)

Me::Haisuka!

Him: If you say so

Then he started whistling as he made himself breakfast.

The smell just made me worse, I ran to the bathroom again to vomit, I came back walking slowly.

Him: Mmmmmm....baby number two

Me: Mxxm

Him: Tshissaaa PK!

Me: I'm gonna be late for class

Him: Okay madam, I will eat when I come back

I lead the way to the car, he unlocked the car and I got in and we drove.

Him: I think is time for me too

Me: Time for what?

He pointed at my stomach , I also looked

Me: I'm not pregnant, what is it with you?

Him: Nipheze ngoku (You should stop now)

Me: Mxxm , I'm not pregnant

Him: Okay

We drove in silence , when we were about to turn by Home affairs, a group of students were walking ahead, he hooted at them and whistle as he waa slacking the car.

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Dudlu Mantobazana

Me: Oh please you left Sondezwa sleeping

Him: I'm just having fun , nothing serious

Me: I don't mind you having fun but do it when you driving alone because ngoku uyandijongisa (you embarrassing me)

Him: Okay, calm down

Me: Okay

He stopped in front of the school.

Him: I won't be able to come fetch you after school

He said while opening his wallet then he took a R100 note.

Him: Here , take a cab

Me: Okay

Him: Have a wonderful day , both of you

Me: Mxxm

I got out of the car then walked into the building.

After school...

I was walking with my school mates , chatting and laughing . I walked with them to res, I was bored anyways and was not in the mood to go home.

We got there and one of them had to sign in for me then we got inside.

We chilled there all day, Zaza asked me to do her hair and I didn't mind.

My phone rang later on and it was Killer.

Me: Hello

Him: Uphi?

Me: Ndise res

Him: What time is it?

Me: I don't know

Him: Who did you tell that you going to res ? Do you reliese it's 6 pm and you not back yet?

Who is he my father?

Me: I'm diong Zaza's hairI will be back

Him: I'm coming to fetch you, don't tell me about Zaza's hair

Then he hung

"Mxm" I said as I was placing my phone down

Zaza: Boyfriend?

Me: No

Mate 1: She is lying

Me: Why would I do that? PK is in Cape Town

Mate 2: Roll on

Me: Geez guys, like seriously?

My phone rang again after a while

Me: Hello

Killer: Which res?

Me: I'm gonna sleep over

Him: Nxilile (You drunk)

Me: Or you gonna wait till I finish

Him: Okay tell me where are you

I directed him then I went outside to meet him.

Him: Let's go

Me: I'm not going

Him: Do you see all this people walking pass and standing by?

Me: What about them?

Him: You gonna embarrass yourself in front of them because I'm not leaving without you here

Me: Like seriously?

He gave me a dead stare

Him: get in the car

Me: Tshini!

I heard my self saying that word

Him: Yayazi indoda yakho injani, andifuni chuku please. (You know how your boyfriend is, So I don't want trouble)

Me: I'm going to fetch my phone, I'm coming.

Him: Here use mine and call your phone, I'm sure they gonna answer it.

Me: I'm gonna come back yhoos

Him: Hayi ungathethi njalo nam awumithiswanga ngu killer. (Don't talk to me in that manner , I'm not the one that impregnated you)

I just stared at him then I left him standing there, I went back to my friend's room.

Zaza: And then?

Me: Nothing

There was only a small piece left, I continue with her hair. Someone knocked after a while, one of the girls went to open.

I turned to check who was it and it was Killer.

Him: Caba undenza half ?(You making a fool of me?)

He was angry , I just stood up and took everything that belongs to me and went out the door.

He followed after me as we walked out of the gate he hand shake the Security.

Him: Thanks chief

Security : Sure chief

We got inside the car and we drove, I looked ahead without uttering a word.

We arrived home, he parked the car and we went inside. Sondezwa was watching Tv

Me: Molo Sondezwa

Her: velaphi nantombi? (Where you coming from?)

Me: Res

Her: Oh okay

Then I walked to my room and took a nap, didn't wake up.

The following morning...

I woke up as usual but felt someone sleeping next to me. I first looked at myself , if I was not naked then I looked at the person.

Mxm it was PK, when did he arrive? Why didn't he tell me?

I walke up and went to the bathroom, I did my daily morning hygiene routine. My body was feeling heavy and I had a lift headache.

I walked back to my room but this time around PK was awake.

Me: Unezinto ! Why didn't you call and tell that you coming.

Him: Are you pregnant?

Me: I'm not pregnant , What's up with you people

I said in a angry tone

Him: We gonna buy a pregnancy test

Me: I'm telling you that I'm not pregnant

Him: Okay

Then he paused

Him: For now

Later on...

It was around 12 pm , we were on our way to the Pharmacy.

We were chatting and laughing, as we were in that state, the car started to spin and I screamed. I didn't know what was happening.

" Phakamani I dont to die , I'm still young...my baby still needs me!" I said as the car started to roll.

"Baby..." that's when I last heard his voice.

Then the lights went off.

To be continued...

No edit

Insert 76

I heard people talking , I recognised one of the voices. I slowly opened my eyes. My body was feeling weak and I was experiencing pains all over my body and I couldn't move my neck, I realised that I was in hospital.

I saw Killer talking to some guys I didn't know.

"Killer.." I said in a soft voice, I couldn't raise my voice. He continued talking to the guys , He couldn't hear me.

Me: Killler!

I said a little louder, he immediately stopped talking and came rushing to me.

Him: You up?

Me: What happened???? where is Phakamani????

Him: Calm down , Phakamani is fine

Me: Where is he?

Him: In the other ward...relax

Ma8 walked in and greeted, I just looked at him.

Killer: Do you remember those guys? Can you describe them?

Me: What guy?

Him: The guys that shot Phakamani????

I was totally lost because I never heard a gun shot and didn't see any guys

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Ma8: What do you remember?

I told them what I remembered

Killer: Danm!!!!

Ma8: Sus'kawara sozifumana ezaZinja! (Don't worry we will get those dogs)

Killer: Jonga phikelelani phakum eshanto.... (Go to my flat) the tools are there

Ma8: Yizo!

Killer: I will join you later and let me know if you find them

Ma8: Gquuu! (sure)

Then they left and I was left with him alone.

Him: Don't worry we will get them and that is a promise

He said as he held my hand

Me: I want to see Phakamani!

Him: not now

Me: Tell him to come see me ke

Him: That's impossible

Me: How?

A white female Doctor walked in

Doc: You up?

Me: I want to see Phakamani

Doc: The gentle man that was driving?

Me: Yes please

Doc: I'm sorry that is impossible, he is in a critical condition... he is fighting for his life.

Me: Will he be okay?

She paused , That was not a good sign . Tears escaped from my eyes.

Me: Please tell me he will be fine

Doc : We are doing everything to save his life...he is badly injured and was shot 5 times...

Me: No...No...Please, I'm begging you...please save him . My, our baby needs him.

Her: I'm sorry Mam , You lost the baby

Me: How? My baby is in Port Elizabeth

Her: The one that you were carrying...by the time you got to the hospital, you had already miscarried.

Me: Was I pregnant?

Her: Yes

Me:...

Her: I'm sorry...

I just kept quiet with tears flowing

Her: I will just give you space, I will be back later to check on you

Then she left

Killer: PK is a Survivor, He will be fine.

Me: What if he doesn't make it?

Killer: He will be fine trust me

Me: I want to be alone

Him: I can't leave you alone here

Me: I said I want to be alone

Him: Okay...I will be outside

Me: Okay

Then he left, I closed my eyes and cried silently.

Days later...

It was a Thursday morning around 7 am ,I was being discharged from hospital. Killer came to fetch me, I still had bandages all over , the I was in great pains and couldn't move my neck.

He helped me to dress up , I was leaning on him cor support because one leg was broken.

When I was done dressing up, he took me to PK's ward because I insisted.

My heard broke into million pieces as I saw his condition not changing, he was bandaged all over , a person couldn't even recognise him, I just broke in tears.

Killer: Shhhhh

Me: God why????

He couldn't even hear me, he was in a Coma fighting for his life.

I just couldn't watch him any longer, I asked Killer to help me go out.

Later on....

I was laying in bed listening to the pains, I heard the door swing open.open, It was Sondezwa walking in with a tray with food.

Her: Hello

Me: Hi

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: You don't wanna know trust me

Her: You will be okay

Me: I will be okay when I see PK walking in that door

Her: PK will be fine

Me: ...

Her: Here I brought you something to eat , I thought you might hungry

Me: I'm not hungry

Her: You have to eat

Me: I don't have appetite

Her: Please

Me: I'm not hungry

She sighed

Her: Okay...

I just wanted to be alone, I didn't want company. She left few minutes later and I was left alone.

Killer and Ma8 came check on me later on.

Killer: Do you need anything?

I shook my head

Ma8: Stop stressing PK will be fine

Me: You don't understand

Killer: Don't stress too much Madam , PK will be back in no time and they will pay.

Me: Who are these people

Killer: Let me say some stupid Monkeys that thinks they rule East London!

Me: Did he had fight with them?

Him: It's a long story and I don't want to talk about it!

Ma8: They will meet their ancestors very soon and they should be prepared to Sing Unoyongo .

Me: I just PK home

Killer: He will be home do not worry.

They left later on and I slowly fell asleep without noticing.

4 weeks later...

I was feeling a lot better and some bandages were removed , I was even back to school trying to cover all the work I missed.

PK was still the same, but I was not losing hope. I was praying everyday for him , asking God to heal him. Mangaliso still needs him, I still need him as well, He can't leave us yet , it was too soon.

Killer was very supportive, He there for me and helping me financially , sending money to my sister for Mangaliso. I would have asked for more, that is what I called a true friend.

Well...

It was a Tuesday afternoon, Killer came to fetch me from school.

Him: How was school?

Me: Was okay

Him: Oh okay... we going to the hospital or straight home?

Me: Let's start home then we can go to hospital later

Him: Okay

We drove home, he parked the car and I limped as I walked inside the house.

Sondezwa was sitting at the lounge watching Tv with a plate of food in front of her.

Me: Hello Sondezwa

Her: Hi

I took a seat and released a huge sigh , Killer walked in with my school bag.

Him: Are you not hungry?

Me: I will make myself something to eat , don't worry

Him: Okay

Sondezwa: Why don't Ma8 take you to school and drive you back?

Me: Don't know

Her: Oh

Then there was awkward silence, Killer walked in with a sandwich and a class of juice

Me: You didn't have too

Him: When PK comes back , I don't want him to say we have been starving you.

I giggled, Sondezwa stood up and walked out.

Me: And then?

Him: Never mind her

Later on...

I was watching generation, Killer was not home , I was left with Sondezwa.

She walked with a grinning face

Her: I see what you doing

Me: What I'm doing?

Her: You know that PK will die and you want to take u killer away from me

I giggled

Her: It wont work sisi, Killer is mine and I wont let you takw him away from me.
Sies awunantloni!!!

Me: Like seriously?

Her: I will kill you , if you dare take him away and that's a promise

Me: You not for real

Her: Test me!

Then she took a seat , pouting her mouth. I stood up and went to lock myself in my room, I was not in the mood for drama.

To be continued...

No edit

Insert 77

Days turned to weeks and weeks turned to months , PK's condition was still the same. I was still doubting that he will ever get out of that COMA. I was even losing weight and was not really concentrating at School but was managing, since I was naturally clever and I was passing but with 60% and 70% which was not my best because I never get less than 80% in all my modules.

I didn't imagine my life without him, I can't be a single parent , I refuse.

I was praying day and night , asking the Lord to wake him up, but who am I to fight God's plan ? God knows when we will die and know one can change that not even Satan in hell.

Death is an Enemy that we all are scared of , an Enemy that sometimes comes as a thief in the night , we can't run away from it, when death attacks, it attacks and no one can defeat death , that sad isn't? Why is life so unfair Mara?

Well...

It was early September, I was busy with my September exams.

It was a sunny Tuesday morning, I woke up as usual and went to take a bath.

After taking a bath , I wrapped a towel and went to my room. I slow walked in as I was towel drying my hair and then sat on the edge of the bed as I was looking myself at the mirror.

Someone knocked at the door, I fixed my eyes at the door

Me: Who is it?

Killer: It's me

Me: Come in

I watched as the door slowly opened , he came in.

Killer: What time are you going to school

Me: Still have an hour but I won't stay long , I'm just submitting today.

Him: Okay, I have run somewhere but will come back

Me: Okay

Him: Sondezwa is moving out?

Me : Why?

Him: I don't like the tension that is going on in this house

Me: So you giving her another reason to think that we dating?

Him: This is your house and she have no right to treat you like a border!

Me: I don't want drama

Him: If she dare touch you, Hell will brake loose.

Me: I can fight for myself

Him: I'm the one that should answer when your Man comes out of that COMA and I don't want to be an Enemy of PK!!!

Me: Calm down geez!

Him: When you done , you must write a list of everything we will need for this month, because we will go shopping when you done with your submitting what what

I giggled

Me: Okay

Him: Sure, I'm out!

I signed then he left.

I took out my hair dryer and dried my hair, I lotion my body and wore a simple blue dress with pumps and tied my hair into a neat bun.

I was not in the mood to make up because my boyfriend was fighting for his life and I didn't want to do things that will attract men.

I then remove a page from my exercise book and took a pen , I went to the kitchen and listed everything we needed , from food to toiletries. After writing that list, I made myself cereal then sat in front of the TV in the lounge with my legs on top of the couch.

Kilier came back later , I took my bag and handed him the list.

Him: Keep it

Me: Okay

I locked the house then I went to the car , killer was already waiting, we drove to Forthare.

We parked by the building

Him: How long will you take ?

Me: not long

Him: I will wait for you in the car.

Me: Okay

I got out and went inside

Later on....

We drove to Mall and we parked in front of the Mall .

Him: Are you not hungry?

Me: Not really

Him: Okay

We got out of the car and went inside the Mall chatting

We first entered the cloths shops and I chose everything I wanted , from unders to shoes . He didn't mind he paid for everything then we went to do grocery, we bought according to the list and he added a few stuff.

I was now tired , wanting to go home.

Him: Tired?

I nodded

Him: I will just buy Pizza and milkshake

Me: Okay

I took a seat as I was waiting for him, I watched people as they walked up and down.

"Hello" said a voice behind me, I turned back , He took a seat next to me.

Me: Hi

Him: I'm Akhona and You?

Me: Onika

Him: What a nice name

He was smiling trying to charm me

Me: Thanks

Him: Would you mind if I ask for your number?

Me: I don't give my number to strangers

Him: Outch! You call me a stranger?

He said as he placed his hand on his chest

Me: You are

Him: Okay whatever...Can I take you out tonight?

I do not understand men, they take us cheap and they think they can get whatever they want.

Me: No

Him: Why?

Killer walked on us

Him: What's going on here?

He asked as he handed me a milkshake , I just looked at that guy

Him : Nothing bhuda yam

Killer: Ithi guuu ke! (leave!)

The guy stood up and awkwardly walked away and killer looked at me.

Me: Oh please!

I said as I stood up

Him: I'm watching you!

Me: Like seriously?

Him: I'm just saying.

I rolled my eyes as we walked out of the Mall , we arrived at the and I helped him pack the stuff in the boot and we drove.

I arrived home , I helped to bring the grocery inside then I unpacked the stuff.

Killer: Leave one trag of pork outside because we will eat it tonight.

Me: Okay

Him: Do you need money for your hair?

Me: I will survive with my natural hair this month.

Him: If you say so.

He took out his wallet and handed me money

Him: Just incase you change your mind

Me: Okay

He went to seat in front of the Tv and switched it on, I took the box of Pizza and placed it on top of the coffee table .

He looked at me and smiled

Me: Ewe

He giggled , I sat opposite him and we ate the pizza and we finished it.

Me: Andihluthunga yazi (I'm not full)

Him: Same here

I made pork sausages and we ate again wathoba nge Coke while I poured myself juice.

I was so full I just fell asleep on the sofa.

Later on....

I woke up covered in a fleece blanket and I was alone in thw lounge. I yawned as sat up scratching my head.

I stood up and folded the blanket as I was walked to my bedroom.

Killer knocked few minutes later and I let him in.

Him: We going to ths hospital in 30 minutes time

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: The hospital called

Me: And?

I asked as I walked closer to him , full of curiosity

Him: Relax, it's not bad news, PK woke up!

Me: What??

Him: Yeah

I just couldn't utter further word, they just stucked on my throat.

Tears just ascaped on my eyes, I felt warm arms wrapping around me.

Him: Shiii

I sob , I couldn't stop my tears.

We stayed in each others embrace for a while

Him: I told you, he is a fighter

Me: ...

We went to the hospital later on, I was so excited to see him.

Killer led the way as we walked to his ward.

I slowly walkex closer to him, he was awake

Me: Baby

Him: Baby

Tears escaped again as I was held his hand.

Me: Don't ever do thet again

Him: I'm sorry

Him: I want to see my son

Me: He is in P.E

Him: I want to see him....Killer go fetch my son!

Killer: Now?

Him: Ewe, I want my son here tomorrow

Me: You will see him once you get out of this place

Him: No I want to see him now

Killer: Okay

Me: You know my sister will never allow that

Him: Don't tell me about your sister, I want my son now!

Him: Call her and tell her Someone is coming to fetch him!

Me: Okay

I said because he was angry, I called my sister and she didn't have a problem.

Killer left the hospital heading to P.E shame man. I was feeling sorry for him?

What is it with PK?

Him: I had a bad dream , about my son. He was dead in the dream.

Me: He is fine , Im sure the dream was about the baby I lost.

Him: What baby?

Me: I was pregnant

Him: Than what happened?

I lost the baby while we were in the accident

Him: I remember one face , and I will never rest till I find him and he will pay, that is a promise.

Me: You must be focusing on your recovery not revenge

Him: I won't let this slide, I will go after them slowly and they won't see me coming, watch the space wena!!!

Me: PK!

Him: Say whatever but I won't change my mind...

When his mind is set on something nothing or No one can change it.

Me: Mxxxm

I just sat next to him

Him: How are you?

Me: Fine

Him: Your man is back, now fix your face

I rolled my eyes

Him: When am I going home?

Me: I don't know

Him: I'm sorry for putting you through this, I promise it will never happen again.

Me: It's better

We chatted till visiting hours were over

Him: Call Ma8 to come fetch you

Me: I'll take a taxi

Him: Hayi hayi (No, no)

Me: It's not a big deal haibo!

Him: No!

Me: Arg!

I called Ma8 and he came to fetch later on.

I arrived home and I was home alone, I went straight to bed leaving my phone charging.

Following morning...

I woke up, made the bed then went to brush my teeth. When I was done with my hygiene routine, I made myself cereal and went to take my phone.

I had 5 missed calls from a strange number, I was using a new phone since I lost the other one but was using the same number.

I called the number as went to sit on one of the high chairs.

It rang several times before it was answered

Parson : Hello

It was my mother's voice

Me: Mama?

Her: Oh sanalwam! (Oh my child)

Me:...

Her: How have you been?

Me: I have been fine

Her: Please come back home, I miss you . Emotions got the best out of us!

Me: I'm sorry mama

Her: It's okay

My heart was filled with joy , as I was hearing her voice

Me: I'm truly sorry

Her: Please come home as soon as you done with your exams...

Me: I will come

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too Mama

Her: Will call you later vah bye

Me: Bye...

I have never been so happy in my life, my life was getting together bit by bit and I waa grateful.

Killer arrived later on with my baby. I was so happy to see him.

Me: Minxizaa kaMamakhe!!!

I said as they walked in, he was big looking like his father.

He smiled and I took him and cuddled with him on the sofa, I didn't know I missed him this much.

To be continued....

No edit

Insert 78

Few days later....

I was done with my exams and PK was still in hospital.

Luthando was a handful, he was vandalizing the house, bengamameli.

Well...

It was a sunny day and it was during the week.

I woke up early this day , because Luthando was forcing me to wake up.

I got out of bed and he smiled and giggled softly.

Me: Yadika bonanje (you annoying)

I said as i was tying my gown. I picked him up and went to the lounge , I switched on the tv and played catoon for him. I placed him on top of the couch.

" You up early " Said Killers voice as I was about to walk to the kitchen.

Me: It's Luthando

He giggled slightly

Me: Don't you want to adopt him?

I said as I entered the kitchen

Him: And be PK's biggest ENEMY? NO THANKS !

He said as he opened the fridge , taking a bottle of beer out.

Me: You won't

I said as I was making Lutha's cereal.

Him: Mmm

Lutha started crying

Me: He is probably really hungry

Him: Yakuthanda kutya letwana , hayi PK umsulele ngento embi! (He loves food just like his father)

Me: You too njena

Him: Whatever!

I rushed to the lounge with a bowl of cereal at my hand.

Me: Xolo baby

I lifted him up and started feeding him.

Killer joined us and changed the channel.

Me: Caba uyathanda umbona elila? (Do you like seeing him crying?)

Him: Should I watch cartoons now ???

Me: You know he is gonna cry

Him: He won't

Me: zakhale !

He smiled

Him: I wish I had a family yazi

Me: You can have a family if you want

Him: I don't just want a baby, I want someone I can spend the rest of my life with.

Me: Sondezwa?

Him: Mmmm...well..she is not really what I'm looking for...she lazy, always want want want want.

Me: You want her to work?

Him: Something like that, I want someone who is smart and loyal.

Me: Oh okay

Him: For example, PK is really lucky to have you

Me: How?

Him: You take life seriously, you focused, Neshori and brave...

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Don't hear me wrong, I just wish I could have someone like you.

Me: keep on looking

Him: PK was a player, changing chicks everyday, partying every weekend. But look at him now. He doesn't care about other bitches and doesn't drink like he used to before.

Me: Hayi kengoku

Him: I salute you!!!!

Me: Okay okay okay!! Pheza ngoku!

He giggled

Me: I can see this beer is working

Him: Arg , weak lento.

I finished feeding Lutha and I placed him down. He walked to Killer and he placed him on top of his lap.

I went to the kitchen and washed that bowl.

Later that day...

It was around 12 pm , I was coming from the clinic and my butt was feeling weird after the injection. Killer was driving us, he took us to Steers.

Him: Does PK knows about this?

He asked as we were standing at the queue , he was caring Lutha who was playing with his car keys.

Me: About?

Him: Injection?

Me: I don't want another baby

Him: What about him

Me : It's not about him

Him: Okay

Me: Ewe

He ordered burgers

Him: Milkshake?

Me: Do you even have to ask?

He giggled and ordered Milkshake as and coke.

Me: Don't buy anything for Lutha , I will share my chips with him.

Him: Okay !

Cashier: Cute baby

Killer: Thanks

Cashier : What's his name?

Killer: Mangaliso

Cashier: Ncoo Mangi mangi!

Few minutes later....

We went back to the car and drove straight home. We arrived home , we went to sit at the lounge and we ate.

Lutha was crying for my milkshake, I poures some at his mug but he wanted the one in the real container.

Lutha: Apha! (Sapha) (give)

Killer: Don't look at me, you the one that said I must not buy him anything.

Me: Yhuuu lomntana ka Phakamani bethunani ! Look at him, he is messing the on the couch!

Killer: Shame

Me: Awusadiki!

Him: There is juice in the fridge

Me: I dont want juice

Him: Haike!

Killers phone rang , he licked his fingers then picked up his phone , which was lying next to him on top of the arm rest.

Him: Hello...Haibo!.....okay.

He hung up and stood up

Me: What?

Him: PK is outside

Me: Outside?

Him: Yes

He said as he went out, a car drove in few second later.

Car heard car doors bang then voices speaking.

I fixed my eyes at the door, as they walked in.

PK walked in together with Ma8 and Killer.

Me: Why didn't you tell me you being discharged today?

Him: I was not discharged, I discharged myself

Me: Phakamani

Him: What? That place is boring

He was limping

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Please don't preach

Me:

He inched closer to me and pulled me closer.

He placed his lips on mine, they softly touched mine.

Killer: Kancane!

PK: This is my women and this is my house

Killer: Hayi bra

PK : Uzowa ngoba leleli unyuka ngayo ithe nca kum

He continued kissing me then he broke the kiss.

Him: I would like to be alone with my family

Ma8: Sure sure!

Killer: We not going anywhere, why you being unfair?

Him: I don't remember asking you, I was telling you.

Killer: Mxxm !

He said as he was taking his car keys and walking out.

Ma8: See you my Man!

PK : Gcwala!

He also left, PK picked up Lutha.

Him: Hello boy

I cleaned the mess

PK : Baby I'm hungry

Me: Eat my burger

I gave him mine and went to the kitchen to pour him a glass of juice.

I came back and gave it to him.

Him: Where is Sondezwa?

Me: Killer sent her away after she accused me of trying to still her man.

He giggled

Him: Were you?

Me: Of course not!

Him: Awabila ! Yehlisa umoya, it was just a question.

Me: Mxxm!

He finished eating, phof Lutha was also eating. Eish his baby mara!

Later on....

It was around 10pm , Lutha was sleeping.

PK: Khandiphe mfondin !

Me: Amen!

He got on top of me

Me: You just got out of hospital and all you think about is sex?

Him: When last did I have sex? Sugeza apha

Yazi ndiyafuna nam qha ndiyaqhosha

Me: Haibo PK

He got on top of me and removed my under wears. He was kissing me while doing so.

He entered without warning , I moaned out of pain.

Him: Sorry

He whispered, he gently moved back and forth. I moaned out of pleasure this time.

Few minutes later...

I was now laying on top of his chest.

Me: Baby

Him: Mmmm?

Me: I'm leaving Friday

Him: Going to visit your sister?

Me: No

Him: Then uyaphi?

He asked with a different tone

Me: My mom called me

Him: And?

Me: She wants me to go back home

Him: WOW

Me: Yeah

Him: And your father?

Me: I don't know

Him: I'm just happy for you. Do you want me to go with you?

Me: No , I want to go alone

Him: Okay baby. I'm just happy yazi

Me: Me too

Few days later....

It was Friday morning, PK was taking us to the bus station.

We were early , so we waited at the car.

Him: I'm gonna miss you

Me: We gonna miss you too

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: You my everything, you are amazing do you know that?

Me:..

He kissed me

Lutha: Ayi...

He tried to pull PK away from me.

We giggled

The bus arrived later on and we left. I was nervous, I didn't know what to expect.

I called Mom when we were reaching P.E, he came to fetch us from the bus station.

She was so excited to see me, tears just automatically escaped from her eyes, she pulled me closer for a hug.

Her: I'm sorry

She squeezed me tight

Me:I'm sorry

Lutha began to cry because she was squeezing him as well. She let go and started to sob, I just couldn't hold mu tears.

Her: I'm a bad mother

Me: Let's go to the car

People were watching, I walked to the car.

Her: I'm sorry baby

She said as we driving

Me: It's okay

Her: I should have handle this ngenye indlela.

She lookef at Luthando and she start crying again.

Me: Mama please don't cry...

She calmed down after a while, We arrived home and dad was home.

I walked in after mom, Dad watching TV, I just cried and went to kneel in front of him.

Me: I'm sorry, please forgive me, Mom was holding luthando.

Him: I forgive you Onika , please stand up.

I could not face him, I was just ashamed. He was calm

Him: You still my daughter

He opened his arms for a hug , I rush to his arms like a 2 year old.

Him: I love you my daughter

Later on...

I was was watching TV Lutha was playing with Lubabalo.

Dad: So who is Thando's father?

I faced down

Dad: I'm listening

Me: Pha...Phakamani

I said while I was facing down.

Dad: Mmmm....

Mom: So he was fooling us ?

Me: ...

Dad: He is disrespectful

My father was angry at him and I don't blame him.

Few minutes later....

Mom: Your brother is coming to vusit this weekend

Me: Luvano?

Him: No , You gonna meet him tomorrow. Luvano is not your only brother, you will meet him tomorrow!

Brother?

To be continued....

Insert 79

The following morning...

It was still early morning, I received a call from PK.

Me: Baby

Him: I miss you mna kodwa

Me: Mxxm, if you really missed me, you would have called me last night.

Him: I didn't want to distract you, kaloku I wanted you to have enough time with your family.

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Nyani baby...so how did it go?

Me: We all made peace, I feel free and lighter.

Him: That's better

Me: My father was furious when I told him that you are the one that impregnated me.

Him: I will ask my uncle's to come apologize in behalf and pay damages.

Me: Let's hope that will work

Him: It will work trust me

Me: Let's hope

Me: Would you believe if I told you that I have another brother except Luvano

He giggled

Him: Your Mother has baby?

Me: No man, A brother from another Mother

Him: How?

Me: Turns out my father once cheated an impregnated another women

Him: Thixo!

Me: These people are full of surprises

Him: How old is he?

Me: I don't know, probably 2,3,8 or 11 . They were not specific

Him: Yhooo, so how do you feel about this?

Me: I don't know , how I feel.

Him: Are you gonna accept him?

Me: Why not? It was not his fault, he is innocent.

Him: Someone is matured

Me: I guess

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too baby

We hung up

As I was about to close my eyes again, someone knocked on my door.

Me: Come in

The door slowly opened, I lifted my head and fixed my eyes at the door.

Mom walked in followed by Lutha and Lubabalo.

Her: Morning princess

I couldn't believe she called me her princess after the shame I brought to this family.

I smiled

Me: Morning

Her: How did you sleep?

Me: Peacefully, I missed my bed

Her: Good. Well baby, you have to go to the salon and do your hair. They will be here at 12pm .

Me: They?

Her: Your brother and Loyiso

Me: Loyiso?

Her: You will know them better when they here. You just have to be on point.

Me: You scaring me

Her: Don't be ke

She was so excited with smiley facial expression. That really scared me and made me wonder.

Her: Get up , we don't have enough time.

Her: up you go!

She said signing with both he hands.I got up and went to the bathroom, leaving her with the kids.

Few minutes later...

We were both ready to go , we left the kids with Gloria and went to the salon.

I spent R4000 on my hair, actually my Mom was paying.

I did nails eyelashes which was weird.

When we were done at the salon, we went to Greenacres Mall.

Me: What's going on?

Her: Is there a problem with spoiling my daughter?

Me: I look like a Doll , I like the hair though.

Her : You have to look gorgeous baby, you will thank me later on.

She said as we approach the parking.

She parked the car and loosened her seatbelt and we got out of the car.

She bought me a dress, stilettos and new jewellery.

It was around 11:00 am and we had to rush back home.

When we got home, Mom sent me upstairs to go refresh .

I did as I was told, I wore the dress outfit she bought me.

I looked myself at the mirror, I looked beautiful but fake.

She came check on me later on

Her: You look beautiful my princess

She said with a wide smile

Me: Thanks

Her: I'm proud of you

Me: Enkosi

Her: They waiting for you

I was nervous, I didn't know how to react and didn't understand why I had to dress like this , it was not necessary.

We walked downstairs, my eyes popped when I entered the lounge.

His eyes popped as well, we stared at each other.

Me: Thobela

Dad: Do you know each other?

Everyone showed shocked facial expressions.

T: Yes, from Forthare

Mom: Wow

Dad: Better

Mom: Since you know each other, I will just announce that you are siblings.

Thobela ,Onika is your sister and Onika, Thobela is your brother.

I just stood there with no words to utter, I just couldn't believe my eyes. I wish she could say "I'm joking you not siblings) but unfortunately, were brother and sister.

Dad: Take a seat my princess

My body was heating and my cheeks were shivering from the fake smile.

All I could think about was fact that I slept with my own brother.

Dad: Well...my princess , the gentleman sitting..... he is the son of King....

I could hear my father speaking but couldn't make sense of what he was saying, my mind was not present.

Dad: Onika!

I snapped out of it and looked at my father, she signed with her head that I should look ahead of me.

Loyiso was giving me his hand to shake it.

I faked a smile and greeted him

Him: It's a honour to meet you, you look beautiful

Me: Thank you

We chatted but mind was not in that conversation, I felt awkward and uncomfortable.

I stood up to get a glass of water later on , because I was feeling thirsty.

I grabbed a glass that was on front of me and poured tap water, my hands were shivering as I was holding that glass.

After drinking that water, I turned around and Thobela was entering the kitchen.

Him: You knew about this?

Me: No

Him: Oh my gosh

He hit on the counter with his hand

Him: So I slept with my blood sister? ?

Me: Please stop it!

Him: I will never forgive myself

Me: It is not like we knew

Him: But still !!!!!

Loyiso walked in and Thobela walked to the sink.

Loyiso: What's taking you so long?

Me: I'm done, I was heading to the lounge

Him: Okay, let's go

We went back to the lounge, my parents smiled as we walked in.

I changed seats and sat next to Loyiso as my father ordered.

Dad: She is beautiful isn't she?

Loyiso smiled and said

Loyiso: Indeed, she is a real princess.

They all giggled and I was like did I miss something?

Thobela walked in and the conversation continued.

Later that day...

It was around 5pm, we were still sitting at the lounge.

Dad: I think we should buy take aways, my wife is too tired.

Loyiso: I can go and buy something to eat.

This guy mara, he was working on my nervs, he was giving me funny looks. I'm taken if he didn't know that.

Dad: Okay my son

Mom: Onika why don't you go with him?

Like seriously?

Me: There is no need

Thobela looked at me

Mom: Onika

She said in a soft voice

Me: Okay

I could sense that they want to play match, match but it will not work.

I stood up and we left, there was awkward silence in the car as we he was driving.

He cleared his throat

Him: Do you have a boyfriend

Me: Yes and a child

Him: I know about your child

Me: Who told you about him?

Him: Your parents

Me: Why?

Him: I don't know

We arrived at debonairs

Me: We could have ordered pizza from home

Him: I wanted time with you

Me: Why?

Him: Why you ignorant?

Me: About?

Him: So you want to tell me that you don't know about me?

Me: What is to know about you?

Him: Let's drop this topic and do what were sent to do.

Me:...

After buying Two large pizzas we went back home.

I could see Loyiso was angry , he just dropped me and the pizzas and left.

Mom: What happend?

Me: I don't know

Dad: What did you say to him?

Me: Nothing

They looked at each other , I took a sit.

Lutha was jumping on top of Dad while Lubabalo was playing with Thobela.

Later on...

Thobela left and I was left with my parents and the Kids.

I went to change, Mom walked in my room as I was undressing.

Her: What happened between you too?

Me: With who?

Her: Loyiso

Me: Nothing mama

Her: You should call him and find out what is going on. If you are the reason he is angry then you should apologise.

Me: Why?

Her: Just do as I say and don't ask questions.

Me: What's going on?

Her: Just do as I tell you!

Me: Who is this guy anyways?

Her: You will find out soon...

Me: I don't understand

Her: There is no need for you to understand.

Me: Okay as long it doesn't involve me.

Her: Don't be so sure

Me: Meaning?

Her: You are an grown up now, kwalento ukwazi ukwenza abantwana.

Me:..

Her: He is a graduate , a lawyer, come from a royal home...humble and respectful.

Me: Why you telling me this?

Her: The Lobola negotiations will start next week.

Me: Who is getting married?

Her: Who am I talking to?

Me: I'm not gonna marry that guy, I'm still young to get married

Her: You don't have choice

Me: I don't have a choice?

Her: You know how your father is right?

Me: Why does everything has to be about him?

Her: Your Father and the King come a long way, they have been friends since childhood

Me: What does that has to do with me? ??

I furiously asked

Her: Watch your tone young lady!

Me: So , you want me to marry a man I I don't love?

Her: What do you know about love?

Me: You unbelievable!!!!

She gave me a hot slap , I held on my cheek as a tear trop escaped my eyes.

Her: I'm still your mother...As much as I hate this but we made a promise with the Langa family.

Me: Mom please talk to Dad , I love phakamani!

Her: I'm sorry baby, there is nothing I can do

Me: Is it about money? Phakamani have money!

Her: We owe them baby and we made a promise.

Me: How much do you need to repay the debt?

Her: We don't owe them money....but we owe them baby...

Me: So niyandithengisa?

Her: No baby

Me: So that's the only reason you called me back home? To give me a way?

Her: No

Me: Mama , I beg you, don't do this

She stood up

Her: I'm sorry

She walked out after those words.

I just can't believe my parents, they selfish and arrogant. How could they do this me????

Do they hate me this much????

I called Luvano and told him what was going on, he sounded not surprised as a sign that he knew about this.

Me: You know about this isn't it?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: You gonna sit back and do nothing?

Him: I tried to defend you but you know how your father is. Nam ndixakene nento apha.

Me: What do you mean?

Him: I'm getting married next week

Me: And I'm the last person to know about this?

Him: I don't even love this women, I dont even know what to say kuye!

Me: Then why you marrying her?

Him: Ask your father!

Me: He is farcing you as well?

Him: Yes, they have already paid the bride price. She is here living with me

Me: You lying

Him: I wish, I don't even think I will ever love her. She annoys me, ndimbawela ngempama ebusweni.

I giggled for a moment

Him: Hleka , iyeza nakuwe!

Me: I'm not gonna marry him

Him: If you say so

Me: Phakamani will freak out ones he hears about this

Him: He will be mad!

We chatted for a while then I went to sleep.

To be continued....

Insert 80

My phone disturbed my sleep early the following morning, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I said in a sleepy voice

Caller: Baby I'm in big shit...

Me: What's goin-

Him: The police are after us...we heading to Mountfrere.

Me: Robbed a bank??

Him: Not really but something like that-

Me: Haibo Phakamani, you just -

Him: This is not the time for preaching....I Will call you back after few day or a week. It will depend. Please don't call me back in this number, actually don't call me uzova ngam wena!

Me: Ph-

Him: I love you, please tell Mangaliso I love him!

Me: I want to talk to you about something...please call me soon.

Me::Pha...phakamani ?

I realised I was talking alone.

I cried calling back but his number sent me straight to voicemail.

I woke up later on, I was not even in the mood to face my parents.

I made my bed and went to the bathroom, I did my daily morning hygiene routine.

I looked myself through the bathroom mirror, I looked cheap with the eyelashes.

When I was done , I dragged my feet as I was heading to the kitchen.

Mom was feeding the boys , they were sitting on top of the counter.

I just walked in without uttering a single word.

I opened the fridge to take out milk then I heard my mothers voice.

Her: Good morning to you too

I just looked at her then closed the fridge.

Her: You gonna greet me Onikayo

Me: Yazisokoli ngoba andizoyena lonto!

I never talked to my Mom in this manner before, but emotions were controlling me.

Her: Tshini! Do you know you speaking to your mother?

Me:.....

I just left the kitchen and went to upstairs , leaving my mother yelling alone.

I closed my bedroom door then lay down on my back, I stared at the ceiling.

Few days later...

It was a Friday evening Mom was busy bathing the kids while Dad,Luvano and Loyiso were braai(ying) meat outside and I was with Lumka(Luvano's fiancè) at the kitchen preparing salads.

Me: Do you love him?

Her: Ewe

Me: No need to lie, because we both know you don't love him.

Her: What difference will it make if I love him or not? The wedding will continue

Me: No man this is not right. Bhuti doesn't love you and you don't love him.

Her: I just wish I was not born in a royal family. I have to marry someone I don't even love

Me: You have choice

Her: So do you

Me: I'm not gonna marry brother mna, bayazisokolisa.

Her: If you say so

Me: I have a boyfriend mna and he is not gonna sit back and do nothing

Her: Don't be so sure

Me: I'm sure

Her: Family is important, you have to do anything to keep it united. You need their blessings in everything, I don't want curses after me.

Me: What if you break up with your boyfriend then what? You will you turn to? Just think about it , you will learn to love each other because noBhuti doesn't love you.

Me: This is pathetic, how can they force us into marriage?

Her: They just following tradition

Me: Tradition my foot!!!

Mom walked in holding both the boys by hand.

Her: I'm starving, Onika go check how far are with the meat.

I just ignored her

Lumka: I will go check Mama

Mama: Okay sisi

She left the kitchen

Mom: How could you disrespect me like that?

Me: I don't have anything to say to you

Her: If I were you i would make peace with this and move on.

Me: ...

Lumka walked in

Her: They almost done

Mama: Okay sisi

Ndabe nditshintshe aphe kwi identity

Later on...

We served them when the meat was done.

I had to sit next to Loyiso, we ate then later on I helped Lumka do the dishes.

Loyisa walked as I was wiping the dishes.

Him: Are you almost done?

I didn't reply

Him: Onika

Lumka: Let me go check if we didn't miss dishes at the lounge.

And she left

Loyiso: Onika

Me:What? ????

Him: Finish up we have to go home, it's getting late.

Me: We?

Him: Please don't make this harder as it is. I also don't want this

Me: They why don't you man up and tell your father that you don't want this marriage?

Him: I wish that was easy like ABC

Me: It is

Him: Onika let's go, I'm just following orders.

Me: You weak do you know that?

Him: Excuse me

Me: You heard me right, You a coward , you can't even stand up for yourself sies!

He got furious

Him: You know what?

He surrendered his hands as he walked out the kitchen.

Dad walked in few minutes later

Him: Onika Loyiso is waiting for you in the car

Me: Hayi ko-

Him: Onikayo!

Tears escaped

Me: Just like that?

Him: I'm doing this for you. You gonna thank me later. Now go , Loyiso is waiting for you.

I angrily dropped the cloth and went to the car.

He started the car and we left, I was silent all the way to the house.

We arrived to this house, he parked the car.

Him: sifikile

Me: Mxxm

We got out and we entered the house. It was not a beautiful house but not really
Wow and it was not that big.

Him: This is our house, if you want to make any changes you welcome to do so.

He said he opened the fridge taking a bottle of juice out.

Me: Show me the room , I will be sleeping in.

Him: Okay

We walked throughout the passage and we entered this bedroom.

Him: You gonna sleep here

Me: Okay

Him: I'm going to get your bags

Me: Wait...am I moving in?

Him: They say we must get to know each other better since Intxitywa next week.

Me: Nxitywa??? Does this process normally go like this?

Him: Nam ndixakiwe , I don't know what's going on here

Me: I hate my parents

Him: Just accept things as they are

Me: This is madness

Him: Say that again

He said as he walk through the passage.

He came back with my bag, and placed it on top of the couch.

Him: If you want to take a bath or shower, the bathroom is on your left second door.

Me:...

I just undressed and wore my pyjama and slept.

I tried calling Phakamani again but his phone was off. I called Killer same thing , Ma8 naye.

I angrily placed my phone under the pillow and tried to sleep.

I felt someone getting under the blankets.

Me: Hayi!

Voice::It's me Loyiso

Me: What do you want under my blankets

Him: What do you mean ? Since when don't you know couples share one bed?

Me: Please sleep at a separate room, this feels uncomfortable.

Him: It's not like we gonna have sex

Me: But still

Him: Khalale ntombazana

He said as he faced the opposite way.

The next morning...

I woke up early, Loyiso was still fast asleep. I got up and went to the bathroom with toiletry bag, I took a long shower. I wiped myself with a towel that was hanging at the bathroom. I applied lotion then wrapped a towel again and walked back to the bedroom.

"What time is it?" Asked Loyiso as he was sitting up straight

Me: I don't know

Him: Why you up so early?

Me: could sleep

Him: Oh

He stood up and yawned as he was walking out the door.

I quickly dropped the towel and dressed up in a simple maxi dress.

He came back as I was brushing my hair.

Him: Please do me a favour

I looked at him through the mirror

Him: Remove those lashes , they look ridiculous.

Me:....

Him: Love yourself as you are don't try to be someone else.

Me:....

He wore his gown and walked out, if he thinks I'm gonna make clean after him, then he will have to think twice.

I left the bed as it was, I went to the kitchen.

Him: I'm starving yazi

I ignored him and made myself something to eat ogqiba ndahlala ecamkwakhe.

Him: Were is mine?

Me: There is still bread and egg in the cupboard.

Him: So?

Me: Go make yourself breakfast

Him: Why didn't you make for the both of us?

Me: Wena utheni ukukwazi?

Him: Mxxm!

He stood up and went make for himself

Him: Usile yazi

Me:...

Later on....

We were watching soccer, I just missed PK when he says he will teach me play.

Me : I miss my son , I want go and fetch him.

Him: Don't worry he will come stay with us next week , I don't mind

Me: I want to see him now

Him: Will see him tomorrow at church.

To be continued...

Insert 81

Sunday morning....

"Onika....Onika...." Said Loyiso's voice, disturbing my sleep ,he had that bold sexy voice.

Me: Mmmmm?????

I said in a soft irritated tone

Him: It's 8:30 , we gonna be late for church.

Me: I'm not going to church.

Him: Your Father will be mad

Me: I don't care! He doesn't care about me either.

Him: Why you complicating things? I'm stuched with you and you stucked with me. Let's just try to live together and learn to love each other.

Me: Just like that?

Him: Is there another way?

Me: Walk out

Him: I don't want to break his heart and don't want to lose him. He is the only parent I have. My mother passed away when I was 17 years and have to stay with my step Mother , she is the first wife .

Me: How wifes does your father have?

I asked with a shocked facial expression

Him: He had two wifes

Me: If your father had two Wifes...how many siblings do you have?

Him: I'm the only child kuMama but my father has 3 children from his first wife, Bongani my big brother , Lumka and Sibongile my younger sisters.

Me: Oh

Me: Is your brother married?

Him: Yes

Me: Was it also an arranged marriage?

Him: Yes , it's the family's duty to get us a good wife as they say.

Me: So you gonna marry someone you don't love?

Him: My brother learned to love his wife, so I think I will also learn to love you.

Me: What about your girlfriend? I'm sure you were in a relationship

Him: I love my girlfriend but I can't marry her

Me: Fight for her

Him: I wish I could, My family would never accept her and we will never receive their blessings.

Me: Try and fight for her

Him: Nxaki Ziyanda yabuthanda utywala but she is a wonderful person. She is beautiful, smart crazy , if she could just slow down on partying and drinking. Who knows maybe my family will accept him.

Me: So your parents wants a perfect wife for you? Oh I see

I had so much in my mind and I smiled to myself, because I was going to do exactly what they don't like.

Me: Okay

I stood up in a happy mood with smiles on my face.

Loyiso: Kuske kwathini?

Me: Isn't a beautiful day?

Him: I guess, he was confused

We prepared for church , I wore a simple white maxi dress with blue heels.

Him: Are you done ?

He asked as he was fixing his tie

Me: Yes

Him: Okay let's go

We locked the house and we drove straight to Church.

Everyone was looking at us as we walked in , we sat at the third row from the front.

The service went on, we were told to go to the front , the four of us (Luvano, Loyiso, Lumka and I) .

He told the whole church that we were getting married, bla bla bla and everyone was rejoicing making joyous sounds and all that stuff.

After church...

Church people were congratulating us, I was so irritated and annoyed , ndaske ndabawela iBeer ezanga ndayisela ebomini bam , wawuvephi?

I took my baby and went to sit in the car, I really missed him.

Mom came to take him after a while

Me: Kodwa I'm still enjoying his company

Her: It's time to go home

She said as she took him away from me, my heart was breaking slowly.

Loyiso came to the car and we left.

Him: Are you gonna cook or should we buy takeaways?

Me: I don't know

Him: I'm trying okay

Me: Leave me alone

I said folding my arm and looked ahead of me

Him: Mxxm

We drove straight home, we were quiet, saying nothing to each other.

When I got home, I went straight to the bedroom and took a nap.

I woke up later that day, I heard people arguing.

I got up and went to the kitchen because I was thirsty.

The was a lady standing by the kichen entrance, she was light in complexion with long black hair , I thought she was a coloured at first but I heard her speech that she is Xhosa.

Her: Seriously Loyiso?????

Him: Baby I can explain

Her: Loyiso why???? So its true?

He tried to touch her

Her: Sundibamba (don't touch me)

I just rolled my eyes and went back to the bedroom.

few minutes later , I heard foot steps coming to the bedroom.

The door opened in a disrespectful manner.

Her: Mntana ndini yindodakho Loyiso?

I ignored her because she can't talk to me in that manner.

Loyiso: Ziyanda stop it!

Her: You defending her now?

Him: I think you should go

Her: Who? Me? Ziyanda?????

Him: Let's go!

He said pushing her out, she was yelling all the way out.

I shook my head and went to the kitchen and poured myself juice.

I went back to the bedroom, my phone rang as I was entering.

I rushed to answer it, it was strange number.

Me: Hello

Caller: Baby

My heart gave a joyous beat

Me: Baby I need you

Him: Kwenzeka ntoni? Are you okay? Is Mangaliso okay?

Me: Mangaliso is fine! Where are you Phamani? Please come back!

Him: Baby izothathwa le phone, I will be away for a short period of time....I'm in prison...There is no way out this time around

Me: You can't say that, I need you! It will be tolate

Him: What you talking about?

Me: I'm getting married Phakamani! I'm getting married next week!

Him: Uthini? Ungakulinge undiqhela amatswele mna!

Me: My parents are forcing me , I don't want this marriage

Him: Ningakulinge nindiphambanele mna yandiva?????

Me: You know how my father

Me: Phakamani

He hung up already, I just laid there on my back with tears rolling out.

Days later...

We were at his village, at the royal house. It was Saturday morning, bendinxityiswa this day.

Ndiye ndanxityiswa, ndathiywa , sayalwa. There were so many people, almost the whole village was there and VIPS .

I later had to go and help at the kitchen, there was plenty of work and I was exhausted.

Later on...

It was around 11pm, everyone went to their separate room.

Loyiso walked as I was undressing, I covered myself.

Me: You can't just walk in, What if I was naked?

Him: Do you realise that you my wife now?

Me: That doesn't mean anything

Him: Amen!

He said as he was undressing, stood there in that same position.

Him: When you have decided to be John Walker, please switch off the light on your journey to bed.

Me: Mxxxm

He got under the blankets and slept. I quickly finished undressing and wore my night dress and joined him after switching off the light.

To be continued....

Insert 82

I woke up early the following morning, Loyisa was still fast asleep.

I slowly went to bath, everyone was asleep that time.

After bathing, I applied lotion and then wore the Makoti clothes. I didn't even like wearing them, they made me look stupid.

When I was done, the maids were coming in.

I greeted them as they were walking in.

Maid1: Molo sisi how are you?

She asked with a friendly smile on her face.

Me: I'm fine thanks and you

Maid2: Come

She said ordering me to sit down at the dining table.

Me: What?

Her: Let me fix your doek

Me: Oh okay

She fixed it for me

Me: Enkosi

They were three maids, Mandinakhe, Nontando and the oldest was SisMandi.

SisMandi: Limise (That's the name they gave me)

Me: C

Her: Nontando will set the table while you follow me to the kitchen.

Me: Okay

I followed her to the kitchen and she showed me how the King like his egg and Loyiso ,the Queen did like eggs so she preferred eating cereal alone while the other's eat cerel followed by bread and eggs.

Liyema(The old brother's wife) she walked in with a grinned face , as if she was disgusted.

Her: Molweni

We looked at her and great back.

Her: I see you woke up early

I just looked at her because I was not in the mood for her.

Her: I can see you walking hard, so that the Queen can like you, but you late you will never take my place in her heart.

Me: Like seriously? Do I look like an orphan who needs a mother's love?

Her: I'm just telling

Me: You sick

SisMandi: Go wake everyone and tell them breakfast is ready.

Me: Okay Sisi

Liyema: It's my Job to do that, I will wake them

Me:Okay

That women was working on my nerves.

She walked out modeling

SisMandi: Don't mind her she is like that. But don't let her bully you

Me: I won't

Her: She is not special than you , you both Daughters in-law's apha, so don't let her bully you

I nodded

Her: Now go and wake your husband up

Me: Can't he wake up himself?

She stared me

Me: Who was waking him up before?

Her: Limise!

Me: Okay, okay

I said as I was walking out, I went to the bedroom. He was still asleep.

I stood in front of him with both my hand on my waist

Me: Loyiso

He didn't reply

Me: Loyiso!!!!!!

He jumped up

Him: Yintoni wandikhwaza ngathi Ndimithise sister wakho? (Why you call me as if I impregnated your sister?)

Me: Make up

Him: Like seriously?

Me: Breakfast is ready

I said as I was walking out, I went back to the kitchen.

The rest of the family was seated at the table including Liyema.

I served them breakfast and greeted as I was approaching them.

The Queen smile

Her: Morning princess

I smiled and gave her cereal.

Loyiso walked in and took a seat, I served him his breakfast. He looked at my face and he smiled.

Him: Thank you

King: Limise can you please pour me more coffee?

I nodded and did as I was told, when they were done eating I cleared the dishes and Nontando washed them.

A week later...

It was a Saturday afternoon, I was done with my duties for the afternoon, I was folding Loyiso's clothes since I was bored .

He walked in

Him: Limise

He said as he was sitting at the edge of the bed.

Him: When am I getting some?

Me: Some of what?

Him: You know what I'm talking about

Me: I don't know

Him: When are we having sex?

Me: Tshini yavuya

Him: What does that mean?

Me: I don't mind you can still date Ziyanda and have sex with her not me

Him: Are you listening to yourself?

Me: Yes

Him: So I'm gonna get any?

Me: Not from me

Him: You are unfair

Me: Do you know what is unfair?

Him: You are my wife

Me: I don't love you Loyiso and I don't think I will ever love you

Him: So what now?

Me: Don't ask me

Him: I'm trying okay, it's not like I also wanted this

Me: Don't you have friends or anywhere to go? Because you crowding me

Him: Usile yazi (You rude)

Me: Please go , I want to be alone

Him: Do not say I didn't try

He stood up and left, continued with what I was doing.

Liyema walked in my room and stood by the door.

Her: Is it the money?

I turned and faced her and I was like what is it with this women?

Her: Is it the title ?

Me: What are you talking about Women?

Her: He is not gonna be King , my husband will be King.

Me: So what?

Her: I know you after the money and the royalty.

Me:...

Her: You are young , you supposed to be at school with your mates

Me: Please leave my room

Her: Can't handle the truth?

Me: Mxxm

I just ignored her

Loyiso came back late around 10pm and I was in bed already but was not sleeping.

He undressed, I didn't ask him anything.

He joined me in bed

Me: I'm writing next month's, so what's the plan?

Him: We will go to East London and stay there for the period

Me: What about work?

Him: Don't worry about me

Me: Okay

Him: You don't care neh?

Me: What you talking about?

Him: I came back late , but you ask me anything

Me: I'm not your mother or your nanny

Him: Wow! Okay

He turned and looked the opposite way.

The following morning...

My phone rang around 5am, I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Hello

I said in a sleepy voice

Caller: When are you coming to visit me?

It was Phakamani

Me: You are far Phakamani

Him: They moved us, silaphe East London

Me: I will come during the week

Him: Please bring my son with

Me: Okay

Him: I miss you baby

Me: I miss you too

Him: I love you , always remember that. I would do anything for yoy and Mangaliso, even if it means killing someone.

Me:...

Him: Don't worry will get out of here baby and come back to you

Tears just escaped

Him: When I come back, I will pay Lobola for you and we will start our own family.

"Who you talking with? " Asked Loyiso on the background.

PK : Onika , who is talking at the background?

Loyiso: I'm asking Limise

Me: It's my boyfriend Taka Luthando

PK : Onika!!!!

Me: It's not what you think

Him: You cheating on me?

Me: I'm married, they forced me-

He hung up on me

Me: Phakamani

I turned and looked at Loyiso

Me: See what you have done?

Him: Do you realise that I'm your husband?

Me: I don't care!! Phakamani is angry and I don't want to be his worst enemy

Him: Limise you have to forget about this guy and focus on making this marriage work

Me: I don't want this marriage, I want my Phakamani. I don't want you, I don't want this marriage, I don't love you and I will never love you!

Him: Where is he? Are you going to continue seeing him?

Me:Yes I will continue seeing him and I will never sleep with you . I will sleep with him alone!

Him: You know what?

He stood up and went out the door very angry ,I didn't care.

I stood up as well , I made the bed and cleaned the room.

When I was done, I did my daily morning routine.

Loyiso said I must pack our stuff when I was done with everything.

Him: We leaving

Me: We are we going?

Him: We going back to P.E

Me: Okay

He told his parents, they were not happy but their son insisted.

We said our goodbyes and left at the afternoon.

We didn't say anything to each other all the way.

We arrived later at P.E, we just undressed and slept.

I woke up early because I was used now waking up.

I made breakfast for the both of us, I woke him up.

Me: Breakfast is ready

Him: Okay

I sat at the lounge and ate my cereal.

He walked in and I pointed where his breakfast was.

He looked at me

Me : What?

He just shook his head and walked to the kitchen.

Later on...

We went to my parents house to take Luthando.

Mom was home but dad was not home.

Her: You look beautiful

I didn't answer her

Me: Where is Lutha?

Her: Haibo you don't even ask how I have been?

I just looked at her and went to look for Lutha.

I found him upstairs sleeping, I packed all his stuff then went downstairs with him on my back.

Me: Loyiso let's go

Mama: You don't even want something to drink?

Me: I want nothing from you

I said as I was walking out, I waited by the car for Loyiso.

He came after me, he unlocked the car and I got in with my baby.

Loyiso also got in.

Him: Why are you so rude?

Me: Just drive

Him: That women is your mother

Me: She sold me!! I don't consider her as my mother

Him: Limise!

Me: I don't want anything to do with my parents, they are dead to me.

He shook his head then started the car.

To be continued...

Insert 83

We arrived home, I went straight to the bedroom holding Lutha.

I just cried out of the blue, Loyiso walked in .

He took Lutha and walked out with him, he came back alone. He laid next to me facing me, I turned around and faced the opposite way.

"Please don't push me away"

He said and I didn't respond

Him: Please look at me

Me: Leave me alone Loyiso

Him: I can't, you are my wife...I know this is hard for you , we are married and we start making this work. I am willing to make this work

Me: I don't love you Loyiso , I love Phakamani.

Him: Is he willing to share you with another man?

Me: He is angry at me and it's all your fault

Him: You can't put the blame on me

Me: He is angry Loyiso and you would not like to see his bad side

Him: Does he lay a finger on you

Me: Not always

Him: So he does?

Me: Only when I don't listen

Him: That is not an excuse, a man who hit his women is a coward

Me: He does not do it often, he love me and respect me

Him: Where is he now?

Me: East London

Him: OH, so you gonna see him when we are at that side?

Me: Yes

Him: So you gonna hang out with him and leave me at home?

Me: I don't know

Him: So you gonna make a fool out me?

Me: You married me knowing very well that I have a boyfriend.

Him: So I'm gonna watch a man coming to pick up my wife and bring her back the following morning? ???

Me: What did you expect?

Him: You gonna sleep with the both of us?

Me: I'm not gonna sleep with you!

Him: Oh , so what is this called?

Me: Don't ask me

Him: Okay

He stood up and walked out, I didn't care.

I woke up later on and prepared supper. I served him his food than feed Lutha.

Him: We leaving tomorrow

Me: East London?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay

Him: We will be renting a flat

Me: There is no need for you to come with

Him: Kuzothiwa yintoni xayibizwa lonto?

Me: It's only one month

Him: Okay fine if that's what you want

Me: Ewe

Him: Lutha will stay with me

Me: There is no way I'm gonna leave you with my son

Him: Tell me how will you cope ?

Me: I will cope just fine

Him: If that's what you want fine but I will come fetch you after the exams

Me: Okay

Him: I will deposit you money for rent, food and daily experiences.

Me: I Will stay at my boyfriend's house

Him: Awuguli perhaps?

Me: I'm serious

Him: That won't happen

Me: It's not like he is around

Him: I don't care

Me: I was not asking you I was telling you

Him: You not gonna stay there nditsho!

Me: Who are to tell me what to do and what not to do?

Him: I'm your husband Limise , the sooner to stick that in your head the better.

Me: Mxxm

He stood up ndaphepha

Him: Phepha ntoni? Do you think im that boyfriend of yours? I don't hit women, I was not raised like that.

He walked to the kitchen to place his food.

Him: I even lost appetite

He walked through the passage all the way to the bedroom.

We joined him later , he was busy with his laptop.

He cuddled with Lutha I just covered myself.

Following morning...

Loyiso woke me up early and told me to pack our things

Me: You not coming with

Him: I'm coming with

Me: It's not necessary

My phone rang , it was a strange number and I knew it was PK

Me: Hello

Him: Come visit me tomorrow with my son!

Me: Okay

Him: And tell that husband(nyana) of yours to back off if he doesn't want trouble with me

Me: I will come

Him: Come with toiletries that will be enough for the three of us, white T-shirts , socks, underwears and face Towels.

Me: Okay

Him: I will be waiting

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: Me too

Him: Me too wantoni? Say I love you too!

Me: I love you too

Him: What was difficult saying those words?

Me: Nothing

Him: Have to go, see you tomorrow morning

Then he hung up

Loyisa just shook his head, he didn't say anything.

We finished packing, I took a bath and he also bathed. When we were done, I woke Lutha up and bath him then made him cereal.

While I was feeding him, Loyiso went to put our bags at the boot.

I finished feeding him, we locked the house and we locked.

We arrived at East London around 11am, we drove straight to this flats, it seems like it usually comes here and he stayed here before.

We met the Land lord , he was been waiting for us and they seem to know each other.

LandLord : You didn't tell me you have a son

Loyiso: I have a son

LandLord: Why were I not invited to the wedding?

Loyiso: Will invite you to the white wedding that is coming soon

Him: Can't wait

They giggled

Loyiso: Limise this is Joe , my old friend

Me: Hello

Joe: Hello Mrs Langa how are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Him: I'm fine, nice meeting you. She is beautiful

Loyiso: She is beautiful indeed!

She smiled to each other

Loyiso: My wife is tired she needs to rest.

Joe: No problem my man, will see you around

Loyiso: Sure!

He handed him the keys and we went to our flat.

Me: I'm attending tomorrow

Him: No problem

Me: Okay

He left with Lutha and I was left alone.

PK called again

Me: Hello

Him: Sondezwa will come fetch you

Me: Can she drive?

Him: Yes she will be driving Killer's car

Me: Why don't she buys her boyfriend's stuff?

Him: No, she will be bringing something else

Me: Okay, but she will get me at school

Him: Call her and sort that out

Me: I'm not gonna do that

Him: This not time for this shit , just do as I tell you

Me: Mxxm

Him: See you tomorrow

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

We hung up ...

The following day...

Loyiso dropped me at school, I was even scared to face the people at school. The clothes I was wearing was calling for attention.

I called Sondezwa and told her she will will find me at school.

Her: Okay, I will call you when I'm there

Me: Sharp

We hung up, I went inside and asked for my Time table and I received it.

My friends were so shocked to when they saw me dressed like that.

Zanele: Phakamani yasheshe neh! He doesn't waste time

Me: ...

Her: Kodwa you look beautiful chomi...

Me: Thanks

Her: I was worried thought at the beginning of this semester I was wondering what is going on.

Me : I will never drop out

She giggled

Her: What is your new name?

Me: Limise

Her: Not bad kodwa

Me: Yeah

Sondezwa called and I had to go, I left her going inside.

I was so pissed off I was not in the mood for Sondezwa's drama.

I got inside the car as greeted

Her: Didn't know you guys are married tshissaaaaa!

Me: Can we stop at the Mall I want to buy few stuff.

Her: Okay Mrs Poni! Hayi sana niyafihla!

We stopped at the Mall and bought the stuff he asked for , I used almost all the money he gave me when I was going to visit my mother.

I had to buy quality stuff not cheap stuff, when I was done I we drove straight to prison.

I got nervous as we entered. As I was so scared as we were waiting for them.

They came in with guards.

My body shivered automatically and could not control my body.

Him: What are you wearing?

Me: I told you

Him: Don't tell me bullshit!!!!

Me:.....

Him: Voetsek! Don't ever come here wearing this shit

I looked down

Him: Am I clear!!!

Me: Phakamani it's not like I wanted this!

Him: So uyatyiwa? (So you being laid?)

Me: No!

Him: How should I believe that shit you telling me?

Me: I swear I'm not sleeping with him

Him: Where is my son?

Me: I left him behind, he doesn't know I'm here

Him: You left my son with another man???? Didn't I say I want to see my son?

Me: I'm sorry

He was angry and crossed with me

Him: Sundixelela Kaka Onika!!!! (Don't tell me bullshit ONIKA)

Me: I promise I will bring him with next time

Him: You disgust me yazi! Jonga voetsek hamba and come back when you have my son and not wearing those clothes, I don't want to see you wearing that shit!

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Does he touch you? How many times did you sleep with him?

Me: I didn't sleep with him , I speaking the truth

Him: I will never share you uyandivah!

Me: You won't

Him: I want you wait for me until I get out of here. Tell that asshole to stay away from you. Because when I get out of here , he will be sorry!

Me: He is innocent, our parents forced us

Him: Mxxm please go your presence make me wanna vomit!

Me: Phakamani

Him: If you want to talk to me remove this shit!

He stood up and left with the guard leaving me hanging.

I blinked uncontrollably ,I stood up and waited for Sondezwa outside.

My heart was in pieces, I could see the anger in his eyes, the hatred.

He was disappointed, I broke his heart and trust.

Sondezwa came back later on and we left.

There was silence all the way back home, She dropped me by the gate. I walked and walked to the flat, Loyiso was even shocked to me at that time.

I locked myself at the bedroom and cried.

To be continued...

Insert 84

"Limi...what's going on? Are you okay? "

Said Loyiso knocking on the door which I refuse to open.

Him: Please talk to me Limise!

I ignored him, I didn't answer him. I heard his footsteps walking away through the passage.

Later on...

My head was paining and I was feeling cold.

I stood up , closed the window and curtain, I switched on the light because it was already dark.

I unlocked the door and went to the bathroom to wash my face, my eyes were burning from all the crying , my face looked pale and dry.

I ran the water and washed my face with cold water.

"Uyatywa???...You left my son with another man??"

His words were repeating on my head like a tape recorder on play.

How could I do this to him? Why didn't I fight for our love? I hurt him so much.

I imagined the hate in his eyes , the disgusted facial expression he gave me.

I wished I could proof that I was not sleeping with Loyiso.

I stared at my reflection on the mirror, I looked horrible, my eyes were red.

I wished I could turn back the Clock, why is my life a mess? Why is this happening to me? GOD why? Why? Why why? Why me?

Those were the thoughts that were running on my head.

"Limi, what is the problem? "

I angry turned around with a angry facial expression.

Me: You are the problem! He hates me because of you!!!

Him: Me?

Him: Yes you!! You ruined my life! Now he hates me

Him: Limi you being unfair

He said with a low tone

Me: Unfair???

Him: It's not like I like being here

Me: Phakamani is angry at me! He hates me. I betrayed him, I broke his trust.

Him: I'm sorry

Me: You not sorry you happy

Him: Limi please

Me: Stop calling me that! MY NAME IS ONIKAYO !

He inched closer

Him: We can make this relationship work , but we need to meet each other half way

Me: I don't want this stupid marriage, I want Phakanani! He promised to marry me! GO!

He pulled me closer

Him: Let me go! Don't touch me! I hate you

He hold me tight, I roughly yanked myself from his embrace

Me: Don't touch me!

Him: I'm sorry

He moved back and walled out.

I went back to the bedroom later on, I found my baby sleeping peacefully.

He reminded me of Phakamani, He really looked like his father , it was like copy and paste.

I looked at him and smiled then placed a soft peck on his lips.

My phone rang just after kissing him, it was my sister and I answered.

Me: Hello

Her: Hello, how are you?

Me: I'm not good at all , I don't want this marriage

Her: Everything will be alright

Me: Everything will be alright? Like seriously?

Her: At least he is a good man with a good family background

Me: I can't believe what I'm hearing

Her: You will be fine , you will see

I just couldn't believe if it was my sister talking.

Me: This is unike you

Her: I promise little sister you will be fine. Anyways the reason I'm calling, I want to ask you for a favour?

Me: Favour?

Her: Yes , since you married now and Loyiso is not the father of Lutha. Why don't you give me Lutha and start over?

I just couldn't believe my sister, how can she ask for that?

Me: Give you? Start over?

Her: I know Phakamani is in Prison and he is not coming back soon. So it will be better if Lutha stay here with me since I can't give my husband a child

Me: I can't believe you , how can you be so selfish?

Her: I'm begging you! You know you can have a baby anytime you want

Me: This is not my sister talking, Umsephi sister wam?

Her: Please think about it hlubikazi .

Me: Phakamani would never allow that!

I hung up , How could she be so selfish?

I was just upset and angry. I called my brother and told him everything.

Him: I can't believe it's her saying all this rubbish.

Me: What's happening?

Him: Mxxm , she is crazy

Me: Say it again

Him: Do you know Phakamani is in Prison?

Me: Who told you that?

Him: People are talking outside, Mom and Dad also know

Me: How ?

Him: Almost everyone knows, I didn't know he is a thief! Yesses , I trusted him...wait did you know about this?

Me: No, no....I'm even shocked that he is in Prison. No wonder his phone sent me straight to voicemail.

Him: Jonga ke, Stay away from him. He is not good for you

Me:...

Him: I mean it.. You deserve a better man not thar thug!

Me: What about Lutha

Him: He can see him, if he will ever see him . Because he is gonna be away for a very long time.

Me: ...

Him: I trusted him yazi and please don't visit him

Me: Okay

Him: Good girl

We hung up, I placed my phone down then started undressing. Loyiso walked in , I didn't care.

"I'm not gonna stand on your way...I came to a conclusion "

Me: What conclusion?

Him: I will continue dating Ziyanda and you will continue dating Phakamani but we must just pretend to our parents .

Me: Really?

Him: Yeah, we can sleep in separate rooms if you want

Me: That's an idea

Him: Deal?

Me: Deal

Him: Good!

Two days later...

It was a Friday afternoon, I had cooked food and bought some stuff for Phakamani.

I was wearing a new white maxi dress with Brown sandals, Loyiso didn't mind he said I'm gonna wear the Makoti attire when I'm at P.E.

I didn't tell him PK was in Prison and didn't even know PK in person.

I lied and said I was going to have a picnic with PK, I left with m son and we went to visit PK.

He wad excited to see his boy.

Him: He is growing up so fast!

Me: Yes he is

Him: Are you still leaving with him

Me: Yes but-

Him: Jonga , I don't want you living with that man or are sleeping with him?

Me: No

Him: Then why you still living with him?

Me: We just fooling our families

Him: Or fooling me

Me: I will never fool you

Him: Yoy glowing as a results that he is treating you right

Me: PK please

Him: You couldn't wait, you just jumped into another man's bed!

Me: You being unfair now?

Him: It's the truth, but it's fine enjoy while it last

Me: Baby , I love you alone

Him: I'm gonna get out of here and get my family back.

Me: You will find us waiting

Him: If I get out of here and find you married with another man with children, I promise I will kill that man , kill the children except you and Mangaliso.

Me: I will wait for you

Him: Mark my words

He said as he touching Lutha's cheek

Him: I made you this women you are today and I own you! You mine alone you hear me?

I nodded

Him: Good, now listen. You gonna visit me everyday or three times a week. I want us to keep that bond.

Me: We moving to P.E once im done with my exams

Him: I have a house that I bought especially for you. You gonna stay there and raise my child, when I come back we can get married and extend the family.

Me: You know that is not possible

Him: I was not asking you, I'm telling you

Me: Baby...You will provide for us?

Him :You are a very smart lady, you can find a Job . I have Two cars parking there and money in the safe that will sustain you for a little while.

Me: There is no guarantee that I will get a Job soon.

Him: When I come back , I want to come back to a warm home.

To be continued...

Insert 85

When time was up, we had to say goodbye.

Him: I love you, always remember that

Me: I love you too

Him: See you tomorrow

Me: Okay

The guard took him away, I just wished things were different. I missed him next to me, kissing me, touching me, the smell of his skin. I just missed everything about him.

Later on...

I went straight home with my baby. Loyiso was not home, he left a note saying :
"I will be back tomorrow"

It didn't say where he is or anything, I just placed it down again then started cooking for my baby and I.

While I was cooking, I bathed my baby then dressed him in warm pyjamas.

Loyiso called while I was feeding Lutha

Me: Hello

Him: Hello, how are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you ?

Him: I'm fine, Did you get my note?

Me: Ewe

Him: I'm in P.E , I will come back tomorrow

Me: No problem

Him: Upheke Limise (You must cook Limise)

Me: I have already done that

Him: Good, were is Thando?

Me: He is in front of me , chewing

He giggled

Him: Let me talk to him

Me: Okay

I placed the phone on his years

Me: Hello

Lutha: Hello....Unjani?(How are you)

Me: Philile njan wena?(I'm fine and you?)

Lutha: Philile , wena?...Philile!

He was repeating what we were saying.

I just heard him laughing out of the blue , I placed the phone on my air.

Me: What you saying to him that he laughed so hard

He giggled while Lutha was crying at the background, He wanted to speak

Him: Men's stuff

Me: Mxxm

Him: Give him the phone, can't you see his crying?

He giggled with his bold voice

Me: Anisephole

I placed the phone again , he spoke with him in broken Xhosa.

I took the phone after a while

Me: Goodnight

Him: Goodnight, will see you tomorrow

Me: Okay

Him: Double check if the doors are closed and the windows.

Me: Okay

Him: Sure

We hung up , I stood up , took Lutha's bowl and went to place it at the kitchen.
Then we went to sleep with my baby.

The following morning...

Woke up early cleaned the house , when I was done I took a quick shower then dressed in a black dress that was fitting tight on me. It was shaping me, making me look sexy, I wanted to look beautiful for him. When I was done , I woke lutha up and bath him then dressed him up.

When I was done with him, I made him cereal and he ate.

We left later on, I bought Phakamani breakfast at Steers then went straight to prison.

He came walking with a guard as always.

He took a seat and looked at me

Me: Hello , how are you today?

Him: I don't like this dress of yours

Me: Oh really?

Him: Or are you asking for attention from other men?

Me: No, I thought you will like it

Him: You look like a hoe

That didn't sit well with me

Me: I'm sorry ,I won't wear it again

Him: How is School?

Me: I'm writting next week

Him: Did you study or are you busy fucking that idiot?

Me: Why you so rude with me Phakamani? I don't know you like this

Him: Do you think it's nice being here?

Me: I didn't say so

Him: Knowing that your girlfriend is being fucked by another man

Me: Baby that's not true

Him: Did you move in to our house?

Me: I'm, I'm planning but have to talk to Loyiso first

Him: Talk to Loyiso first? What does this have to do with Him ?

Me: He was not home yesterday , I can't just leave. Bsby he is a good guy , he won't take advantage of me. At least we will be safe with him and baby he has a girlfriend.

Him: You think I'm stupid?

He frowned

Me: You are not Stupid

Him: Onikayo, I want you out of that house yandiva? Or don't come back here. You must make a choice, it's either him or me? If you choose him then you must know it comes with great consequences.

Me: I choose you baby

Him: Very good, now you will go back home, pack all of your stuff and move out.

Me : Okay

We chatted for a while then I had to leave.

Him: You can come after your exams

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: Love you too

I left and went straight home, when I got home Loyiso was home.

Lutha rushed to him and he lifted him up.

Him: Were you guys coming from?

Me: From his father

Him: Prison?

I was shocked he knows

Me: How did you know?

Him: I bumped into Luvano Yesterday and we had a little chat.

Me: So he told you?

He nodded

Me: Oh

I said as I went to sit at the lounge

Him: Limi

Me: Mmm?

He took a seat next to me with Lutha on his lap.

Him: Is that the future you want?

Me: What you talking about?

Him: Do you want to spend the rest of your life with a criminal?

Me: He is not a criminal, he is good man

Him: Why is he in jail?

Me: He was working for his family

Him: By killing and stealing?

Me: Don't judge him

Him: You see a bright future Nonongoloza?

Me: Stop calling him names

Him: That place is not right for Lutha

Me: So you are perfect?

Him: Don't get me wrong, I didn't say that

Me: I love him okay

Him : Tell me about this guy , what do you like about him? What attracts you ?

Me: He is loving and would do anything for his family.

Him: I see , so you don't mind even if it means killing other people? Other people's bread winner ? Just for his family?

Me: Stop it okay!

Him: I'm not fighting with you

Me: Please let me be

Him: Okay no problem , so tell me. How does it feels visiting him in prison, knowing he will stay there for a very long time?

Me: I will wait for him?

Him: 25 years?

Me: How do you know?

Him: Didn't he tell you?

Me: No

Him: Oh

Me: Why are painting him negatively? I love him and he is a good man

Him: Then why is he in jail?

Me: He was hustling for his family

Him: Oh really?

Me: Yes, Anyways I'm moving out

Him: Uyaphi nawethu? (where you going?)

Me: I'm moving to our house

Him: That won't happen

Me: I wa not asking for your permission, I was telling you

Him: You gonna move in there right? Who is going to support you?

Me: That doesn't matter

Him : I don't know if you need prayers or to be baptised. This guy is not good for you

Me: You can't decide for me

Him: I'm not trying to fight with you, but you can't stay alone in that house with Lutha. Okay fine you will see your gangster boyfriend but stay at least for security reasons. I won't stand in your way, choice is yours and remember you married.

He stood up after those words and left with Lutha.

I heard them playing outside, I looked at them through the window,

I snapped out of it and went study.

Loyiso cooked that night, I joined them at the lounge after studying.

Him: My mother is coming to visit us on Monday.

Me: Why?

Him: She says she wants to come check on us.

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Yes, so we have to act normal

Me: Okay

I was just not in the mood for her

To be continued...

Insert 86

I woke up early the following morning, I iron my Makoti attire then took a quick shower. When I was done with myself, I started making breakfast.

"Mmmm...that smells nice" He said walking in inside the kitchen.

I looked at his feet because he was not wearing shoes and it was white socks.

Him: Pretend as if you not seeing them

Me: And I have to wash them, phof you gonna wash them

Him: Why you so grumpy early in the morning?

Me: Mxxm

He went to sit the lounge, I saw Lutha passing the kitchen heading to the lounge, he was also didn't have shoes on. I watched him as he went to sit next to Loyiso . Loyiso was placing his feet on top of the coffe table, now Lutha also wanted to do that but his feet were not reaching.

Loyiso giggled then moved the table closer, Lutha folded his arms and smiled.
(Uzenza mdala Luthando)

When I was done ,served Loyiso his food then fed Lutha his cereal.

Loyiso: Are you ready for the Exams?

Me: I think so

Him: You must think so, you must know so.

Me: I have a lot on my mind

Him: Education is important

Me: I know

Later on...

It was around 3 in the afternoon, I was washing the lunch dishes. Loyiso was busy with his laptop while Lutha was playing alone.

Loyiso's phone rang and he answered.

Him: Hello...You here already? ...Okay I'm on my way ...okay.

Then he hung up, he took his car keys

Him: I'm going to fetch Mom at the airport.

Me: Okay

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

Lutha cried as he went out

Me: Take him with

Him: Okay

And he left with him

They came back after a long while, I didn't know how to react. I faked a smile as she walked in

Me: Molo Mama

She opened her arms for a hug , I inched closer and hug her, she kissed me and we broke from each others embrace.

Her: How are you my daughter ?

she said as we were heading to the Lounge.

Loyiso took the language to the spare room, he was using and Lutha was following behind him.

Me: I'm fine Mama wena?

Her: I'm well my daughter

She said as she took a seat and releasing a great sigh.

Me: What can I bring you, Tea or Juice?

Her: Juice will be fine my dear

I went to the kitchen, poured a her a glass of juice and took it to her in a sorcer and bow as a sign of respect.

That is what I hated the most, I'm not used to this bowing thing.

Loyiso came to join us

Mama: So when am I expecting a grandchild?

Loyiso looked at me and I looked the other way

Him: Not anytime soon, Limise has to get her life on track first. She has to graduate and find a proper Job before she plan to have another baby.

Her: Oh

Him: At least Thando is here, I see no reason to have another baby soon

Her: Okay if you say so

Him: Ewe Mama

I stood up and went to the kitchen, I started preparing supper.

I finished cooking around 5 pm then I served the food at 6pm.

We ate and chatted in between, when we were done eating, I clear the table and washed the dishes.

I bathed Lutha later on and we went to sleep.

Me: When is your mother leaving?

I asked as I was laying on my back with the lights off.

Him: I don't know

Me: Do you think she will stay more than a Week?

Him: I don't know , You bored already?

Me: I just feel uncomfortable

Him: You will be fine

Me: I guess I have to be strong

Him: I'm sleepy now, I want to sleep

Me: Okay

I slowly fell asleep

Few weeks later...

I was done with my exams and My mother in law was still around. I enjoyed her company though because she was friendly and jokey 😊😊😊😊😊

It was Friday evening, we were going to eating out that day.

I warmly dressed Lutha and he waited at the lounge while I went to refresh.

I ironed Loyiso's pants and my blue blazer.

We dressed up , he looked at me.

Him: Am I okay?

I nodded

Him: Sure sure?

I giggled

Me: Ewe

Him: Okay zakutsho wena (When you say so)

Me: Let's go

Him: Okay

We went to the lounge

Mama : We going?

I nodded

Her: Okay

We left, Mom was talking nonstop at on the way.

We went to this restaurant , was first time going there.

We ordered drinks while we were deciding what we gonna order.

The waiter came to take our orders, Mom offered for her and Lutha

Loyiso: Baby?

Me: I'm gonna have what you having

Him: Okay

He ordered for the both of us

Mom: Liyema is pregnant again, let's hope it's a boy.

Loyiso: That's good news

Her: It will only be good news if she gives us a son.

We kept quite

Her: That is why you should also try for a baby or else Bongani should take a second wife

Loyiso: You being unfair kodwa Mama

Her: If he wants to be the next King he should have an heir.

Loyiso: Hayi kodwa

Mama: Yes

Our food came and we ate , while we were chatting in between.

We went home later on, I was so tired.

Loyiso: I wish I was was bored in a different family, he sad as he was sitting at the edge of the bed removing his shoes.

Me: Say that again

Him: They so selfish, imagine talking a second wife...

Me: Poor Limise

He unbotton his shirt

Him: It's unfair man and they gonna force us to have a child which is unfair as well.

Me: That means we have to have sex?

Him: Is there another way?

Me: I'm not ready for second baby

Him: Relax that wont happen

I undressed and wore my night dress

Him: Why don't you have stretch marks on your body but you have a baby?

Me: I don't know

Him: Even your breast , your body denies that you have a baby

Me: I didn't breast feed and didn't have a tummy , I just gave birth. Actually I didn't know I was pregnant till I gave birth.

Him: How is that possible?

He asked as he was opening the cover.

I helped remove the pillows and left only two.

I explained everything to him , we got under the blankets.

Him: Was it painful?

Me: What was painful?

Him: Giving birthday?

Me: Not really, I didn't feel so much pain

Him: Push!

Me: Usile kanene

He giggled

Him : I'm happy that I am a man, the thing you women go through are scary!

Me: It's because of you guys

Him: Phof nyan shame, we chatted

Me: Lutha is gonna cry when he doesn't find me next to him

Loyiso: Hahaha

for a while than we slept

I woke up the following morning, I cleaned while they were still sleeping than took a bath. When I was done, I made breakfast and woke them up.

Unfortunately Lutha didn't cry , the queen fed him.

When they were done eating, I washed the dishes then went to bedroom and found Loyiso busy with his laptop.

Me: I'm going to prison

Him: What am I suppose to tell my mother?

Me: Take me then

Him: Take you to prison, to see that thug?

Me: Please Loyiso

Him: I'm busy can't you see that?

Me: He will be mad at me, I didn't visit him for weeks

Him: Why you doing this to yourself? You deserve better and Lutha deserve better. That place is not right for Thando , you can't keep talking Thando there

Me: And who are you to tell me what to do? Luthando has the right to see his father

Him: Okay fine! I will take you to that thug

Me: Stop calling him that

Him: Whatever

He stood up and went to take a shower. He dressed up , we lied to the queen and said we were going out. We started at the Mall and a bought a dress and wore it then we drove straight to prison.

We arrived at Prison , Loyiso waited outside as we went inside.

When Phakamani walked in , He was not smiling.

Him: What took you so long?

Me: You told me to come when I'm done with my exams

Him: Do you finished writing today?

Me: I was busy

Him: Busy with what?

Me: Lutha was sick

Him: Why you lying?

Me: I'm not lying

Him: Qha?

I couldn't tell him the truth

Me: I swear I'm telling the truth

Him: You moved in already?

Me: No, I'm scared to live alone in that house

Him: Tshisaaaa! Ishushu lendoda

Me: PK please

Him: I can see you chose him, look here girly . Enjoy it while it still last, as soon as I get out of here, I will claim everything that belongs to me by force and I don't care who gets hurt along the process.

Me: Baby

Him: I have nothing to say to you , you just proved to me how weak you are and don't blame you though. Now take your shit and leave

Me: Phakamani don't do this

Him: You chose your path now live with it , continue sleeping with him...

Me: Baby don't do this

He stood that

Him: I trusted you but you betrayed me, Leave and never come back here again, I don't want to see your face.

Me: Baby I love you

Him: Mxxm, go to hell

Then he left, tears formed and automatically flowed, I watched him as he walked away.

I could feel my heart slowly breaking into pieces, I hated myself.

Phakamani hated me and didn't want to see me again.

To be continued...

Insert 87

I sniffed as I stood up fixing my dress. I could feel my heart into pieces, I could feel the pain physically. I awkwardly walked away trying hard not to show people my tears.

When I got inside the car I just released my tears with my head faced down.

Loyiso who was talking on the phone, immediately hung up and shift his focus unto me.

Him: What's going on?

Me: He hates , he doesn't want to see me again

I said with a loud crying voice

Him: I'm sorry

Me: IT'S ALL YOUR FAULT

Him: What did I do?

Me: It's because of you and my sick parents that phakamani doesn't want to see me again

Him: Onika you had a choice

Me: If I didn't marry you, My father would disowned me

Him: You should be angry at your father not me.

Me: Why did you agree

Him: Same reason as you

Me: Why don't you disappear into thin air and go far away?

Him: Why don't you disappear into thin air and go far away?

Me: You think this is funny?

Him: Do you see me laughing?

Me: Mxxm go to hell

Him: Right after you!

I said crying louder

Me: You must break up with Ziyanda

I said out of anger

Him:....

He wore his sun glasses and started the car

Me: You gonna break up with her, 50/50 ! Because Phakamani doesn't want anything to do with me , because of you

Him: Then you will have sex with me

I folded my hands , staring ahead of me

Me:....

Then there was awkward silence in the car.

We stopped at a garage for fuel.

Him: Go and change

Me: Andifuni (I don't want to)

Him: Come on Limise

Me:

Him: I'm sorry okay

Me:...

Him: Okay fine , i will stop seeing Ziyanda

Me:...

Him: Okay Limise funa ndithini? (What do you want me to do?)

He asked looking at me

Me: I want you to leave me alone

Him: Okay fine!

He paid then we left, we drove in silence.

As we were few houses away,i cleared my throat.

Me: Stop the car

I said staring at the Window

Him: What now?

Me: I want to change

I felt his eyes on me, I looked at him

Me: Fune uthetha? (Do you want to say something?)

Him: Usile wena ndikuxelele ngqumakho ! (You are rude)

Me: Are you gonna pull over or what?

Him:Mxm

He pulled over, I took my Makoti wear at the back seat and started charging.

He kept sealed his lips and didn't utter a single word till we arrived home.

We had to act when we got out of the car, what a double life.

Mom was watching Tv at the lounge , We greeted as we walk in.

Her: Mmm...Love birds

I smiled

Her: I can see you had a lot of fun

Liyiso: Yes Yhooo

He looked at me and smiled, I smiled back.

Her: I'm happy that you getting along

She said with a happy facial expression.

Later on...

It was around 6pm, I was dishing up supper.

Loyiso's phone rang , he left it at the kitchen.

Me: Baby!

He didn't reply, I was annoyed because It was difficult to call him by "Baby " now I have to call again.

Me: Baby phone!

Mama: Answer it , I'm sure he is in the bathroom.

I cleared my throat and answered , it felt awkward you know.

Me: Loyiso's phone hello

Caller: Hello , Where is Mr Langa?

It was a female voice

Me: He is at the bathroom, can you leave a message?

Her: Tell him Sandy called and he must call me back it's urgent.

Me: Okay I will do so

Her: Thank you , bye

Me: Bye

He walked in right after I placed down the phone

Him: Who was it?

Me: Sandy, she say you must call her back it's urgent.

Him: I wonder what she wants this time

He said making a phone call , he leaned with one hand on the counter as he was waiting for the caller to answer. I continued with what I was doing.

Him: Sandy...It was my wife...Yes I'm married, how come you don't know about it? I mean everyone at the office knows.. (Giggled)...Don't worry the white wedding is still to come...yes....Tomorrow???? Like Ngomso(Tomorrow)?...Do you realise I'm in East London?...Okay tell him I will be there on Tuesday...I don't like leaving my wife my boy alone...Okay Sandy will see you Tuesday....Night

He said then hung up

Me: Who is Sandy?

I heard myself asking

Him: Colleague

He said with a shocked voice, I was also shocked because I didn't concern me.

Me:Okay

I took a tray with food and went to serve Mother, he followed and sat at the lounge waiting for his,

I served him as well.

I was not hungry so , I just fed Lutha who wanted to eat on his own.

Mom: Let him be

Me: He is gonna mess the whole place with this food.

Her: I will clean don't worry

Me: Okay

Later on...

I went to take a shower , when I was done , I went to the bedroom wrapping a towel.

Loyiso was under blankets busy with his phone.

I applied lotion while I had the towel on.

Him: Yazisokolisa kanjani

Me: Funa ubona mpunduzam kengoku? (Do you want to see my Ass?)

Him: Kodwa ndazazi? (I know your ass)

Me: Nxilile (You drunk)

Him: Khaze apha (Come here)

Me: Andifuni (I don't want to)

He placed his phone down and got out of the blankets, he was naked

Me: Yhuu!

I said out of shock , izinza zakhe bezi black and white.

Him: What?

Me: How old are you?

Him: Why do you ask?

Me: Why are they black and white?

I asked pointing at private part

Him: Zidaliwe

Ndabheka bheka (I looked right and left)

He came closer, I got scared . Zange ndayibona enje (I never seen something like this)

Me: Why you naked please dress up, you gonna cause me nightmares

Him: You said I must break up with Ziyanda, now let's start treating each other as lovers

Me: Hayi bendidlala (I was joking)

I said look the other way because I was scared of what I was seeing.

Him: Please look at me

Me: Dress up first

Him: So I'm really not getting any?

Me: No!

Him: You unfair

Me: Please don't rape me

Him: Do I look like a rapist?

Me: I was just saying

Him: Mxxm

He went back to bed

Me: Nxiba kaloku (dress up)

Him: I don't feel like to

Me: Hayi hayi undincede! (Please!)

He didn't reply, I wore my pyjama and gown on top then I slept.

Few days later...

It was Tuesday morning, we were moving back to P.E. I really missed Phakamani, I wished I could feel his touch. I missed everything about him, I wished things were different.

Loyiso walked in as I was sitting at the edge of the bed thinking about Phakamani.

Him: What's up?

He asked as he sat next to me.

Me: I miss him

I said as tears started to form

Him: Stop doing this to yourself

Me: I miss him Loyiso, I love him, I can't just forget about him

I said as tears escaped . He pulled me closer to his chest.

Him: Shhh...Everything will be fine

Me: How Loyiso?

Him: You got me

Me: I don't want you, I want Phakamani!

Him:Okay, I'm sorry

I broke from his embrace

Me: You will never take his place, stop trying to replace him.

I said as I stood up

Him: Please give us a chance

Me: I hate everything about you, you are a total turn off nothing compared to Phakamani, Phakamani unezinza ezi mnyama,so stop trying to be him!!!

I said as I exited the room, we later drove to P.E.

I felt guilty as we were driving, I'm taking my distractions on the wrong person.

Insert 88

I felt guilty for taking my frustrations on him.

I was sitting awkwardly next to him as he was driving.

Me: I'm hungry yazi

I said trying to start an conversation

Mom: We ate breakfast when we left

Me: But I'm hungry

Mom: Maybe junior is growing inside

Loyiso looked at me then stared at the road again.

Me: No it's too soon for junior

Her: I'm sure you not using protection phof it should be like that.

Loyiso:When is Liyema giving birth?

Mom: She is still 4 months pregnant

Him: Oh okay

Mom: It better be a boy

Him: Let's hope

Mom: You should also try, because if she can't have a male child then you gonna take the seat

Him: I don't want the seat and don't even dream of it.

Her: Hayi Loyiso

Him: I'm sick and tired of this family

Her:Excuse me?

Him: You heard me

I looked at him

Me:Loyiso

Him: Why you act so innocent?

Mom: Lwando!!!!

He kept quiet and I was left with a question mark "Lwando?"

Her: I'm your mother!

Him: You not my mother!

Me:Loyiso hayi (no)

Him: Don't act as if you want this marriage

Me:Hayi

Him: I'm sorry

Then there was awkward silence, we arrived at P.E around 12pm.

I could see the queen was broken, we arrived home and entered the house.

She just went straight to the bedroom ,the moment she closed the door . I looked at Loyiso who was tapping water.

Me:You Rude

Him: Rude? Wazintoni wena ngobu rude? (What do you know about rudeness?)

Me: You shouldn't have spoke to her that manner

Him:That women is evil!

Me:Evil? She doesn't seem to be evil to me .

Him: You don't know her

Me: How?

Him: Time will tell

Me: She visits you, treat you like his own son, accepted Luthando.

Him: That's all an act!!!!

Me: What act?

Him: You better ask your parents, you not gonna hear it from me. All I can say they are selfish, greedy,controlling and ungrateful!

Me: What you talking about?

Him: Look yourself in the mirror and look at your family, you will find your answer right there in front of the mirror. If I was not desperate, I wouldn't have agree to this shit!

He walked away then reversed

Him: One more thing , if I were you . I would not trust anyone with my son , careful!

Then he went out of the door slamming it.

I stood there with Lutha on my arms, I was confused.

Later on...

It was around 11pm, Loyiso was not home yet.

I was still awake , I couldn't sleep. The words he spoke were repeating on my head.

I looked at Lutha who was fast asleep,I took my phone and called Luvano but he didn't answer, I called Thobela. It rang several times before he answered.

Him: Hello

He answered in a sleepy voice

Me: Sorry to wake you up

Him:It's fine

Me: I can't sleep

Him:Where is your husband?

Me: I don't know

Him: What do you mean you don't know?

Me: How the hell am I supposed to know where he is????

Him : Onika is everything okay between you two?

Me: Everything is a mess Thobela

Him: Can I come to you?

Me: You can't

Him: I will come fetch you, you can't be alone in that house

Me: Relax the queen is here

Him: I'm coming!

Then he hung up.

Something like a hour later he called and said he was outside. I was shocked because the last time I remembered he didn't have a car.

I wore my gown and walked outside.

A grey Yaris was parking outside,he flashed the lights.

I walked to the car, the door opened and I got in.

Me: Unemoto na? (You have a car?)

Him: Yeah,anyways what is going on?

Me: My life is a mess Thobela

I said leaning backwards

Him: What is the problem?

Me:Everything

I saw Loyiso's car driving in .

Him: Seems like your husband is back

Me: He is rude , I'm just not in the mood for him.

Him: Ta Loyd ? Rude? Never?

Me: I was also shocked

Him: That's not like him, yes he drinks but not rude

Me: I don't wanna lie I never saw him drunk but today he was rude towards his Mother

Him: That's new

We chatted for a while then my phone rang it was Loyiso.

Me: Look

I showed him the phone

Him: You need to go inside

Me: He must wait

A message followed after few missed calls and it read as follow ; "Where are you? We need to talk , I'm sorry about earlier "

I showed Thobela

Him: Go back inside

Me: I don't want to

Him: Onika!

Me: Okay

Him:Go!

Me: Mxxm

I opened the car door and exited, I went inside ,opened the door and it was unlocked the way I left it.

I walked inside the bedroom, Loyiso was sitting at the edge of the bed unbuttoning his shirt.

He lifted up his head as I walked in .

Him: Limise my wife , I'm sorry please forgive me .

He was drunk,

I didn't reply

Him: Yaz imali! (Do you know money) can make you do things that you that you regret later on.

Me: You drunk?

Him: I didn't drink much , yazi I wish I could remove this burden...it is heavy on me and eating me slowly inside, Im dying inside.

Me: What burden?

Him: You are a beautiful lady, but rude sometimes , I don't blame you kodwa. If my Father would sell me for.....no no no wait...Yazi people can pretend...I was there that night I saw everything.

Me: What night?

The queen mother walked in , because Loyiso was making a noise and Lutha woke up.

Her: Lwando!

Him: Whoa! The mother of nations is here. Tell her , Limise is waiting. Tell her , she deserve to know.

Her: Have you been drinking Lwando?

Him: Stop calling me Lwando , my mother alone called me by that name. Tell her what happened that night...she deserve to know. I can't pretend anymore, I love her so much , I can't continue with this

Her: You drunk Lwando! I'm not gonna tolerate this madness. I'm gonna call your father.

Me: What is going on ?

Her: I want to have a word with my son can you please excuse us. She insisted I must go out.

I went out, I heard them arguing.

"I love her, I can't do this to her. So bonani manithini, I will tell her the truth."

Said Loyiso's voice

"Then forget about the deal. We will take everything from you"

Said the queen

I stood by the door and listened

Him: So be it, I don't care!

She started talking in a soft voice, I couldn't hear her

Loyiso: Mxxm leave me alone

I could hear was whispers then there was silence.

Then I quickly went to the kitchen as I heard footsteps heading to the door.

I heard the other room's door slamming. I went back to the bedroom, Lutha was sleeping ob my arms. Loyiso betipile with his shirt unbuttoned.

I placed Lutha down and undressed Loyiso, then covered him.

The next morning...

A bold knock woke us up the following morning.

Me: Who is it?

I asked lifting my head up

Knocker: Loyiso!

It was my father's voice , I just got irritated.

The door opened, isn't that rudeness? And what are they doing here at this time?

Him: Onika your mother wants to speak to you

Me: I don't have a mother

Her: Don't talk to me in that manner, because I will skin you alive.

Me:...

I was scared of him

Loyiso: Tata!

Him: Onika go help at the kitchen!

I angrily stood up and went the kitchen leaving my baby behind.

My mother was chatting with the queen looking serious at the Identity. I could tell they were talking about something serious.

Queen :Morning princess

Me: Morning

And I passed them

Mom: Do you hate me that much?

Me:...

Later on...

Loyiso and Dad joined us , Loyiso looked down.

Loyiso: Limise

Me: My love

I bowed

Him:I'm sorry about yesterday

Me: Why are my parents here?

Him: I sinned you

Me: Sinned me?

Him: Ziyanda is pregnant with my baby...that's what I hiding from you

Me: Is that all?

Him: Yes , we were afraid to tell you.

I knew he was lying because that was not adding up.

Me: What happened that night?

Dad: That's the night he slept with her

Me: Haibo

Dad: Don't worry my daughter everything will be fine. You will just support the baby, she won't bother you.

Me: Loyiso said he was there that night and saw everything.

Dad: He slept with her

I was really pissed because they hiding something from me and this story of them was not adding

Me: Utheni ungu Mc (What are you a Mc) ? Can't he speak for himself.

Ndava ngedlwabevu lempama (He gave me a hot slap) phakathi kwamehlo ndabona nkungu (across my face and had a blur vision)

Loyiso: If you touch her again...I promise

Dad: Promise what?

Loyiso:...

Dad: So Onika that what he wanted to tell you I hope you forgive him.

To be continued...

It's short sorry family

Insert 89

I may be young but I'm not stupid. The story was not adding up, Am I a toddler?

I was just pissed of, I hated the fact that they were lying in my face.

Me: Whatever!

Dad: Uhm...Luthando have to go and stay with your sister.

Me: Why?

Him: Since she is struggling to have a baby, Luthando's presence will make her forget about many things.

Me: I also need my baby

Him: You should focus on giving the prince an heir.

Me: I'm not ready

Him: It's not a matter of you ready or not. IT'S A MUST!

Me: Why you doing this to me?

Him: Because I'm building you a bright future.

Me: But I'm not happy

Him: You will be trust me.

Me: This is unfair

Him: Baby let's go

Me: I'm leaving, I rather stay in the street's

Him: Dare!

Loyiso held my arm tightly as a sign I must shut up.

Me: Mxxm

Dad: If you know what's good for you and your baby ,you will stay.

I didn't answer, Mom was looking down.

Mom: Let's go honey

They said their goodbyes and left.

Everything felt like a dream, I never in my life imagined my life like this. I couldn't believe my own parents would do this to me, why are they so cruel? What are they hiding?

Few days later...

It was a new week , tuesday morning.

The sun was blazing outside and the birds were singing, It was a beautiful day.

The queen was leaving, she was going back to the village.

I woke up early that day to do the laundry and spring clean the house, since I had nowhere to go.

The queen came to me as I was hanging the first load at the back yard.

"Limi" she called

Me: Ma?

I said turning around

Her: I'm leaving now please take care of my son

Me:...

Her: Please give us a son

Me: You people are unbelievable

Her: If you want what is best for you , you will obey

Me: if don't obey?

Her: Mark my words, if you don't obey there will be great consequences.

Me: ...

Her: So be a good girl and do as you told.

She said fixing my shirt and left. I continued hanging the laundry in anger.

Few hours later...

I was alone in the house with my son , the queen was gone and Loyiso was at work.

This was the right time to disappear, I packed Lutha's clothes and changed to a simple dress.

I placed lutha on my back, took the little money that was in the house and left.

Ndamisa jikeleza (I stopped a cab) I went to Njoli and took a taxi that was going to East London.

I waited for the taxi to get full, I was restless as I was sitting there as if they can see me.

The taxi finally took off, I took a deep breath as we were out of P.E.

We arrived in East London, I didn't have key's to Phakamani's house. I went straight to prison, Phakamani refused to see me, I begged and begged but they threw me out like a dog because I was nagging causing a scene.

I left and took a taxi to Killers house, I knew I would find Sondezwa there.

I pressed the bell as was standing by the gate with my baby on baby. She came to the gate modeling

Her: How can I help you?

Me: I need your help

Her: What help?

Me: I need a place to stay

Her: Does this house look like a welfare?

Me: Please I don't have anywhere else to go

Her: Why don't you go and stay at your man's house? ...wait..I forgot you betrayed him!

Me: I didn't

Her: If you didn't why are you not at his house?

Me: Please let me in

I have never begged like this before, I had no choice, I had to put my pride aside. I slowly went on my knees and begged her. She laughed at me , making a fool of me.

Her: Try next door, I won't help you. You betrayed PK and I will not let you in this house. Now go away!

Me: Please

Her: Go!

She said then left me in that begging position.

I slowly stood up and left, I didn't know where I was going.

I called one of my friends from school and I had many missed calls from Loyiso and Dad.

She didn't answer, I walked up and down, didn't know where I was going.

I received a message from Loyiso "Limise please come home, You making matters worse, they will find you. Please come home for your own good"

I ignored it and kept on walking, Lutha was crying, I bought something for us to eat. I sat at a quiet spot and fed him.

Zanele called back

Me: Hello

Her: I saw your missed call Chomi

Me: Where are you?

Her: I'm at home why?

Me: I'm here i town and homeless

Her: What is going on?

Me: Please come fetct me I will explain

Her: My parents are away and don't have transport but wait I will call my boyfriend.

Me: Please

Her: I will get back to you neh?

Me: Okay

She hung up, it was cold . My covered my baby with the towel and tried to keep her warm because it was getting cold. People were looking at me as they were passing, I was even scared something might happen to us.

Few minutes later...

Zanele called and told me that they were on their way, I told them were I was.

They arrived after something like an hour or less.

She got out of the car and came to me

Her: Are you okay?

She took Lutha but he cried, I took him back.

We went to the car, we got in and he drove.

Her: What is going on?

Me: I'm homeless and have no one.

Her: What yoy talking about?

Me: My parents sold me

Her: How?

I began to cry , I couldn't help myself.

Her: It's fine, please don't cry

We arrived at her parents house,I was now calm.

We walked in, she showed me the spare room and I rested there.

She gave us food and we ate, we just dozed off later on.

The following morning...

It was around 11pm, I just finished bathing Lutha.

Someone knocked at the door, I went to attend since Zanele was in the bathroom.

It was was Two guy's I didn't know

Me: Molweni (Hello)

Guy1: We here to fetch you

Me: Fetch me?

The other one walked in and grabbed Lutha.

Me: What is going on her?

Him: Do you want to walk on your own or should I help you?

Me: I'm not going anywhere!

He grabbed me as well and put me in the car, I was yelling like crazy.

They started the car and left in a high speed.

This was crazy , I never seen something like this. It was like a movie.

We arrived at P.E later on, they dropped me at Loyiso's house but left with my baby.

"My baby!" I cried and yelling by the gate.

Loyiso took me inside

Me: I want my baby !

Him: Why are you so stubborn? You only making matters worse

Me: How did they found us?

Him: Calm down Limise please

Me: Where are they taking my baby?

Him: To your sister, he will stay there

Me: That's unfair

Him: You not gonna get him back

Me: That's my baby

Him: I know, please calm down

Me: Calm down?

Him: You making matters worse, I don't you to make them angry....they will kill you

Me: I'm gonna take them to court

Him: Don't even try...Listen here Limi if you want to beat them, play their game

Me: What you talking about?

Him: Win their trust

Me: What trust?

Him: Do as they say

Me: Never!!!

Him: Just think about it!

Then he left me there standing

To be continued...

Insert 90

My life was a mess and I was stucked. I had questions without answers, my world was dark and my heart was in pieces.

I wish I was never born, Reputation is a deceiver, you can think people are holy, happy, good and full of life but that is just for the public. Reputation is what people think you are when they see you but little do they know that there is Character.

I hated my family with passion and wanted them to pay for what they did to me. My heart was heavy, full of pain and bitterness. I never been bitter like this and never hated this way.

My blood was boiling, my heart was beating fast.

How could take my son away? I even hated PK for abandoning me when I needed him. He promised to protect me but never did.

Tears were automatically flowing, I felt Loyiso's warm hand wrapping around my waist.

Him: Everything will be okay I promise

He whispered on my ear ,holding me tight

Him: Just do as I tell you, allow me to love you

I broke from his embrace, he held me closer.

He looked me deep into the eyes.

Him: I love you, I really do

I just stared at him with no words to utter, It was like he put a spell on me.

I felt his lips on mine, I didnt stop him.

He kissed me , I responded.

My body acted abnormal, my legs failed me.

He lifted me up and took me to the bedroom. He softly placed me on top of the bed and followed with a kiss.

I don't know what going on but I didnt stop him.

He removed my dress and my underwear.

He got between my legs and started to feel my thighs kissing me softly. This was wrong but it felt good in a way.

He undressed , I felt his manhood moving between my thighs.

He broke the kiss and look me in the eye.

Me: What?

Him: Are you sure about this?

I pulled him closer and kissed him, he responded.

I felt his manhood entering without warning.

I moaned out of pain , it was pain hayi nje kancinci.

Him: I'm sorry

He tried to be gentle, I held tightly on his smooth skin and moaned out of pleasure.

He had a big penis but he knew how to use it.

He moved back and forth, he tucked his tongue on my ear .

Me: Hayi kaloku sufaka ilwini endlebeni (Don't tuck your tongue on my ear)

Him: Sorry

He moved faster and faster holding me tight and tighter.

He reached the point of climax, he was breathing heavily groaning.

He lay next to me and looked at the ceiling . We laid next to each other in silence.

He cleared his troat

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah

I was not really okay . How can I be so careless and irresponsible? I slept with a guy without protection, what if he is sick?

Him: What's on your mind?

Me: We didn't use protection

Him: Everything happened so fast...I'm sorry

Me: Do you know your status?

Him: Last time I checked I was negative and I test about two months ago. What about you?

Me: Last time I tested was after giving birth to Lutha.

Him: Negative?

Me: Yes

Him: So where do we stand?

Me: I don't know

Him: I love you

Me: Please let's not talk about this

Him: Let's try to make this marriage work

I got up and reached for dress

Him: Limi

Me: Please leave me alone

Him: We just had sex

Me: So?

Him: Didn't it mean anything to you?

Me: People have sex all the time

Him: You not for real

I just walked out and went to take a shower. My vagina was burning,
I just cried as I was washing my body. I kinda regret what I just did, but it felt good.

After showering, I went back to the bedroom wrapped in a towel.

Loyiso was still in that position, I just applied lotion then wore my pyjamas.

"What kind of relationship did you have with your mother? "

Asked Loyiso as I was about to join him in bed.

Me: Normal relationship

Him: Okay

Me: Why you ask?

Him: I'm just asking

Me: Okay

I looked the opposite way , the moment I closed my eyes I started thinking about my baby and tears started flowing. I missed him, how could they do this to me?

I slowly fell sleep as minutes went by.

Few months later...

It was already new year. It was early May. I had graduated on March and was done with school.

I was now officially married Mrs Langa, we had a big white wedding.

I learned to love him and I was in love.

Well....

It was Monday evening, I was busy cooking.

Loyiso was coming from work , he looked very tired.

Me: Rough day?

Him: You have no idea

He said as he went to the lounge

Me: Tea?

Him: Juice will be fine

I poured him a glass of juice and served him.

Me: When is ziyanda giving birth?

Him: Ziyanda???

Me: Yes

He kept quiete for a moment and I was staring at him.

Him: Oh, she lost the baby. I forgot to tell you

Me: You forgot to tell me ? Loyiso what are you hiding from me?

Him: Limi please calm down

Me: I want the truth Loyiso. If you really love me then you will tell me the truth.

Him: There is nothing to tell

Me: What happend that night?

Him: Not this again baby

Me: And I want the truth

He sighed , covering his face with both hands and then removed them.

Me: Please don't lie

Him: Promise me one thing

Me: What?

Him: You won't go and confront them

Me: Out with it

Him: They are not your biological parents but they are still your family

My face heated

Me: What do you mean?

Him: Your parents were..

His phone rang and had to answer it.

I was so impatient as he was talking on the phone, I was heating.

He hung up and had to hurry somewhere.

Me: You can't leave me hanging

Him: Sorry baby, will talk when I get back.

He went out and left ,I was just sitting there , with million questions and was angry.

To be continued....

#Mini

Insert 91

Some people say you are a good shepard , some say you are the light of the world. But Lord why you watching me suffer like this? Why do you let this bitterness in my heart?

Are you not bigger than what people say you are? Is your name not the greatest ?Why you allowing this?

My heart is full of evil and bitterness...

I said as I was praying, kneeling on top of the bed, my heart was heavy, tears were falling. I wanted to call them and confront them, but I couldn't for the sake of Loyiso.

I just continued crying till I couldn't say any further words, I laid flat on my tummy.

Loyiso came back later on, around 10pm.

I was now looking at the ceiling, laying on my back.

Him: Are you still up?

He asked as he was removing his shoes.

Me: What did you expect?

He finished undressing and joined me in bed.

Me: Continue, where you left

I said still looking at the ceiling

Him: Are you sure you strong enough?

Me: Just tell me Loyiso!

I angrily shouted

Him: Okay, Okay...

Me: I'm Listening

Him: Well few years ago...It was still in the 80's . Your father, biological rather, My father and Pastor Silo were Friends. They did everything together, they were so close and they would do anything for each other.

I was 10 years old that time and my mother was still alive. Your biological parents were so wealthy they had cows, sheeps, Pigs, Chickens, everything and even a big house in the village. They moved to P.e and started a new life there, Your father worked at a big company and earned big money.

Everytime he came to the village he would bring many things from the City, Your father and Pastor Silo were blood brothers , same mother and same father.

Me: What happened?

Your mother got sick , and passed away that year, you were still 2years old.

You went to leave with your granny but pastor and his wife took you to their home.

I don't know what went wrong between the Three friend's. I remember it was still winter and it was a cold and rainy day.

My mother went to visit her parents, I didn't want to go with her , so I stayed behind.

Your father , the King and Pastor Silo were sitting at a private room in the Royal house, they were drinking.

Me: And then?

Him: I was restless and couldn't sleep that night. It was around 11pm, I was walking to the kichen to get some milk , that is what my mother used to give me when I woke up at night. I didn't have fear, I didn't know I would see what I saw.

I heard people arguing, I moved back, your father was angry , " This is abomination, I will not sit back and watch you destroy this village with your wicked ways, This is wrong!"

As he was about to exit, Pastor Silo killed his own brother .

He fell on the ground, I saw how blood was coming out of his mouth.

"You will never find peace" That was his last words.

I just stood there and couldn't move my body, how could they do this to uncle Sizwe?

The Queen walked and was yelling at them.

I softly went to my room, I was scared they will kill me too.

Tears were flowing uncontrollably

Me: Then what happened?

Him: When I woke up the next morning, the body was gone. I don't know where they took him or what happened with his body.

I just went to my father and Said "I hate you"

He was confused and didn't know what I was on about and I didn't know where I got the guts to speak to the king in that manner.

I told my mother about what happened , few days later my mother disappeared and they found her body few month later.

I'm sure she confronted them and they killed her.

Me: God will punish them

Him: They will burn in hell

Me: What deal did you make with them and please don't lie.

Him: Well I confronted them 4 years back . They said they will kill me if I ever reveal this secret , they promised me power, wealth and the hot seat.

Me: And you accepted?

Him: Yes, I was desperate

Me: You are just like them

Him: I wanted to bring them down while they think I fear them. I wanted them to beg for their life as I watch them die a slow painful Dead.

Me: What made you desperate?

Him: I wanted power

Me: What is this marriage about?

Him: They told me earlier last year that I will marry you, have a male child with you then give the baby to them the same day he is born then buy a doctor to say that the baby died.

Me: What?

Him: Then I can divorce you and carry on with my life

Me: Just like that?

Him: Yes, but I took this at my advantage. I wanted them to see the baby but not get it

Me: So you dont love me?

Him: I didn't at first , I was just desperate for revenge, I wanted power. But I fell in love with you and thought that will be a sweet revenge.

Me: How did you sleep at night?

Him: What do you mean?

Me: After what you saw?

Him: I don't wanna lie, I had nightmares and that is why I told my mother.

Me: Why didn't you go to the police?

Him: Things were different that time

Me:...

Him: Baby

Me: Do you really love me?

Him: More than anything, I would do anything for you

Me:...

Him: Please don't do anything stupid, they may kill you, they don't play games.

Me: I'm not scared of them

Him: Look what they did to Phakamani , they wanted him dead but couldn't. So they sent him to jail with the help of your brother/cousin brother whatever he is to you

Me: Luvano?

Him: No, Thobela

Me: Thobela? How could he?

Him: He was bitter that time , he wanted PK to pay for what he did to Him.

I just saw blur, and I couldn't breath properly.

"Baby...baby..." I struggled to breath, I held on my chest, it was like I was dying.

I woke up in a hospital bed the following morning.

Loyiso was sitting next to my bed, my body felt weak ,I was even lazy to speak.
My throat was thirsty and my eyes were weak.

"I'm thirsty " I said in a weak , soft tone.

Him: Okay baby

He stood up, and poured me a glass of water then help me to drink it.

I laid back after drinking the water

Me: My body feel weak

Him: You will be fine in few hours time, it's the drug they gave you.

Me: Okay

Him: How you feeling?

Me: Weak

Him: You will be fine

Me: I want to go home

Him: Not now baby

I slowly dosed off

Few days later...

It was a Wednesday afternoon, I was discharged from hospital and was feeling much better but I was now using an inhaler.

Well..

I was ironing Loyiso's shirts , he was at work.

My phone rang and it was Thobela,I didn't want to answer it but if I don't, he will be suspicious.

Me: Hello

Him: Mntase , can I visit you today?

Me: Okay , no problem

Him: I will be there in few minutes time

Me: Okay

Him: Please cook, I'm hungry

Me: Okay

He hung up, I finished what I was doing and started to prepare the meal.

The devil started whispering on my ears . I wanted to poison the food, I wanted to watch him die in front of me.

I searched in the house looking for something dangerous.

I found "Blue death" the white powder for insects.

I opened the pot, I wanted to but my character forbidden me, I didn't have the guts.

I just threw it away and continued cooking.

He came after an hour, he was in a happy mood full of smiles.

He kissed my cheek as he walked inside.

Him: How are you Little sister?

Me: I'm fine

Him: When is your husband coming back?

Me : I don't know

I answered from the kitchen , dishing food for the both of us.

I served him the food

Him: I'm glad you didn't marry that idiot Phakamani .

I was flaming, I just stood up and went to the kitchen.

I just could not face him and I was afraid of what I would do if he continued speaking.

Him: He was not good for you

My hands were shivering, I poured a glass of water and drank , I placed the glass down.

Him: I wish he rot in jail

This guy was testing my patience , The more he talked the angrier I got .

I grabbed a knife that was next to the sink , were I was standing.

He continued talking making me angry. I hold the nife tightly and I walked to the lounge were he was sitting.

To be continued....

Insert 92

I was ready to stab him, I was few centimeters away, I was so close. I was gonna kill him without thinking twice.

I felt someone grabbing my hand and a whisper followed immediately.

"Baby,you going to jail"

He lowered my hand that was had the knife.

I was breathing heavily, my face was heating, my heart was beating fast and my hands were shivering.

He turned me around and kissed my neck.

Him: Act normal

He said with a soft voice

"Get a room!" Said Thobela

Loyiso: We will

Thobela: Siies!!!

Loyiso giggled and walked me to the bedroom and closed the door.

Him: Uphilile kakuhle aphe ntloko? (Are you okay upstairs)

Me: He provoked me

Him: Do you realise what trouble you could have caused?

Me: He is evil

Him: Do you want to go to jail and Join Phakamani?

Me: No

Him:Then why are you acting out of emotions?

Me: I just can't stand him

Him: Do you want to be like them?

Me: Of course not!

I exclaimed

Him: If you continue acting like this then you will be like them

Me: I don't want to be like them

Him: If you don't want to be like them then you have to seat back and let me deal with them.

Me: Seat back?

Him: You gonna get us killed Limise

Me: Why don't we go to the police

Him: And say what ?

Me: Tell them the truth

Him: Tshissaaa...do you have proof na wethu?

Me: No

Him: Now listen to me, we gonna get back to the lounge and act normal.

Me: How?

Him: pull out a fake smile or else you dead

Me: Okay

He placed a soft kiss on my lips

Him: I love you baby, I will get us out in this..

Me: How?

Him: Just sit back and watch

Me: Okay

Him: Just promise me you will behave

I nodded, he pulled me closer

and wrapped his arms around my waist

Him: Can't hear you

Me: Okay

Him: Okay what?

Our faces were close to each other, with his lips ready to kiss me.

Me: I will behave

Him: Promise?

Me: I promise

Him: How about a round ?

He gave me a nasty look

Him: Round yantoni? (What round)

He lowered his hand and touched my vagina

Me: No!

Him: It's time to make Junior

Me: Not now

I yanked myself

Him: Look

He pointed at his manhood that was standing.

Me: You not for real..

He lifted up dress and pushed me against the bed and turned me around, I leaned the edge of the bed with both my hands.

He lowered my pentie until it reached my ankles.

Me: What if he hears my moans?

Him: Wena uzongxolela ntoni? (Why would you make a noise?)

I felt his manhood entering as he was busy replying.

The pleasure was beyond words explanation. I released a slight moan ,my body was feeling warm and responding abnormal.

Him: Should I stop?

I wish I could say "Yes" but the pleasure was just.....

He moved back and forth squeezing my breast.

I moaned louder

Him: Yabonake ndizoyeka! (I will stop)

I kept quiet and enjoyed the pleasure letting out slight moans.

He moved faster and faster , holding me tight.

Him: I love you

He said he was getting weak , causing a huge weigh on my back.

Me: I can't believe we had sex , while someone is in the house

Him: Haisuka (Wherever)

Me: It enjoyed it kodwa

Him: What are you trying to say?

Me: Today was different

Him: So I was not pleasing you before? That hurts

Me: I didn't mean it that way baby

He giggled

Him: I understand, that means you developing deep feelings for me

Me: I guess

He was right, i

Continuation

We cleaned ourselves and went back to the lounge.

"Yhuuu niyayizumana into!" Said Thobela's voice welcoming us to the lounge.

Loyiso: It's non of your business

Him: Couldn't you wait till I left?

Loyiso: As I said it's non of your business, So how have you been S'bali? (In law)

He asked as he took a seat opposite him and I went to the kitchen and dish out for Loyiso.

I came back and served my husband

Thobela: Can I have more?

Me: Okay

I faked a smile as I took his plate and walked to the kitchen.

Hours later...

It was around 8pm, I was coming from the bathroom wrapping a towel.

I walked in the bedroom, Loyiso was busy with his laptop.

I dropped the towel and slowly applied body lotion, seeking attention.

Loyiso was fixing his eyes on what he was doing, he was not looking at me.

I wanted him to make love to me, I really enjoyed earlier and I wanted more.

I finished lotioning my body and went to join him in bed naked.

Me: Baby

Him: Mmm...

He was not even looking at me

Me: I miss you

Him: Okay

He was really not paying attention

Me: Okay???

Him: I miss you too

He said while taking a closer look at the laptop.

Me: Mxxxm

Him: Give me few minutes, I will be with you.

Me: Whatever

I waited for him till I fell asleep

I woke up the following morning ,Loyiso was not next to me.

I yawned as I was stepping out of bed, I lazily went to open the window and curtain. Fresh air filled the room and I made the bed, when I was done, I took out my white dress , bra and pantie to wear then went to the bathroom, brushed my teeth and washed my face. When I was done, I walked to the kitchen and found a note "Sorry baby I had to rush to work and didn't want to wake you up. I will come home late . I love you " I threw it away.

I made myself cereal and then sat in front of the T.v .

I was really bored and it was high time for me to start looking for a job even though Loyiso didn't want me to.

I got really bored as the day started, I took car keys and drove to the Mall.

I bought some new clothes and even changed my hairstyle.

I was not in the mood to cook, so I went to debonairs and ordered pizza.

I took a seat after ordering and waited for my order.

"Onika?"

I lifted my eyes to look at the person, I recognised the face but was not sure who the person was.

Me: ?

I gave him a confused facial expression.

He pull out a chair and took a seat

Him : Don't tell me , you don't recognise me

He said taking off his shades

Me: Your face look familiar

Him: Luvuyo

Me: Luvuyo...Luvuyo...Luvuyo...

I said trying to think were we met before.

Me: PK's cousin brother?

He smiled , he looked so handsome with a sexy smile.

Me: How are you?

I asked with a smile on my face

Him : I'm fine thanks and you?

Me: I'm good ...good

Him: You married?

He asked looking at my ring

Me: Yes

Him: What about Ta PK?

Me: Please let's not talk about it

Him: So who is the lucky guy?

Me: Even if I tell you, you wont know him

Him: Did you guys break up or?

Me: Me and PK?

He nodded

Me: It's complicated

Him: Pray that he doesn't come back or else he will make this City small.

Me: He shut me out not the other way around.

Him: If you say so... So how is Mangaliso?

Me: He is okay

Him: I wish I could meet him, because I never met him before.

Me: You will meet him one day

Him: Can I have your number so that can contact you when I want to meet him?

Me: I don't think it's a good idea , I will tell his granny to call you when he visit her.

Him: I won't call you at night relax

Me: I know but can't give you my number.

Him: Is he abusing you?

Me: Who?

Him: Your husband

He whispered

Me: No...He is too sweet for that, unlike your brother.

Him: You comparing now ? Wow!

He said clapping once, I shouldn't have said that.

Me: I didn't mean it that way

Him: It's cool

After a while...

I received my order then went to the car, I drove straight home.

I arrived at home, it felt so empty and lonely.

I placed the box on top of the counter then walked to the bedroom.

I changed to my night dress and gown then watched an Nigerian movie.

I went to bed later on , it was around 10pm and Loyiso didnt bother to inform me , on top of that his phone was off.

Next morning...

I woke up the following morning, Loyiso was facing the opposite way and he was fast asleep.

I stood up and let him be, I went to the bathroom and did my dialy morning hygiene routine.

When I was done, I went to the kitchen to make breakfast.

As I was crumbling eggs, I felt hands wrapping around my waist , the scent said it all.

Me: Where were you last night?

Him: I'm working on a high profile case, so it demand all my attention.

Me: So you didn't think of informing your wife?

He turned me around to face him

Him: I'm sorry baby, I was so busy and didn't have time to call

Me: So I'm not important to you?

Him: You are important to me, I'm sorry it will not happen again.

Me: It better!!

He placed a soft kiss on my lips

Him : What we having for breakfast?

Me: Crumbled eggs

He kissed my neck

Him: How about this?

He continued kissing me in a seducing manner.

Me: Lo...Loyiso not now

Him: I missed you last night

He switched of the stove and placed me on top of the counter.

Me: Are we gonna do it here?

Him: Uyathanda uthethe kanjani wena(You like to talk), why don't you go with the flow?

He untied my gown, lifted my night dress and removed my pentie.

His manhood was already standing, he got between my thighs and moved me a little closer, I felt his manhood inserting and a moan escape my mouth.

He slowly moved back and forth holding on my waist. I bend a little bit as I was feeling pressure, he released bold groans and I found that sexy.

He moved faster and faster holding me tighter, I moaned louder feeling great pleasure.

"Damn!" he exclaimed, he got weaker and weaker then he stopped.

He kissed my forehead

Him: I love you

Me:I love you too

Him: I'm sorry about last night

Me: It's fine

Him: What about a second round?

Me: Nxilile (You drunk)

He giggled in a charming manner, Him : I'm still inside you

Me: Take it out

Him: Andifuni (I don't want to)

I moved back, he moved forward

Him: What about the sperms?

Me: Lick them off

He pulled a disgusted face

Me: Zezakho nje (It's your)

Him: Ngoku? (So?)

Me: Clean them

He removed his penis and cleaned me with my pentie.

Him: Imbi kodwa lento kodwa imandi. (this thing is ugly but it is enjoyable)

He was looking at my vagina as he was cleaning me.

Me: Ubuzwe ngubani? (Who asked you?)

Him: I'm just saying

Me: Bunganyanzelekanga (Was not necessary)

He giggled

Him: Uphuma ndawoni umntana apha? (Where is the baby coming out?)

Me: At the mouth

Him: You lying

Me: Nyani, I vomited Lutha

Him: Udenza half kodwa (You fooling me)

Me: Haike

Him : Mxxm

I gave him a peck on his lips , he gave me serious look

Me: You handsome kodwa

Him: Go to hell

Me: I love you too

He moved away from me and poured himself water, I jumped down.

Him: Let's go out

Me: Where to?

Him: I don't know

He said gasping

Me: I miss my son , can't we go visit him?

Him: They wont allow you to

Me: What?

Him: Please relax , don't cause drama

Me: Drama???? Drama Loyiso???

Him: You know how this people are

Me: This is unfair

Him: Everything will be okay just trust me.

Me: I hate them!

Him:I know but you have to be strong

Me: Wish that was easy

Him: You will get your son when the time is right okay

I nodded , "I promise" he said pulling me closer to his chest.

Him: I never thought I would love you this much

I smiled , he was holding on my waist.

Him: I just get weak around you, you are my joy and happiness.

Me: Ncoo

Him: I love you and you all I have

Me: I love you too....

Few months later...

It was a Sunday morning, we were preparing for church.

Me: Whats that smell?

Him: What smell?

I came closer to him and it was his cologne.

Me: It doesn't smell nice

My stomach just felt sick

Him: I always use this cologne

Me: Ngqumakho inuka kakubi (I swear it smell horrible)

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I can't stand the smell

I covered my nose

Me: I will wait at the lounge

he just shook his head

Him: In few mouths it will be our 2 years Anniversary

Me: Will talk later can't stand the smell

I walked out the room, we drove to the church later on.

I had to open the windows on our way because the smell was horrible.

Me: Baby please buy a new one

Him: You want me to change my scent?

Me: I really don't like this one now, please change it Mntuwam.

Him: Thats odd

Me: Please love

Him: Okay

To be continued...

Sorry about yesterday

Insert 93

We arrived at home later on after church.

"He is unbelievable you know " I said opening the fridge.

Loyiso: He is full of himself, everything is about him

He replied from the lounge

Me: I even hate the fact that he is my blood

Him: Myeke! (Leave him)

Me: I want to see him pay

Him: God will be the judge

Me: Mxxm if PK was here they would be six feet by now

He didn't respond

Me: PK doesn't ask to many questions

Him: Was it necessary to bring up his name?

Me: Who's name?

Him: PK

Me: I was just saying

Him: So I'm not man enough for you? Me: Didn't say that

Him: I'm sick and tired of that name

Me: Hehake

Him: Have you ever heard me mentioning Ziyanda's name in our conversations?

Me: No

Him: Then why are you?

Me: I'm sorry

Him: Do you really love me?

Me: Of cause

I said walking to the lounge and sat next to him.

Him: But you still love him?

I was not sure , I didn't know if I still love Phakamani or not.

Me: I love you, I want to be with you

Him: Are you sure?

Me: yes

I planted a kiss on his lips then moved back quickly.

Him: What is it?

Me: The smell

Him: My mouth stings?

I shook my head

Me: Cologne

He bowed his head, trying to smell himself

Me: Baby please take a bath and never use it again.

He was offended shame, he went to take a bath.

I prepared lunch meanwhile.

Few weeks later...

It was during the week, Loyiso was preparing for work and I was still in bed experiencing heavy headache.

Loyiso: Are you sure you gonna be okay?

He asked as he was looking TTY through the mirror fixing his tie

Me: I'm gonna be fine

Him: I think you should see a doctor

Me: I will be fine

Him: You not yourself lately, you don't eat, you vomit and the headaches.

Me: ...

Him: I'm talking you to the doctor and I'm not asking you, I'm telling you

Me: It's not like I'm dying

Him: Limise I'm not asking you

Me: Lwando I will be fine

He looked at me

Him: Since when you call me by that name?

Me: Since today

Him: Get up , I won't change my mind even if you call me Jesus

Me: Eshé

I stood up and took a quick shower with plain water because I couldn't stand the smell of the soap.

When I was done, I applied lotion and wore a simple blue dress with white sandals.

Loyiso had already made the bed, we walked to the car.

Him: How is the headache?

Me: Still paining

Him: Okay

We went to see a private doctor, he examined me even took a pregnancy test which was unnecessary.

After a while...

He smiled at both of us

Doc: Congratulations Mr and Mrs Langa , you having a new member in the family

Me: New member?

Doc: You are 10 weeks pregnant

Me: Huh???

Doc: you are pregnant, you are having a baby

Loyiso: I'm gonna be a father?

The doctor nodded

Him: Wow

He was happy, his facial expression said it all.

We drove home later on , he didn't go to work that day.

We arrived home, he opened the door for me and helped me walk in.

Me: Like seriously?

Him: You not gonna cook, clean or do anything until you give birth.

Me: Haibo it's not like I'm sick , I'm just pregnant

Him: You carrying royalty, my princess

Me: Who told you it's a girl?

Him: I just know, I want my first born to be a girl.

He wrapped his arms round my waist touching my stomach from.

Him: Hello princess

Me: She can't hear you

Him: So you also want a girl!

I nodded

Him: I wish I could take out my heart so that you can see the joy in my heart.

I smiled

Him: Enkosi Marhadebe (Thank you)

I just felt safe in his arms and wish he could forever hold me like that.

Him: No one should know about this

Me: What are we going to do?

Him: I don't know but I have to think if something

Me: I won't let them take my baby away.

Him: I want them to see your tummy growing but not get hold of the baby

Me: Won't they take her by force?

Him: I won't allow that, I rather die than let them hurt you or the baby.

Me: What is the plan?

Him: Just watch but it will come with lot of consequences...Are you willing to risk losing everything we own ?

Me: What do you mean?

Him: If we want this baby to live than we have to sacrifice everything we have and be left with nothing.

Me: What?

Him: It's either that or nothing

Me: U don't understand

Him: You will as the time comes

Me: You scaring me

Him: Don't worry we will be in this together okay?

I nodded then he turned me around and kissed me.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

We stayed in each others embrace for a while then we let go.

Him: Let's go to the Mall and buy you sunlight soap for you, I noticed you don't use the soap at the bathroom anymore.

Me Okay

Then we left again and came back later.

Loyiso hired a maid to come work for us, it was a Sotho women, she didn't understand Xhosa, she communicated in English. Her name was Julia. We didn't really needed her services though but Loyiso insisted, I hated the fact that he was treating me like someone who is ill.

He would call often asking if everything is still alright, I just wished I could give birth now.

To be continued...

#Mini

Insert 94

Days turned into weeks and weeks turned to months.

We were still happily married, Loyiso was there for me and he was always by my side. Both family knew about the pregnancy and they were more excited than us which was scary.

Julia was like part of the family, she always had the right words to say every time I came to here for advice.

What hurt the most was the fact that I couldn't see my baby, I would always see him at a distance , he would look at me but not read react, She was used to Thobile now.

Luvano seemed happy at his marriage, he would always post pictures of his family (Lubabalo , Siyolise which is Lumka and himself) They looked in love and happy not as if I'm complaining or anything, I was also happy but I just surprised by the way Luvano handled things. I thought he was gonna fight for me and reject the marriage.

I guess we must always expect the unexpected in life .

I always have a believe that everything in life happens for a reason, It may feel like God has rejected us but he is bringing us closer to our breakthrough.

Well...

It was early November, I was 6 months pregnant. My tummy was huge and it was weird because all this was new to me, The cravings, moods, nauseous and baby movements.

Loyiso would always brush my tummy when we go to sleep and talk to the baby, she would kick and Loyiso would laugh.

I liked the bond though, it made me happy.

"Baby hurry up we late..." Said Loyiso as I was standing in front of the mirror half naked.

Me: I don't have anything to wear , my clothes don't fit

I said while pouting, he walked in the room with car keys in his hand.

Me: I'm not going to church.

Him: Where the dress you were wearing

Me: Yhuyu Lalokhwe? (That dress?)

Him: I'm not leaving you behind

Me: I look ugly, fat and pale

Him: Ingona uzibona ba umbi? Phantse awazibona! (Is it only now you noticing that you ugly? You almost didn't notice it)

Me: Mxxm

Him:: Lumise khawunxibe kudala sabuqelela obubi bakhi

Me: Ndimbi Lwando?(Am I ugly?)

Him: Are you?

Me: I'm not going to church, You saying I'm ugly

Him: Yhuyu ndiyadlala Sthandwa sam , umhle wena yhuuuu!(I'm joking my love you are beautiful.)

Me: Mxxm

We ended up not going to church that Sunday. We spent the whole day in doors.

Few days later...

It was a Monday, Loyiso was at work and I was ordered to stay indoors.

I was sitting in front of the TV watching Nigerian movies.

"Mme" Said Julia's voice disturbing me.

Me: Yes

She came to sit next to me

Her: Ke batle thuso (I want help)

Me: With?

Her: Ke la bokae kajeno?(What day is it today?)

Me: Monday why?

Her: Can you pay me in advance, my mother is sick and I have to go back home for the weekend.

Me: That's not a problem, you can take your time. Family is important

Her: Ke a leboha Mme (Thank you)

Me: No problem, you can take the whole month and come back December

Her: Habaneng? (Why?)

Me: Your mother needs you, do you have children?

Her: Ee, a boy

Me: Okay Wow, don't worry I will pay you even though you didn't work

Her: Ke a leboha , Ke a leboha (Thank you)

Me: It's fine

Later on...

Loyiso came back , he was tired. He took a shower then went to chill at the lounge with a bottle of beer.

Me: How was your day?

Him: You don't waste to know

Then he took a sip and shook his head

Him: Your mother wants you to stay there till you give birth

Me: And you agreed?

Him: As if they gave me a choice, I told them you will go stay there once you 8 months and they agreed

Me: What's the plan

Him: (Sigh)

Me: You gonna allow them to take my baby? Our baby?

Him: I'm not gonna allow that, I was planning something.

Me: You better!

He took another long sip while I stood up and walked to the kitchen.

Later on we went to bed

Me: Baby Julia is leaving this weekend

Him: Where to?

Me: Her mother is sick

Him: When will she be back?

Me: I gave her the whole month off

Him: Who will assist you while she is away

Me: You

Him: I'm at work the whole day and I don't want to take any risk and leave you alone in this house

Me: I'm a grown up woman

Him: You can't be alone

Me: I will be fine

Him: Nenkani kanene (You stubborn I forgot)

Me: I'm not

Him: You are

We chatted until late and we slept.

Days later...

It was Thursday night around 1am.

"Limise ..."

Me: Huh?

I answered on my sleep

"Vuka, we have to go"

The light were off he was shaking me

Me: I'm sleeping

Him: You will sleep at the car

Me: Siyaphi?

Him: Will explain later, we don't have enough time.

He removed the blankets, and ordered me to hurry up.

I was still sleepy as we walked to the car.

We drove to this garage ,I was now awake.

Him: leave your phone in this car , it has a tracker.

Me: What?

Him: Yes

We got out of the car, there was a White BMW parking aside.

We walked to it and I took the front seat, Loyiso took the drivers seat, I was shocked to see Julia.

Me: What is going on here?

Loyiso started the car as Julia passed me a flees blanket.

I took a closer look at the back seat, there was a sleeping baby.

Me: Who is that

Loyiso: Luthando

He was driving faster

Him: We must be out of P.E in the next two hours.

Me: What is going on?

Loyiso: Baby fasten your seatbelt

I did as I was told, Julia handed me a plastic bag to vomit into.

I was just lost , everything was happening fast and the car was in a high speed, it was flying .

I was praying " Lord be with us"

To be continued...

Insert 95

We drove till sunrise, the Loyiso was driving normally now and Lutha was up.

We stopped at a garage , we bought something to eat and went to the ladies.

"We have to go , few ours left"

Me: Where are we going?

Him: Free state

Me: Won't they find us?

Julia: They won't

Me: How sure are you?

Her: They wouldn't even think of searching for you there

Me: I'm scared

Him: I asked my friend to drive that car that has a tracker to Moutfrere and park it same where there

Me: Are you sure , this will work?

Him::Trust me

We drove few hours then arrived at Welkom. It was a beautiful City thought, I looked through the window as we were driving.

Julia: Drive straight

We kept on driving, we were in the townships now.

Her: Turn left

She kept on directing until we stopped at this shack .

Me: Are we gonna live her?

Loyiso: Yes

Then opened his door, tell me I'm dreaming. Am I gonna live at a shack???

Loyiso: Are you not coming out?

He asked leaning at the door, I got out of the car and looked around.

Julia: Lebakeng tlo o tlo nthusa !

She yelled and a young man came to walking to the car, he was 17 years old.

Him: Dumela Ntate , Dumela Mme(Hello sir, hello Madam)

We greeted back and he helped carry the bags.

I took a deep breath as we were walking inside.

It was a two room house with 10% furniture, No bathroom, No shower , No nothing. I wish I could cry. I never imagined myself leaving in a house like this.

We took a seat at green leather Sofas , their condition was bad, it was like they got them from trash

, maybe someone threw them away and they picked them up.

"Lebakeng?" A weak ,tired yelled from the other room.

Julia: Tjhee

Her: O mang? (Who are you?)

Julia: Julia

She walked to the that room and came back with her mother.

Her mother couldn't speak English nor Xhosa, so we were forced to learn the language.

Her: Dumela

She took a seat and sighed

" Hello " We said the same time

Julia: Ke Mr an Mrs Langa

Her: Okay

She explained everything to her and she had no problem with us staying.

Julia: I will ask my brother to come build you a one room shack at the back yard , there is space

Loyiso: Thank you Julia for helping us

Julia: You were good to me and had to return the favor

We smiled and they made us tea in odd cups, we drank while we were talking in between.

I was sleepy and tired so , I took a nap at the single bed that was at the front.

I just dosed off and woke up around 5pm.

At first I frightened when opened my eyes seeing the environment.

I just closed my eyes as I remembered.

Few days later...

We were now leaving at the back yard. The one room was just too small for the three of us plus the unborn baby.

Loyiso bought a new bed, blankets, linens and some groceries.

Luthando got a friend , a little boy from next door.

I was lying on my back gazing at the roof.

Loyiso: I need to get a Job because this money won't last us long

Me: What kind of Job?

Him: Any kind of Job , so that I can you take care of you

Me: You haven't tell me, how did you steal Lutha?

Him: Your sister's husband helped us, he was against this nonsense. He says he knows the pain of losing a child, so it was not gonna be easy raising a child that is taken by force from his biological mother.

Me: Wow

Him: Yes

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too, I can't wait for my princess

He said touching my tummy

Me: The sleepless nights, waking up every two hours. He giggled

Him: Don't worry I will be by your side.

Is this a beginning of new stress free life or is it just the beginning?

To be continued...

#Slip sakwa ABSA

Goodnight family in

Insert 96

A couple of days later...

I was struggling to adjust in that environment. The unpleasant mix of sounds in the early morning made me want to cry, the voices of people passing by at midnight coming from taverns and all the yelling and fighting of drunk neighbors pissed me off. I was used to the suburbs where there was peace.

Well...

It was during the week, It was early morning.

We were sleeping I, My husband and Lutha. It was a rainy and windy day.

The house was so cold, It was only warm under blankets.

The window didn't have s glass on , It was only s frame. The plastic that was covering was making a irritating sound as the wind was forcing.

The bottom of the door was covered with some old cloths that we received from Julia.

Someone knocked at the door harshly, Loyiso lifted up his head.

Him: Who is it?

"Ke nna Julia" Said Julia's mother

He stood up and went to open the door.

I uncovered my head

Her: I'm sorry to wake you up this time

She was dripping

Loyiso: No, it's fine

She was shivering from the cold although she had warm clothed.

Her: My mother is sick and needs transport to get her to the hospital because the ambulance is talking it's time.

Loyiso reached for his pants and jacket.

Him: I will take her

Julia: Thank you

Loyiso: Baby stay in bed I will be back

He said as they walked out in a hurry.

Few hours later...

I was starting to panic, why are they not back yet?

It was now around 10 am, I was busy baking bread from the paraffin stove.

They came back with bad news, I could even tell the minute they walked in, the pale, grinned facial expressions said it all.

I opened the door for them, the rain had stopped , it was only the wind.

I was fixed my eyes on them as they walked in.

Loyiso slowly closed the door, I was still in the same position waiting for feedback.

Loyiso: She didn't make it

I understood what he was saying but I just wanted a repeat in plain English.

Julia: She is dead, my mother is Dead!

I don't know if she was strong or what but she was not crying but she was sad.

Me: You lying

I said in disbelief , my body just heated in second.

Loyiso: Baby calm down

Tears escaped in my eyes, they warmly ran through my cheeks.

I only knew her from a short period of time but I learned a lot from her. She thought me so much, She was like a grandmother to me. She loved me so much and called my unborn baby Lebohang and she said if it's gonna be a girl then it will be Jonathan (Gift from God) . I loved her so much and I didn't want her to leave so soon, why is my life like this?

Why does everyone that I love taken away from me?

I didn't know the reason that time, I was still in the darkness.

Loyiso held me and walked me to bed and I sat down.

Julia: Mom was old, she raised us, played her part and even raised my boy. She is now in heaven resting in peace .

I wish I was that strong.

Few months later...

It was thought without Gogo around, she was missed and no one could fill her space. Julia's brother was just a nag , he didn't want to work all he does is steal and drink.

It was early November, the 11th, 2006.

It was early morning, I was experiencing sharp pain. I ignored them and continued with cleaning the house .

Lutha went to play next door with his friend and Loyiso went to look for work.

When I was done cleaning, I laid down a little because I was not feeling well.

I heard a knock few minutes later and it was Julia.

Me: Come in

Her: Why you sleeping at this hot weather?

Me: I'm not feeling well

She rushed to the bed

Her: Are you sure you not in labor?

Me: I don't think so, it's just sharp pains that fades after few minutes.

Her: I will call the ambulance

Me: I'm fine

I refused to go to the hospital until the pains got worse.

"HOSPITAL!" I yelled after few hours.

The pain was double the pain I was feeling at first.

I stood at the open space in front of the house yelling HOSPITAL.

Julia came running, I was going crazy, it was like my brain is being removed and my water even broke.

I asked Lebakeng to sit on top of my waist so long. I was like the pain was reducing when he sits on my waist.

A kind old man took us to hospital free of charge.

When I arrived at the hospital, I just went to the labor ward and delivered a baby boy.

" It's a boy " Said the nurses, instant of being happy, I was unhappy.

I wanted a girl, Loyiso wanted a girl as well.

What am I gonna do with two boys? I just imagined His face when I tell him it's a boy.

I was so thirsty but the nurses didn't want to give me water.

Me: Just one sip hle

I begged but they refused

Few hours later...

Loyiso arrived with Julia, he walked in like a mad man in the room and hurried to my bed.

I was still breast feeding him, my head was still bowed , I couldn't face him.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: About?

Me: It's a boy

He placed his hand on top of mine

Him: Julia told me

Me: I'm sorry

He lifted my head and looked me in into my eyes

Him: A baby is a baby ...I'm happy that I'm a father.

Me: You not angry?

Him: I'm happy baby, yes I was hoping for a girl but I'm also happy with the boy

I smiled

Him: Did you name him yet?

Me: Jonathan

Him: Moses

"Moses?" we asked looking at him, he giggled

Him: Look, he took us out of P.E to Welkom, in a strange province just like Mose did.

Me: My baby will never be Moses

He giggled

Him: Vuyolwethu (Our joy)

I Smiled

Me: Jonathan Vuyolwethu Langa

Him: Prince Jonathan Vuyolwethu Langa

Me: I sometimes forget that you come from a royal family.

He smiled

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: You complete me, I will never leave you. Dead will do us apart as I promised in front of witnesses.

Me: I love you too

Julia: Enough of that... Can I hold him?

I removed him from my breast, he looked so tiny with his pouted mouth.

Loyiso was even scared to hold him. He held him for few seconds and passed him on .

The following morning...

The doctor came to check on me, it was a light skinned male doctor.

Him: How you feeling today?

Me: Better...

He looked at Vuyo and smiled

Him: He looks so handsome just like his mother.

I smiled

Him: You going home today, is there someone to fetch you?

Me: My husband

Him: Can I give you a lift because I'm going that side.

He said looking at my folder

Me: Okay thank you, how do you know where I stay?

Him: The address in the folder

He smiled then left.

He saved us fuel because we were broke and only had R500 left which would not last us for the entire month.

He took us home and watched till I walked inside the house.

To be continued...

Finale part one

"Mama..Mama.." Yelled Lutha as I walked inside.

Loyiso lifted his head in shock

Me: Molweni

He stood up and and helped me with the bag.

Him: I was on my way...wait how did you get home?

He asked as I was taking a seat on top of the bed .

Me: The doctor from hospital gave me a lift

Him: Gave you a lift...since when do doctors give patients lifts?

He asked with his right eyebrow on high. I just shrugged my shoulders.

Him: Where did he drop you off?

Me: He dropped me here

Him: I wonder what is his attentions...No doctors give lifts...

He said picking up the bath from the floor, going out the door to throw the water away.

Lutha: Baba

Me: Bhuti wakho (It's your brother)

I said as I uncovered Lwethu.

Luthando smiled as I showed him his little brother .

Lutha: Where did you get him from?

Me: From the hospital

Him: Okay

Loyiso walked in and we spent the whole day indoors.

2 Months later...

It was a during the week, early in the morning around 6am.

I just finished bathing Lwethu I was taking him to the clinic for check up.

When I finished with him, I placed him down next to his father,

I used the same water to bath myself.

Loyiso: Are you sure you gonna be okay ?

Me: 100%

I smiled

Him: I can accompany you to the clinic

Me: It's not even that far, I will manage and it's an excise

I said trying to make him feel better, it was not his fault that we were broke, He tried all his best to find a job but he couldn't find a better job. He did piece Job in town that last for a week or a day.

He was trying but he felt like he was failing us.

I was grateful for his efforts at least he doesn't stay home all day doing nothing. He woke up every morning looking for piece jobs and that made proud. We spent most of the money on Lweth , trust me it's not a child to raise a baby when you have nothing.

There was not enough food for all of us that morning, I didn't eat for the sake of them.

Him: You didn't eat

Me: I'm not hungry , I will buy fruit on my way. I still have a R20 left fr the money you gave me.

Him: Are sure?

Me: Yes my husband...you stress to much

I picked Lwethu up and peck his lips. Lutha was still sleeping

Me: There is still rice left from yesterday. You must dish up for both of you when you wake up

He nodded then I went out, I was hungry and didn't know what I'm gonna eat.

I can only had R20 in my wallet and there had to be supper that night.

I was in deep thoughts as I was walking to the clinic.

"Onikayo Langa!" Yelled a familiar voice, I stopped and washed as the car stopped in front of me.

" O ya kae?(Where are you going?)" He asked leaning with his arm at the window.

Me: I'm going to the clinic

Him: Come get in, I will take you

Me: It's not that fine

Him: Come on...I'm no harm

Me: Okay

I got in the car

Me: Thank you

He started the car

Him: You lost weight, his keeping you awake all night?

Me: You have no idea

He giggled

Me: O tswa kae this early? ,definitely you don't stay in this neighborhood

Him: My parents stay here , I like visiting them.

Me: Oh , I thought you have a girlfriend this side

He giggled

Him: No man

Me: Okay

Him: You want it?

Me: What?

Him: The sandwich? You have been watching it for a while
I was so embarrassed, I was really staring at it.

Him: Don't be shy I understand, take it

Me: I don't want it

Him: It's just me and you in the car, I know your situation

Me: What situation

Him: I'm trying to offend you but I know you struggling a little at home

Me: We not

Him: Okay

We drove in awkward silence, he stopped in front of the clinic.

Him: Have a wonderful day

He opened the dashboard and took out his wallet.

Him: Take

I looked at his hand , it was money

Me: Who said I need money?

Him: Do really have to be this stubborn?

Me: I'm not gonna take money from another man, I'm married and I love my husband

Him: Whoa! I'm not asking for anything I'm just helping

Me: Ha Ke batle thuso la hao(I don't want your help

Him: Take it hle

Me:Tjhee (No)

Him: Ha Ke o utlwisisi (I don't understand you) I'm just trying to be nice to you

Me: Habaneng?(Why?)

Him: Why you so stubborn? I have a wife for Christ sake!

Me: Ha Ke na taba! (I don't care) I just leave me alone

Him: Just take this before you faint

He gave me the sandwich and tucked the money inside Lwethu's bag.

Him: I'm have to be at the hospital

Me:Mxxm

I just got out and he drove fast, this doctor is full of himself. I ate the sandwich as I was walking inside , because I was hungry.

Later...

I took a taxi to town and did some shopping and came back with grocery and some baby stuff.

Loyiso was so confused when I got home.

Him: And then? You own a super market now?

Me: Haibo

I said as I placed the plastic bags down

Him: Where did you get the money to buy all this?

Me: A women gave me a lift and someone I revealed our status and she gave me money

Him: So you you go out telling strangers that I can't take care of my family?

He was raising his voice

Me: Calm down baby

Him: calm down?

Me: We need the money baby and there is no food in the House

He sat at the edge of the bed

Him: I'm sorry for yelling at you, I just hate the fact that I'm failing to take care of you.

I sat next to him

Me: You trying your best

Him: My best is not good enough

Me: The Lord will make a plan ,you will get a Job

Him: I'm failing

Me: You are not failing us, you doing your best . We will get through this together.

Lwethu started moaning on my back, I placed him on tip of the bed, Loyiso took him.

Him: Everything will be alright son, I will work hard and find a better job.

Me: Why don't we sell the car, it's not bringing us income

Him: I'm not selling my car never!

Lutha walked in looking pale

Him: I'm hungry

He said searching through the plastic bags. He took out banana and ate.

Two years later...

It was early June 2008, I was working as a Domestic worker at some house in Town. Loyiso was working as a painter.

We didn't earn much but life was much easier. Our shack was much bigger and we bought furniture .

Lutha was attending at a local school and he was into Sotho more than Xhosa and that scared me.

Lwethu was still at crèche, giving us trouble. He was a handful but I loved him kodwa.

He was his fathers version, both my babies didn't look like me.

That is unfair isn't it?

Once evening, I was coming from work, I was very tired . Lebakeng was watching TV with the kids.

Me: Dumela

They greeted back

Lebakeng handed me a letter, I took it an read it.

It was from his mother Julia, She said she was sorry for leaving this way, but she had no choice.

She asked me to take care of his son and hope one day we will forgive her.

She added that u was the only one she trusted.

Wow!! How do I tell Lebakeng? I was disappointed and angry as t her how can she do this to me? To Lebakeng?

To be continued...

Finale part Two

I really don't understand other people. How can they be selfish and careless? How can someone leave her child with a stranger? I mean we are not family and she knows our situation but still she add more responsibility.

I just looked at Lebakeng and handed him the letter.

He got furious after reading the letter , he stood up and went out the door.

I just let him be, because I was still shocked as well.

"Mama..Mama..." Said Lwethu's voice.

I looked at him, he smiled at me, he looked so cute.

Me: Mommy didn't bring anything today.

I searched for a sweet in my back and luckily there was one.

Lutha: Mama I got a star

He stood up and ran to his room , he came back with his school bag.

I took a seat and waited for him to take the book out.

He took it out and showed me

Me: Wow my baby...

Him: The teacher gave me a sweet and said I'm very smart.

Me: come here

I hugged him, Lwethu broke our embrace

Him: Mama wam

He said pouting and got on top of me.

Lutha: She is not your mother alone

Lwethu squeezed me tight with his head on my chest.

After few minutes, I stood up and started cooking while Lutha was doing his home work.

Loyiso walked in looking very tired with a bag on his back.

Him: Molweni

I greeted back , he went to the bedroom.

I boiled water for him to wash then mixed the water in a bath with cold water and went to place the water in the bedroom.

Him: Enkosi

Me: We have a problem

Him: Listening

He said as he put soap in the water and removing his vest.

Me: Julia left

Him: Where too?

U shrugged my shoulders

Me: She left a letter saying we must take care of his son.

Him: What?

I nodded

Him: Are you for real?

Me: Yes, now Lebakeng walked out and I don't know where he is now

Him: Julia is selfish

Me: Say it again

Him: She knows we struggling but still she add other problem.

Me: Now we have three sons

Him: Teenage boy

Me: Hayi Bawo !

I walked out the room and went to attend my pots.

Lebakeng came back around 8 after we finished cooking.

Me: Where you coming from?

Him: I went to visit a friend

Me: Do you know how worried we were?

Loyiso: Easy baby...Lebakeng my boy come sit next to me.

He followed the instructions, I told Lutha to go and sleep and placed Lwethu on my back.

I handed him his plate then washed dishes.

When I was done with the dishes, I went to sleep with my baby while they were still chatting.

Later...

I felt cold hands rubbing me

Me: Loyiso your hands are cold

He started kissing my neck

Me: Not tonight

He continued kissing my neck

Me: Stop it Loyiso

Him: When last did we enjoy ourselves

Me: I'm tired, I'm not in the mood.

Him: Come one Limise, it's been a month since we made love

Me: I'm really tired

Him: What makes you so tired?

Me: I work hard and needs rest

Him: Are you cheating on me?

Me: What????

Him: What do you want me to think? So sex for 30 days???

Me: Come on Loyiso, not tonight

Him: I will not force myself to you.

He turned around and faced the opposite way.

I was really not in the mood, I was really tired.

I woke early the following morning, I made porridge and iron Lutha's uniform and Lebakeng's.

I boiled water for everyone to wash, they washed one by one.

I made Loyiso's lunch together with the kids lunches.

Loyiso left with them and I was left alone, I washed and wore my uniform then left for work leaving the key under the door mat.

Few years later...

It was is early January 2012 , It was Lwethu's first day at grade R and Lutha was doing grade 5.

We drove them to school, Lwethu was excited , he was the first one to open the door when we arrived at the school.

Loyiso: Easy boy

We got out of the school and went to the Principal's office, Lutha went to his friends and waved at us.

Loyiso: Don't go far

Him: Okay tata

We spoke to the principal and we were showed Lwethu's class teacher.

She took us to her class room .

Her: I can see He is excited

Me: He woke up early this morning

We giggled

Teacher: That is good

Loyiso: I have to be in court in 30 minutes time

Oh I forgot yo mention that Loyiso got a proper job . he was back to being a lawyer, I know we were risking when he took the job but it was for the best. We didn't care anymore . We told ourselves that we will deal with our parents when they here. We were tired of living as drop outs and scared of being found.

We came to a decision to start using our qualifications , we couldn't forever work for peanuts while we are graduates and can earn a lot.

I was working still looking for a proper Job. I worked as an assistant at a pharmacy.

Loyiso dropped me at my work then he left for work.

Lebakeng called as I was entering at work.

Me: Hello

He was doing his third year this at Stellenbosch university.

Him: There is no electricity

Me: Oh I forgot to buy electricity... I will buy it now now and send it to you

Him: I have something to tell you

Me: I wonder

He giggled

Him: It's not something bad but will tell you when you get home

Me: Okay, don't forget to take out the meat

Him: Don't worry I will cook

Me: Inkulu lento! (This is big)

He giggled

Him: It is not

Me: Chat later when we get home

Him: Sharp

After work...

Loyiso came to fetch me after work.

Him: Hey

Me: Hey

We shared a kiss

Me: You look tired

Him: Just need rest, some men are evil. How can someone rape a 5 old?

Me: He deserves a life time sentence

Him: And I will make sure of that

We arrived at home later on, when we walked inside.

I saw a lady sitting at the lounge next to Lebakeng, I looked at Loyiso and he shrugged his shoulders.

"Mama!" Yelled Lwethu and came to hug me.

Him: Bhuti kissed her

He whispered, I widened my eyes. He placed s finger on his closed mouth then giggled.

We walked closer and took our seats

Lebakeng: You back already?

We nodded

Him: uhmm...

He said clearing his throat

Him: Mama, Papa...this is Lebo my...my girlfriend.

I really didn't know how to reach, Loyiso was smiling

Loyiso: Okay

I didn't say anything

Lebakeng: Lebo meet my parents Mr and Mrs Langa.

She smiled, she was beautiful though , she was that chubby tips.

Her: Nice to meet you

Loyiso: Same here young lady

She was shy and could look at us.

Lebakeng: She is the one that help me with the cooking.

Lebakeng set the table and we joined, he dish up for out and we ate chatting in between, the food was divine .

"Mama, it was my lucky day today" said Lutha.

Me: What happened?

Him: I passed my test and as we were standing by the gate waiting for daddy. A car stopped and a old man came out and said he is uncle Phakamani, he gave us money and sweets. He said I look like him

I chocked and took a big sip on my juice.

Loyiso: Don't ever take money from strangers.

Him: But he said , he is our uncle and will come visit when the time is right.

To be continued...

Finale part three

Later that night...

"How did he get out of prison and how the hell did he find us?"

I asked as I was removing the pillows on top of the bed.

Loyiso: I don't know

He said unbuttoning his shirt

Me: I told you it was a bed idea revealing our real identity

Him: Calm down baby, I don't think he is any harm

Me: Calm down? PK is gonna kill us

Him: He will never do that

Me: You don't know him!

Him: I know him very well and he would not dare.

Me: Luthando is used to you and this will confuse him

He got under the blankets

Him: Luthando is his son and we can't change that. If he wants to have a relationship with his son, I see no problem with that

I joined him

Me: Why are you so calm?

Him: Why shouldn't I? I don't owe him anything and I'm not the one who sent him to prison

Me: What if he wants us to pick up where we left?

Him: You are married to me now, I will never allow that

Me: You don't know him, he will kill you

Him: That will never happen, come here

He placed me on top of his chest and kissed my forehead.

Him: He won't hurt us if we let him see his son . He just want his son

I nodded, he turned me around and he was on top of me.

Me: The kids...

Him: They won't hear a thing

He kissed my neck

Me: You know Lwethu might walk in here any minute

Him: Lwethu is sleeping with his brother, he won't walk in

He removed my pantie and got between my legs and entered without warning.

A moan escaped my mouth, he moved back and forth causing me to moan uncontrollably.

I felt so much pleasure, his groans made my body weaker.

He moved faster and faster squeezing me tight, we reached our point of climax.

He collapsed on top of me and I listened to his heart beat that was beating fast.

He placed a kiss on my forehead

Him: I will never let anyone take you away from me and is a promise.

I smiled

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He pecked my lips and we stayed in that position for a while then I felt his manhood growing inside me again.

Me: You are a bad boy!

Him: I know

He moved back and forth causing me to moan again.

Following day...

It was around 10am , I was assisting a customer. I finished helping the customer and went to put back the medicine the customer was choosing from.

When I returned to the counter, I heard a familiar voice

"You still look beautiful"

I turned to face the person, it was PK.

I didn't know how to react

Him: I bought you lunch

He placed a takeaway box in front off me.

Me: How did you know I work here?

Him: That is not important

Me: What do you want?

Him: Is it how you welcome your lover?

Me: PK I'm married

Him: Ngoku ndingenaphi mna kulonto? (Where do I fit in?)

Me: It is fine you can see Luthando whenever you want to.

He looked at me in disbelief

Him: You betrayed me Onika, I trusted you

Me: You betrayed me as well, you were not there for me when I needed you the most

Him: Don't you dare put the blame on me. You are the one that went and married another man and on top of that you gave him a child. I can't believe you opened your legs for another man.

He was really angry

Me: It is not my fault that you went to jail

Him: Don't test my patience Onika

Me: I loved you, I visited you . You are the one that pushed me away

Him: Does he fuck you better than me?

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Do you love him?

He gave that scary look that he used to give me when he was gonna hit me.

I swallowed very hard, I was still scared of him even after so many years. He still scared me

Me: Yes

Him: Wow! What about me?

Me: Pha...Phakamani I... I have Moved...moved on

Him: Hayi yi Shit lena undixelela yona(No ,you talking nonsense)

There was a customer that needed assistance

Him: I will come fetch you after work uyeke uthetha iKaka(And stop talking shit) and don't even think of doing stupid or else you will be sorry.

He left after saying those words, I faked a smile and helped the customer.

I tried calling Loyiso but he wouldn't pick up, I tried several times but no luck.

A message followed "Can't take your call, take a taxi home, I will come home late, I love you"

I text back "Phakamani wants to come pick me up after work"

He didn't reply when I tried calling him, his phone sent me straight to voicemail.

As I was on my way home, I found PK waiting for me outside, I just got irritated.

He opened the front door for me

Me: I'm not gonna get in

Him: As if you have a choice

Me: I do

Him: You have grown up , I can see

Me: PK please

Him: Just get in the car, I missed you

He gave me a lustful look

Me: I'm someone's wife

Him: Not for long

I walked closer to the car

Me: My kids are waiting at home

Him: Khona lantwana(That boy is there) ...I'm sure nothing will happen

Me: I'm sorry for what happened, I love Loyiso now

Him: If you ever mention his name again, I swear I will drag his name out of your brain.

Me:...

Him: Now be a good girl and get in the car

I shook my head and folded my arms

Me: I'm sorry for hurting you but we can't be an item now, I'm married and I love my husband

He grabbed me by my waist and hurtfully squeezed my waist

Me: You hurting me Phakamani

Him: I was there for you when your family abandoned you. I fed you, I paid for your fees and I even let you stay in my house

Me: You pushed me away Phakamani , I loved you. I needed you, I need you to say you gonna make a plan, I needed you more than ever but no you pushed me into his arms , you forced me to fall in love with him.

He hurt me more

Him: I forgive you, now let's start a new page. Me, you and Mangaliso.

Tears were flowing through my cheeks.

He wiped then with one hand

Him: Or else I will kill anyone that stand in our way. I'm pretty sure you don't want me to kill innocent souls

I shook my head

Me: Please don't do this

Him: People are watching , let's get in the car

He held me tighter causing more pain. We got in the car and drove away

Me: Where are you taking me?

Him: Somewhere peaceful, where we can enjoy ourselves.

Me: Please don't hurt my family

Him: All depends on you, just divorce him

Me: I can't

Him: Then you leave me no choice because I will never share you with another man.

He turned on the music and started moving.

I took out my phone, he grabbed it and threw it out of the window then continued dancing.

Me: Please , I can't abandon my son, Lwethu still needs me

Him: Uthini? (What?) I can't hear you

He stopped at this hotel

Him: Chill baby

We got out of the car and walked to his room.

Him: I missed you yazi

Me: Why am I here?

I asked standing by the door

Him: What do you mean?

He walked closer to me and tried to kiss my neck.

Me: Don't touch me

Him: Why?

Me: PK please don't do this

Him: Why you always stubborn?

Me: Please take me home

Him: Which home? You belong with me.

I turned around to open the door

Him: Don't even think about it

I turned around, When I saw the gun, my body started shivering

Him: If you dare step out of that door you will be sorry

I swallowed very hard looking at the gun

Him: Now lock the door and hand me the key

I did as he said

Him: Why undenza umntu ombi(Why you make me a bad guy) ? I hate doing this to you but you like testing my patience.

Tears rolled

Me: Please Phakamani

Him: Sukhala kaloku Baby(Don't cry)

He wiped my tears and leaned with His forehead against my forehead

Him: I love you Onika and will never let anyone take you away from me. I'm sorry for putting you through this

He kissed my lips, I had no choice but to respond.

He slowly removed my cloths, I tensed my body

Me: Phakamani please don't do this ndakucela

Him: I will never let anyone take you away from me uyandiva?

He pushed me on top of the bed

Him: Baby let's enjoy this like we used to

Me: I'm begging you.

He pointed me with the gun again

Him: Say you love me

Me: Ndiyakucela

Him: Itsho! (Say it)

The gun was placed on my head

Me: I...I love..love you

Him: I love you too

He removed my pants and pantie he got in between my legs

I just closed my eyes with tears escaping my eyes.

I felt his manhood entering

Him: Damn...

He moved back and forth groaning, tears filled my face.

Him: I love you baby

I didn't feel any pleasure, my body was just moving as he was forcing it to .

I looked at the ceiling , thinking about my children and husband.

To be continued...

Insert finale

My body started moving faster as his pace increased. He held me tighter and widen my legs further apart.

" Damn Onika.....shit!" He exclaimed as he was reaching his point of climax, planting several kisses around my neck.

After he released, he laid on top of me breathing heavily.

I just closed my eyes as more tears flowed automatically.

His heart was beating fast against my chest.

After a long pause, he slowly removed his manhood followed by his liquid sliding to the white cover , leaving my vagina feeling sticky by his liquid.

Him: That was good , I missed you. You still have the taste .

He said as he was walking to the bathroom, I laid there like a roasted chicken ready to be served .

He came back within second and hand me a towel to clean myself .

Me: I hate you

He raised his left eyebrow as he was walking closer to the bed, he still had the gun on his hand.

Him: You betrayed me Onika, you got pregnant for another man

His facial expression caused my body to shiver a little

Me: As if you gave me a choice! You rejected me when I need you the most. You failed us Phakamani!

A felt a hot slap across my face, a damn hot one.

Me: He never laid a finger on me no matter how angry he is. He is everything you are not, and I will be damned to let you back in my life.

Him: Oh????

He said moving his head backwards in shock.

Me: Yes

Him: I was there for you when your family chased you away, I paid for your fees, I did everything for you. I loved you , I supported you and Mangaliso, I did everything in my powers to put a smile on your face . I was the one who went to beg for your family to give you a second chance, I pleaded in your behalf until they agreed to welcome you back, but I begged them to not tell you that I was the one who begged them

His eyes were teary

Me: The same people you begged are the same people who forced me to marry a man I didn't love , they are also the ones that sent you to jail with the help of their precious son with the name Thobela.

He moved back

Him: What?

Me: Yes

Him: He lied to me...

He said as his anger increased

Me: They are not even my biological parents, He killed my Father and I will never forgive him

Him: Why did you continued with the marriage? Why didn't you run away?

Me: Run away? Where to maybe?

I asked as I was sitting up straight

Him: I have a fucken house in P.E, Cape Town and East London for goodness !!!

He exclaimed as he was using his fingers to count the places .

Me: They would have found me anyway!

Him: Uyaxoka Onika! (You lying)

Me: Ask Loyiso!

Him: Ubhanxekile , andizoyobuza lonto mna! (You crazy, I'm not gonna ask that)

Me: Okay

Then there was silence for few seconds

Him: Yazi wena uyandiqhela Onika (You take me for a shit)

He said breaking the silence

Me: Mxm

Him: Why undenza so Onika? (Why you doing this to me?)

He asked with a teary and sad facial expression .

Me: Why you putting all the blames on me????

Him: You should have waited for me , was that to much to ask?

I stood up and walk closer to him

Me: Waited for you?

I released a fake laugh

Me: What guarantee did I have that you wanted me? Where you not the one that pushed me away when I needed you the most? Where you not the one that told me not to come back? I visited you Phakamani , I loved you....do you know what I went through? I cried day and night , thinking about you. I loved you with my all....but you rejected me when I needed you the most, you chase me away ,you made me feel dirty and cheap....you pushed me to another mans arms , you forced me to love him , because I was longing for love , protection, security and I wanted to belong. My family sold me and you rejected me, Tell me if you were in shoes what would you have done?

I said with tears flowing uncontrollably, my lips were shivering and my face filled with pain sadness.

Him: You betrayed me!

Me: How? Did you give me a solution? What did you do to save me? and you have the guts to claim what you failed to protect!

He pointed me with the gun

Him: Shut up!

Me: You are a coward Phakamani , a Damn selfish bastard !

His facial expression sent shivering to my body.

He grabbed me by the neck and started choking me

Me: Pha-pha

He tighten his grip to the point were I couldn't swallow or release a single word.

He didn't utter a single word , he was on a serious mission, ready to kill me.

My legs got tired from the kicking because he pushed me on top of the bed , and he was kneeling on top of the bed with one knee and the other leg was on the floor for balance.

My heart was beating fast, I tried making a short inner prayer before I die but I couldn't .

I was scared, tear drops escaped and I was feeling pain both physically and emotionally.

Him: Do you know I can end your life this minute???

He said looking me straight in the eyes

I couldn't reply

Him: Give me a reason to spare your life...

My body started to fail me, I was really dying.

He let go of me , I coughed uncontrollably.

As I was focusing on that , he grabbed me by my hair and shoved me to the bathroom

Him: Take a bath the smell is unpleasant

Unpleasant???? Some people are cruel an mean .

Me: I won't do that!

He shoved me further and I hit the bath painfully and he was not playing, he forced me to take a bathing , he watched me till I finished.

Few hours later ...

We were sitting eating ,actually I was staring at the plate.

Him: You want me to force you to eat?

He said focusing on his food, I didn't reply.

Him: Why do I stress myself ,because once you hungry you will eat.

After he finished eating , he stood up and went to the bathroom.

I uses the opportunity and took his phone , I dialed Loyiso's number because I new it by heart.

It rang but no Answer, I tried again , he answered at the second ring.

Him: Hello

Me: Loyiso ,Phakamani -

Ndava ngengqindi emqolo (I felt a punch on my back)

"Bitch!"

The phone fell on the floor, the punch was followed by a kick ndohlaba ngobuso phantsi(and I fell down)

Him: You like it the tough way Neh?

He beat me over and over without a pause, I felt blood on my mouth .

He was killing me, he wanted me dead.

My body felt numb then the lights went off.

I woke up at the sound of two people arguing.

"Mr Poni , I don't want trouble..."

Said a female voice

Pk: I will add R10 000

I slowly open my eyes ,we were at a different environment.

Her: But-

Him: 20?

She sighed

Her: Okay

Him: Good , I will tell you when

She nodded and whispered something to Phakamani.

He turned and looked at me

Her: I will take my leave

He nodded then walked closer to as the lady went out.

Him: I'm sorry baby but nawe awumameli.

He said as he brushed my hair

Him: Look at you know

My body was paining , a moan escaped my mouth as I was trying to move.

Me: Where am I?

Him: Where no one can find you ...

Me: Why you doing this to me? My children need me.

Him: Don't worry Mangaliso is on his way.

Me: Phakamani please, I'm begging you don't do this

Him: We gonna be a happy family Me , You and Mangaliso .

Me: Lwethu still needs me

Him: I will never feed another man's child. He has to be strong

Me: You selfish do you know that?

Him: Not really

Me: I rather die than play happy family with you.

Him: We will see about that

He said with assurance

Me: I'm telling you

Him: Okay

The following day....

It was at the middle of the night, Phakamani took me for a ride not a friendly or romantic one.

We stopped at this place in the middle of nowhere.

It was very dark I couldn't see probably but I saw a car parked few inches away.

He brighten the lights and I saw Lwethu and Loyiso kneeling on the ground wet from head to toe. My baby was crying.

Pk: Choice is yours, their blood are on your hands

Me: Please

Him: Why is it a shock now? Didn't I warn you?

Tears escaped, I begged him

Him: choose

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 1

There were two guys standing next to them, ready to for action.

Me: Please don't do this

Him: Did you think I was going to sit back and watch him take you away from me?

Me: It's not his fault, he didn't force me on anything.

Him: I don't care if he forced or didn't force you

Me: Please don't drag them into this, they all I have please Phakamani

Him: All you have? All you have Onika? What about me? Mangaliso?

His facial expression changed immediately

Me: Phakamani you were gone for years, Were I suppose to wait for someone who chased me away? You as much to blame for this.

Him : I warned you , Didn't I? I keep my promises I don't do threats

Me: Please don't hurt them

Him: Why shouldn't I?

Me: I still need them. You are coward and you heartless you know

Him: You haven't seen anything

He reach for his phone and made a phone call

Me: What you doing?

He ignored me

Me: Phakamani

I exclaimed

Him: Go ahead

Then he drop the call

Me: Go ahead with what?

Him: Just sit back and watch

I saw fire coming from all directions at the ground heading to them, coming from a short distance.

I couldn't hear anything but I saw Loyiso begging for his life , my son was crying.

Me: Phakamani ndakucela (please)

Him: If I can't have you, they won't have you either , fair isn't it?

Me: Okay fine, please spare their life

The fire was getting close

Him: I don't want to

Me: I will divorce him and marry you.....

I was speaking out of emotions

Him: I don't have a guarantee

Me: I promise please

I was panicking and my eyes were fixed at the scene.

Phakamani was chilled enjoying the moment. I couldn't let them die, I didn't have a choice but to sell myself for their lives in return , because he was not bluffing.

Me: I will sign the divorce papers tomorrow if it is possible.

My heart was beating so fast and my body began to release heat

Him: What if he refuse?

Me: Then you can kill him

The fire was now surrounding them ,tears were flowing, my body shivering and acting abnormal .

He released a soft laugh, enjoying every minute of the scene.

Him: Woh!

He clapped once, Then got out of the car laughing and extinguished them. I wanted to get out but didn't want my boy to see me, the other car took them and we left as well.

I was quiet all the way back to the apartment, I was bitter inside and hated his presence. We arrived at the apartment . We arrived 20 minute later, he unlocked and we went in.

Him: Don't even think of something funny, I still have your precious family. One wrong move and they are dead.

He walked to the bedroom, I just stood there , thinking about my family.

“Are you coming or not?” He yelled from the bedroom , I just wanted to take a knife and kill him. I went to join him later .

Two days later....

The divorce papers were ready Loyiso agreed to sign because I begged him but he said he was not gonna give up on us so easily without a fight. I never thought I would be in a position like this in my life, Where I have to sacrifice my love, myself and my marriage for My family. I wouldn't have forgave myself if I let them die in that fire.

Life is unpredictable ,full of disappointments and surprises.

I wish I could allow the soil to swallow me but what change would it make?

Some choice are made out of no choice and you have to live with them even if your heart and soul disagree.

“Baby.... Let's go” Said Phakamani as I was standing in front of the mirror, I took a last look then went to join him at the lounge.

Him: We belong together and you doing the right thing Okay?

He said holding my face and planting a kiss on my forehead.

I didn't reply

Me: Let's go

Him: After you Mrs Poni

I wish I could cry

I lad the way to the car , he unlocked the car from a distance.

I got inside nervous as ever. I couldn't believe this was really happening, PK got inside and we drove to a nearby restaurant. Loyiso was already seated waiting for us, our eyes clutched, I got emotional and my eyes were filled with tears, I hold the tears from falling down.

PK open a seat for me and I sat down.

Him: You should thank her for saving your life

He didn't respond

Him: Do you know what? I like you, we could be good friends but I don't trust you around my women.

Me: When is the lawyer coming?

I said gazing at my wrist watch, few minutes later he arrived.

He greeted and went straight to what he came for. Both papers were signed and I left him with everything and he was talking full custody for Lwethu while Lutha was going to stay with us.

I couldn't believe, I was abandoning my own flesh and blood. He was still my son, I carried him for nine months , I breastfed him. Phakamani didn't want him to come and stay with us, he exclaimed that he will never feed another man's child.

Few days later...

It was Friday we were preparing to go back to P.E and we were getting married the following week.

The women from the other day, walked in after knocking once at the door.

PK: Give her now

She nodded then took out a needle from her bag

Me: What is going on?

Her: It's not gonna be sore, Just close your eyes

Me: What are people gonna do to me?

She pulled a serious face, running out of patience . Pk grabbed me and held me tight, I tried fighting but he was too powerful.

I felt the needle going into my skin,

Me: You are evil

My body reacted to the needle, I felt weak and and saw blurry.

"Will she be fine?" I heard them from far... then I lost it.

My body was weak, I slowly open my eyes.

I was in a car with PK driving.

Him: You up?

I was was feeling thirsty,hungry and my head was paining

Me: I'm thirsty and hungry

He pointed in front of me , I saw a take away box.

Him: It's Rice and Meat

I took the box and ate

Me: How long have a been sleeping?

Him: 6 hours

Me: What?

Him: Relax and eat

Me: That long?

Him: Yeah

He was looking ahead, I took a water bottle that was next to Him and drank first then I ate.

Him: Mnandi? (Nice?)

I nodded

When I was done eating, I started yawning then the lights went off again.

I woke up in an empty bed and the room looked familiar.

I gazed around and remembered , the door swing open.

PK walked in with a tray, he was smiling. I smiled back , he looked so cute.

Me: Are you not working today?

He shook his head and sat next me

Me: Kutheni uske wamhle kangaka?(Why you so handsome?)

He smiled

Him: Even at this age?

Me: You have grown yaziits seems likeNevermind

Lutha walked in running to me

Me: You have grown....

Lutha: Really?

Me: Were you not 2 years just yesterday

He gave me an astonish look

PK: Come eat boy

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 2

Later that day...

We went shopping at Greenacres Mall.

I bought few cloths for myself but Lutha almost bought the entire Mall.

PK bought him a phone as well he was so excited.

After shopping we went to Debonairs and bought two large pizzas, when we received our order, we went straight to the parking.

PK: Did you get everything you wanted?

We nodded

Lutha: Mama when is Lwethu coming back?

Me: Lwethu?

I looked at PK with a confused look

Him: He is leaving in Welkom

Then he changed the Topic as we were entering the car.

Later on...

We went to visit his mother, it felt like I missed many years of my life. People have changed and the world seemed different.

She welcomed us with a warm smile as we walked in.

Her: Tshini akamdala umntana womntanam! (My grandson has grown)

He exclaimed opening her arms to hug him, Lutha seemed confused.

PK: This is your grandmother

He walked closer to his granny for a hug.

PK pulled me by the waist

Him: I love you

I smiled

Me: Love you too

We all walked to the lounge but I turned and went to the kitchen for drinks.

I opened the fridge, took out a bottle of juice then poured in glasses for everyone.

I closed the bottle and put it back in the fridge, I served them then took a seat as well.

Mama: You spending the night?

PK: No...but Mangaliso is

Lutha: No

PK: Mommy and Daddy are working late tonight

Him: Haibo since when?

I looked at PK who was lying, he winked at me.

PK: Since today but don't worry we will come fetch you when we come back

He nodded buying the story, we left after few hours.

Me: Where you taking me?

Him: Home

Me: Why did we leave him behind

Him: I want us to have a US moment and do it everywhere the house.

Me: Phakamani...

He placed his hand on my thigh

Me: You gonna cause an accident Mr Poni

Him: Can't control myself

Me: hold your horses my brother

He chuckled and increased the speed, the car was flying.

Me: Phakamani!

Him: I love you too!

We arrived at his apartment at Dwesi. I unlocked the house while he was locking the car.

I felt his arms around my waist as I was taking the second step inside.

He kisses my neck and and place his hands on my breast.

He removed my dress angrily and pushed me to the door.

He kisses me again while he locked the door, He was so hungry for me , breathing heavily . He lowered my underwear and turned me around to face the door, both my hand held on the door for balance.

He unhooked my bra then squeezed my breast with one hand, while his other hand was busy removing his pants.

His touch sent sensations all over my body. He entered without warning, a loud moan escaped my mouth.

He moved back and forth, I moaned out of pleasure.

" I love you! "

I exclaimed talking out of emotions, I swear it felt so good.

Him: I love you too

He moved faster and faster holding me tight. I just wish I could scream his name, the emotions were taking over, It was like I was losing my mind the feeling was beyond human explanation.

We reached our point of climax , the pace decreased as our body become weaker.

His heart was beating fast against my back, we stayed in that position for few seconds then he pulled out.

"Damn that was good!" He said walking to the bathroom.

I picked up my underwear and wiped the liquid then picked up the rest of the cloths.

"Need a towel? "

I turned to face him

Me: I'm gonna take a shower

Him: Cool, can I join you?

He gave me a nasty look

Me: No thanks

He gave me a puppy look

Me: Try harder!

I exclaimed as I walked inside the bathroom, I place the cloths inside the washing basket then took a quick shower.

After a while...

" Just do what I told you... No one mess with me and get away with it.... I don't care..."

He stopped talking immediately as I walked in.

Him: Have to go....Do not forget the instructions...sure!

He placed the phone down then looked at me with a smile.

Him: You done

Me: Who was that?

Him: Killer

Me: What's going on

Him: Nothing to worry about

He said walking closer to me, he pulled me by the waist.

Him: How about a second round?

Me: Don't think so

Him: Are you sure?

I nodded

He kissed my neck

Him: Sure sure?

I nodded, He removed my towel and squeezed my breast. He lowered his hand to my vagina where he rubbed with his index finger.

A moan escaped unexpected, he giggled and pecked my lips.

He moved back

Him: What are we having for supper?

Me: What?

He can't do this to me

Him: I thought you didn't want a second round

I walked to Him and lowered his boxer and gave him a blow Job.

He groaned out pleasure, holding on my head speaking in tongues as if he was praying for me.

He quickly grabbed me and placed me on top of the bed, I wrapped my legs around his waist as he entered without warning. I moaned out of great pleasure.

He moved faster banging me hard as if it was the first and last time.

Few minutes later....

I was laying on top of his chest, we were both breathing heavily.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: The way I love you, I would even kill for you!

I giggled

Him: Really...I will never let anyone come between us.

Me: Ncooo

Him: I have something for you....

Me: What is it?

Him: Close your eyes

Me: Okay

Him: No peeking

Me: Haha Okay

He moved me aside then searched for something.

Him: You can open now

I opened my eyes,

Him: Here I bought it specially for you

it was a red plastic rose

Me: Rose? Is it Valentine's day today?

He giggled

Him: Xhosa women ...

Me: Boom! Out of everything you chose a rose

Him: Yakwazi umtyhafisa umntu vah

I giggled

Me: I'm sorry ke

I took the rose and looked at it

Me: Thank you

Him: Open it

I looked at the rose

Me: Where?

He showed me , I opened it and I was surprised.

Me: Phakamani...

Him: Onikayo Silo, will you marry me?

My jaw dropped from the shock

Him: Baby?

I looked up to Him in excitement

Me: Yes

Him: Mmm?

Me: Yes yes yes

He smiled and helped me put on the ring , it was beautiful, way beautiful than the one he gave me when we were in East London.

Him: Like it?

Me: I love it, it's beautiful

I said with my eyes fixed at the ring on my finger.

Him: Just like you

I smiled

Him: We are getting married this weekend, no need for a big wedding.

Me: No problem , I have to inform my family even though they still mad at me for getting pregnant out of wedlock.

Him: I don't that's a good idea

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He pulled me for a kiss then we made love passionately.

Two weeks later...

I was officially Mrs Poni, everything happened so fast.

I didn't havr a traditional wedding bendingu mfazi wephepha.

My family didn't know about my marriage so that means there was no Lobola.

Well...

It was a Friday afternoon, I was doing grocery at pick n pay .

"Limise..." a female voice yelled

I ignored because that was not my name, so I assume she was not calling me.

I continue with my shopping, the women walked closer.

Her: Limise!

She was looking at me , I gave her a confused facial expression.

Her: Onika...

Me: You know me?

She gave me a hug and I was confused

Her: Where is my brother?

Me: Brother?

Her: Ewe, Loyiso

Me: Who is Loyiso?

Her: Your husband

Me: Oh , his name is Phakamani not Loyiso . He left with his son, only God

My phone rang interrupting us, it was PK

Me: Baby

Him: Don't forget to pay the dish....

Me: Okay

Him: I miss you

Me: I miss you too

Him: When I come back I want...

I waved my hand to the lady as I was heading to the checkouts.

I continued talking on the phone , I paid for my grocery and paid the dish then left the store.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 3

Mini Don't have enough time

Few weeks later...

It was Saturday evening, I was watching Tv with PK and Lutha.

Someone knocked at the door

Me: Expecting someone?

He shook his head looking at the door

Him: You?

I shook mine as well then went to attend.

It was a tall coloured guy wearing shady clothes.

Me: Hello

Him: Hello , Is Bra PK around?

" Who is at the door?" Yelled PK

Me: I don't know but he is looking for you

Him: Let him in

Me: Come in

I said to the guy, he walked in. I closed the door behind him.

"Aweh ma se kind!" He said as they exchange greetings.

Guy: The job is done

A smile formed at his face

PK: Let's go outside

PK followed after the guy.

Minutes later ...

PK walked whistling, he was in a good mood.

" Did I tell you how much I love you?"

I gave him a confused look, I was at the kitchen.

He walked closer too me and pulled me by the waist. He looked straight in too my eyes.

Him: I'm not perfect and I'm not crazy , it's just that I won't let anyone come between us.

Me: Okay?

He pecked a kiss on my lips.

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He gave me a nasty look

Me: No Phakamani...Lutha may walk in here any minute

Him: We have a bedroom

I pushed him away

Him: I'm going to bed , don't keep me waiting.

The following day...

I was coming from the bathroom to the bedroom.

"I don't have time, she's gonna start remembering everything...."

I walked in and he hang up the call

Him: Baby

He said nervously

Me: Are you okay

He nodded awkwardly

Me: Are you sure?

Him: Yes I'm sure

He stood up , and kissed me

Me: Who were you talking with?

Him: A friend

Me: Who will start remembering?

Him: Mmm?

Me: Who will start remembering ?

Him: Mmm...err..it....Mama...My mother

He released a laugh

Him: I took lied to cover for Bulelwa

Me: What did she do?

Him: Nothing you should worry about

Me: Okay

Later on...

PK left with his son going to Motherwell. I was left alone watching Tv.

Someone knocked at the door, I stood up and went to attend.

It was a guy dressed in a back jacket, he looked familiar.

He smiled when he saw me, it was a smile of gladness.

Me: Hello can I help you?

Him: Limise

Me: I'm not Limise

Him: Is he around?

Me: Who? And who are you

Him: What has he done to you?

Me: Excuse me?

Him: Err I'm sorry Mam , I'm looking for Mrs Mazibuko

Me: Mrs Mazibuko??? I'm sorry I don't know such person

Him: Oh I had a delivery for her, I suppose I'm at a wrong house

I gazed at him , he looked familiar very familiar, it's like I have seen him before. As he was about to leave, I stopped him

Me: Have we ever met before?

He turned and looked at me

Him: No

Me: What is your name?

Him: Lwando

That name name, I know that name from somewhere

Me: Where we at the same school?

Him: No

Me: Okay, I'm sorry . Maybe ndakufanisa

He smiled

Him: Everything will be alright, just hang on

He said then left me with question marks.

PK and Lutha came back

Me: My boys are back

Lutha: Mama!!! We bought you ice cream

Me: Mmmm.....

I stood up and went to the kitchen and took a seat at one of the high chairs and ate the ice cream.

PK: Did we take long

Me: More than long

PK: Did you miss us?

Me: No

Him: You lying you did!

I rolled my eyes , like whatever

Two months later...

It was a Monday morning, I had a great headache, almost like a heavy hangover.

PK was sleeping next to me, stood up and searched for pain pills.

Luckily I had a few in my handbag, I walked to the kitchen and poured myself a glass of water then drank the tablets.

I felt hands wrapping around my my waist and warm lips on my neck.

Him: Morning baby

Me: Morning

He turned me around and walked me back to the bedroom.

We made love but didn't enjoy it.

Him: That was good

Me: yeah

I said looking the opposite way

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah

Him: Okay

He stood up , dressed up then walked up.

His phone rang few seconds later, I tried to ignore but it was irritating.

I angrily pick

Me: Hello

The person didn't reply and just hung up.

I looked at the number that was saved as " Luleka"

I check through his phone but found nothing.

Later on...

I was making lunch , PK walked in.

He poured himself a glass of water.

Me: Who is Luleka?

Him: From?

He asked taking a huge gulp

Me: She called this morning

Him: And ?

Me: She didn't say anything

Him: Okay

He placed the glass at the sink

Me: Who is she Phakamani? You better not be cheating on me.

I was angry

Me: Phakamani you too old for that...

Him: Yagula wena (You crazy)

Me: Then who is she?

Him: Why didn't you ask her?

He said walking out

PK can be an asshole!

To be continued....

Season 2

Insert 4

I decided not to cook that night , I just made sandwiches for me and my son.

It was past 7 in the evening and Phakamani was not back yet.

Although I was worried but my ego and pride didn't allow me to call him and ask where he was.

We finished eating then watched what was playing that moment in the television.

My phone vibrated , it was a SMS notification and was from a strange number.

It read as follow " I miss you, I miss everything about you. I will fight for us , just hang in there . I love you "

I tried calling rhe number but it sent me straight to voicemail, I tried again and again but dololo , same thing.

That kept me wondering who that could be and who has that nerve to SMS a married woman?

The more I thought about it the angrier I became.

We went to bed later on and slept after few hours.

As I was starting to dream, I heard a noise of a door opening in a harsh manner.

I open my eyes and listen, I heard footsteps entering and that person was drunk, I could tell by the footsteps.

" Onikayo!"

That was Phakamani's voice , he was drunk.

"Last time I remembered, I had a wife! Now where is my food?"

He heard the pots being opened and closed, he was looking for food.

I could tell by his tone that, he was starting war.

I chose to ignore him, I heard the bedroom door opening and the light went on.

I was furious, boiling out of anger under the blankets.

"Onikayo ndilambile" he walked closer to the bed and uncovered the blankets.

Him: Hey! Get up and make me food I'm hungry

I kept quiet

Him: I'm talking to you

He moved closer to my face, the smell that came from his mouth was unpleasant, it made me want to vomit.

I angrily pushed him away

Me: I'm not a toilet, you hear me?

I emphasised the last three words

Him: Oh you have the nerve to speak back!

He stood up

Him: I'm still the man of this one, you must respect me

Me: You gonna wake Lutha up Phakamani and what picture are you creating for him????

Him: I see.... you think I'm not a better father, you have seen him haven't you?

Me: Seen who?

Him: That he goat !!!

Me: You think I'm cheating? You gotta be kidding Phakamani. You are the one that came home late with informing your wife about your whereabouts! What kind of a husband are you?

I felt two hot slaps both cheek

I held on one cheek

Him: Shut up!!!! Just the hell up!!!!

He said pointing at me with a furious facial expression.

Me: Shame on you Phakamani....

I said in a low tone followed by tears, my vision went blurry.

Him: I saw him, he was here. But he ran when he saw me.

Me: What are you talking about?

He started pacing up and down panicking, he was scaring me.

He grabbed me without warning and shoved me to the wall, my heart started beating fast.

He was acting strange, like a man man.

Him: Did you sleep with him?

Lutha woke up and sat up straight looking at us, that broke my heart.

"Mama!"

Phakamani quickly let me go , I could see the embarrassment in his eyes, he couldn't face Lutha. He stormed out of the room.

I sighed heavily out of fear and relief

Me: Baby go back to sleep, mommy is fine

Him: He was hurting you Mama....

He said crying , walked to the bed and crawled to him one I reached the bed. I pulled him on my chest , hiding my tears

Me: He was not hurting me okay....

I said kissing his head

Him: Then why were you crying?

Me: We were playing Baby, dont worry.... now let us sleep.

I said then started singing a lullaby for him,

Him: I'm not a baby

I giggled

Me: You will always be my baby

Him: Hayi

The following morning...

I woke up early, Lutha was still sleeping.

I went to bathroom and did my morning hygiene routine.

When I was done, I went to the kitchen, Phakamani was sleeping at the couch covered by Lutha's fleece blanket.

I didn't wake him up, I just passed him and went to the kitchen.

I made breakfast, I heard him yawning as I was cracking eggs.

Him: What time is it?

I didn't reply

Him: Baby

I gave him silence treatment

He walked in the kitchen

Him: How did I get home?

I turned around and headed to the stove , the pan was already ontop of the stove with hot cooking oil.

I poured the egg

Him: Haibo ndathetha (I'm speaking)

Lutha walked in

Lutha: You made Mommy cry last night , Daddy didn't do that!

Phakamani looked at me very shocked and embarrassed.

Me: Did you brush your teeth?

Lutha: Err...yes

Me: I can see you not telling the truth

Him: Struuu bob! (Really)

He said crossing his fingers

Me: You not gonna have break fast till you brush your teeth

He showed a puppy face

Phakamani: Go brush your teeth , he said in a bold commanding voice.

He dragged his feet as he was going to the bathroom.

"Did I hurt you?"

He asked immediately Lutha closed the door

Me: Yes and you accused me off cheating ,

He held on his head

Him: I'm sorry I was drunk baby

Me: And that suppose to make things okay?

He move closer and I inched backwards.

Me: Don't come closer to me, he smell horrible

He moved back

Him: I'm sorry

Me: What kind of man hit his wife? Who id this man you saw here yesterday?

Him: Baby look, I was drunk, I don't remember what I said yesterday

Me: Please get out I can't stand your presence.

He looked at me without moving an inch.

Me: I mean it Phakamani....

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Get out of my way

He held me by thr arm as I was forcing my way out.

Him: I was stressed baby, I had to take few shots to calm me down but it happened that I drank more than I was supposed to.

Me: You are irresponsible, abusive and crazy. I wonder what I saw in you!

I said storming out , I went to change and wore a plain blue dress with my slippers.

" Lutha let's go have breakfast at Mugg & bean"

He was excited, he still had his PJ's on.

I took car keys and left with my son. We arrived there, we ordered breakfast.

As we were still waiting , Lutha rushed to the bathroom.

"We met again..." said a male voice and sat next to me.

Me: Lwando right?

Him: Yes

He smiled, there was something about him. His presence made me feel funny.

Me: Delivering something?

He shook his head

Him: No, I'm meeting someone

Me: Okay

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Him: I'm good, but I can see you not fine

I faked a smile

Him: I know you, you can't fool me

I looked at him

Him: As I said you remind me of my wife, I address you the way I used to address her. I'm sorry. I meant I can see beyond that smile that something is bothering you.

I at the direction Lutha went

Him: You with someone ?

Me: My son

Him: Oh okay....

I took out a piece of paper and wrote on it then shoved the paper to me.

Him: That's my number, anytime you need someone to speak to just call me.

He said standing up

Me: Okay

Him: No situation is permanent, just be strong

Me: Thanks

Then he left, I stared at the piece of paper.

"MAM!!!!!"

I snapped out of it

Me: Huh?...

Waiter: Your food

Me: My food...

I looked down

I hit my head

Me: I'm sorry, thank you

Lutha came back

Me: What were you doing in there?

Him: private matter!

I rolled my eyes, he smiled and started eating.

Few weeks later....

I decided to call Lwando, I was nervous.

I didn't know what to say or how to approach him.

I didn't know why it was so hard to speak to him, I didn't understand why I was rehearsing before speaking to Him.

I finally dialed his number and waited for him to answer.

As the phone was ringing, I experienced indescribable sensations.

My heart was beating and I felt the urge to loo.

He answered, my heart started beating faster.

Him: Hello

I got nervous

Him: Hellow!

I swallowed very hard

Me: He...Hello.

Him: Hi

Me: It's Me, Onikayo.....The women you gave your number at M&B

Him: Oh....How are you ?

Me: I'm... I'm good you?

Him: I'm good...is everything alright?

Me: Yes....No....Yes....everything is fine.

Him: Are your sure?

Phakamani walked in

Me: Okay thanks for letting me know , bye!

I hung up

Him: Who was that?

Me: Errr...Insurance people

Him: What do they say?

Me: Selling me insurance

Him: Oh

He went to the bedroom whistling.

I sighed out of relief

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 5

My heart was racing, I sighed heavily then sent Lwando a message, " Please don't call back, my husband is home"

Then I deleted everything, I rested my head on top of the arm rest.

A week later....

It was a Friday night, I was washing dishes. Luthando was watching Tv with his father.

I finished washing the dishes, I went to our bedroom and undressed .

My phone rang, it was a strange number,

I picked up

Me: Hello

Voice: Is he around?

Me: Who?

Voice: It's me Lwando, Is your husband around?

Me: He is downstairs, do you realise it's past 9 in the night?

Him: If it was not urgent I wouldn't have called you

Me: What is it?

Him: Can we meet tomorrow? But don't use your car, I will come fetch you

Me: Why?

Him: 2pm, I will come fetch you by the complex

Me: So I must walk to the complex?

Him : Just do as I say, it's very important. Its a matter of life and dead!

Me: I'm a married woman, I can't just jump-

I noticed I was talking alone, the call has been terminated long ago.

Mxm

I tried calling but he didn't answer, I got furious and threw the phone on top of the bed and angrily removed some of the pillows on top of the bed.

I got under the blanket and browse on Facebook.

Phakamani joined me and I got more furious.

Him: No good night sleep tonight?

I ignored him, he placed his hand on top of my vagina.

Me: Not tonight Phakamani please

He kissed my neck

Me: CAN'T I JUST HAVE PEACE IN THIS HOUSE?

I exclaimed

Him: And then?

Me: It's like every time you see me, you see a roasted chicken, Always want to bite, bite, bite! Hayi sukaaaaa!

I exclaimed walking out of the room, I went to join Lutha at his room and spent the hole night.

The following morning...

I woke up early , did my daily morning hygiene routine then went to prepare breakfast.

Phakamani walked in as I was frying pork sausages.

He headed to the fridge, took out a bottle of cold water.

He opened the cupboard and took out a glass, poured himself some of the cold water.

He did all of that without uttering a single word, when he was done, he headed to the lounge and switched on the Tv.

Luthando joined his father later on, I served them breakfast, and took my plate as well and joined them.

To tell you the truth, Phakamani didn't touch the food as if I cared.

Later that day...

He left with his son going to watch a soccer match at his friends house.

The atmosphere was cleared now, I took a bath and wore a black skinny jean , Black top and blue heel.

I fixed my hair and face, when I was done, I locked the house, got in my car and drove to the complex.

It was almost 2pm, I bought myself something to eat, exactly at 2pm he called and directed me to his car.

I got in and he drove immediately, his presence made me feel....I can't describe or explain the feeling but there was something about him that lighten my mood just with his presence.

We stopped at this apartment

Me: Can you explain what is going on here?

Him: Step out of the car, I want to show you something

Me: Okay

We stepped out of the car and walked inside the yard.

The place looked familiar

Me: This place looks familiar

Him: I know

We walked inside, there was something about this house.

Me: Why are we here?

He took my hand and walked me to the lounge and showed me a wedding picture.

Me: Wait a minute, this is me...and this is....

I looked at him

Him: That's me

I was confused

He showed me another one, I was pregnant on that one . We were at the beach

Him: You were 5 months pregnant

Me: What are you talking about? Do you want to tell me I was married to you?

Him: Yes

Me: How come I can't remember?

Him: I don't know what he did to you.... do you know that your Parents past away???

Me: What????

Him: They were murdered at their home

Tears started to form

Me: No...no...no

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Why did they leave without telling me? They haven't seen Luthando

Him: They have but they didn't have that chance with Lwethu.

Me: Who is Lwethu?

Him: Your son, our son our joy, Vuyolwethu.

Me: I don't have another son

Him: Don't worry when the time is right you will meet him.

He held both my hands, his touch sent sensations all over my body.

Him: I will fight for you with my all.

Me: How come I don't remember

Him: Look at me

I looked in his eyes

Him: Phakamani has done something to make you forget

I yanked my hands

Me: Phakamani loves me and would never do something to hurt me

Him: But he beats you

Me: He doesn't

I defended Phakamani

Him: We both know that he is abusive

Me: He is not!

I stood up

Me: Take me home

He stood up as well and inched closer to me, Our faces were close enough.

Him: I love you

I moved back, he moved closer

Him: I know you can feel the connection but you still under the spell or whatever it is.

He cupped my face

Him: You are my everything, I won't give up on us. Lwethu still needs you.

After saying those words he smashed his lips into mine, I responded.

He held on my waist , I broke the kiss.

Me: I can't do this, I'm married !

He pulled me closer to him, everything happened so fast, clothes were flying in the air, I just felt his manhood entering a moan escaped my mouth.

He moved back and forth, I was feeling great pleasure, I held on his body tightly.

Few minutes later...

He was still on top of me, we were both breathing heavily.

He kissed my forehead

Him: I love you

I didn't respond

Him: I missed this

I felt so ashamed as he was speaking, I'm a married woman for crying out loud.

Where are my values? I felt cheap , let me put it this way I felt like a whore.

Me: Please take me home

Him: But

Me: What kind of a wife am I?

I pushed him off me, I searched for my clothes and dressed up.

Geez, I slept with another man without protection !

I even wanted to cry after dressing up , he held my hands.

Him: Can you please stop !

Me: I want to go home

I was trying to yank my hands but his grip was tight.

Him: Hey...Hey... Listen to me

I looked at him

Him: When you get home act normal, Phakamani is dangerous, he doesn't think twice. Act normal! because I can see this thing he gave you is fading away, you will soon come to your senses. No matter how irritating he gets , pretend to Love him.

Me: I do love him

Him: For now, please Listen , Make him happy, be that sweet wife he wants and do whatever he ask you to do.

Or else he will brain wash you again

Me: I'm not brain washed

Him: When last did you visit your brother Luvano? Do you know he is married with three kids? When last did you visit your sister? Do you know she has twins? Why didn't you know your Parents are no more? Why can't you remember that you were once married to me? Do you know Lebakeng?

I shook my head

Him: See? That man has done something to you? We can get to the route of this only if you play along. Pretend to be that Loving wife .

We walked to the car and he dropped me at the complex.

Him: If you think I'm lying, ask your son, he knows everything, but don't interrogate him.

I was just speechless , I went to my car and drove home.

Phakamani car was parked outside which means he was home.

I checked my phone I had 10 missed calls from him. Trouble!!!!!!!

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 6

Mini

I cautiously closed car door and unlocked the door.

I stood for moment, smelling my top to check if I was not smelling Lwando's cologne.

I don't remember smelling his cologne back there, so he had all of this figured out. He did not applied any perfume or body spray.

I fixed my top once again and cat walked to the house.

I was nervous and my body was shivering.

"Onikayo act normal...." I kept saying to myself as I was approaching the door.

I didn't know if I should smile or be serious when I entered.

I held on the door handle then quickly let go.

I was scared , who am I fooling? He will see through me , he will kill me.

I checked the time it was 15:20, It was not that late, I will say I was at the Mall.

I swallowed the fear and bravely walked in, Lutha and PK turned and looked at me.

Me: Molweni!

I exclaimed

They greeted back, I walked straight to the bathroom.

I took of my underwear and placed it inside the washing basket.

I took a washing towel and cleaned myself by the sink.

I did all that secretly and made sure they would not hear a sound.

When I was done I flushed the toilet to confuse them.

I came out few minutes later.

I went to the bedroom and took a nap, I was scared didn't want to face him.

A while later...

I heard the door slamming, I acted ignored.

" Where are you coming from?"

Me: I was driving around

I said under the blanket

Him: Driving?

He got under blankets

Him: Driving ?

Me: Yes Baby

I turned and faced him

Me: I needed some fresh air

Him: Am I suffocating you?

I smiled

Me: No, you not suffocating me and I will never feel that way.

Him: Tell me where did you go?

Me: I drove to the beach, I missed my family, my mother, my father. I'm sorry baby for not letting you know. I just needed to be alone.

Him: Oh

Me: Can you take me to my father's house?

He cleared his throat

Him: To do what?

Me: I want to make things right with them.

Him: Baby

He scratched his head

Me: What?

Him: Your parents died a month ago

Me: What?

I needed confirmation, so Lwando was right. They are really gone.

Me: And you only telling me this now?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Can you please take me to my brother

Him: Your brother does not leave in P.E anymore , actually your whole family moved . I don't know where they moved to

Me: This can't be happening to me...

He pulled to his chest

Him: You still have me and I will never leave you. Only dead will do us apart, I will never allow anything to come between. Anything that is a threat to this relationship, I will deal with it , either remove it permanently or teach it a lesson.

Few minutes later...

"Baby..."

Me: Mmm?

Him: I found a school for Mangaliso and they willing to take him at this time of the year.

Me: Really? He is gonna be happy

Him: Yes, so he is starting on Monday

Me: Wait a minute... he doesn't have a uniform

Him: I will call the school on Monday and tell them he will start on Tuesday.

Me: Thank you

He smiled

Him: He is my son as well

I planted a kiss on his lips

Me: I love you

Him: I love you too

We shared a short passionate kiss then he broke the kiss.

Him: Do you still remember our first kiss?

I giggled

Me: Oh please

Him: Uzophela nyeke yam

He said imitating my voice

Me: Stop it!

Him: I love seeing blush

Me: Mxxxm

Him: This bed has so many memories

Me: Like

Him: Our first time.. yhooo baby...you were such a crying baby

I giggled

Me: It was sore

Him: "Phakamani...it hurts, please stop"

He was imitating my voice again

Me: You not right shame

Him: But NOW, you begging for more!!!

Me: As if you are not

We talked non stop until Lutha's knock disturbed us.

He walked in after receiving the answer to come in.

Him: So I should sit alone in the lounge?

Me: My poor boy

Him: Tata come watch Tv with me

PK: What's playing?

Lutha: Spider-Man

I giggled

Me: I hope it's cartoons

Lutha: Like seriously Mom? I'm 11 years old

Me: I was still watching cartoons at that age.

Him: Not me ke!

He left with his father and went to the lounge.

I realised a great sigh , I also got out of bed and went to take a proper bath.

When I was done bathing, it was around 6pm.

I made food and served them around 7pm.

They were watching a different one now, which just started, we all ate talking in between.

We told Lutha that he will be starting at school Tuesday and he was excited.

Him: Is there soccer?

PK: Yes my boy they have many activities

Lutha: I want soccer

Father like son

PK: Awulolahla wena (you really my son)

Lutha smiled

Him: I want to be good as you

PK: Don't worry, you will do better than me

Two weeks later...

I was busy preparing supper, I just found out that I was few weeks pregnant.

I finished cooking, my husband was still not back from work.

Lwando walked in together with Lutha, they were laughing .

Me: It's late do you know that?

"Sorry madam"

They said at the same time

Me: The food is ready

Lwando: We will take a bath first , isn't it my boy?

Me: Hurry up

Lwando: Yes Mam!

Someone walked in wearing all black, he came straight to me.

I tried to scream but my voice wouldn't come out.

He came closer to me,

Him: You belong to me , it's this thing in your womb that is causing us trouble!

I tried to fight him, but he was too strong for me.

He took me away, " You are mine forever!"

I woke up, my heart was beating fast and I was breathing heavily.

I realised I was dreaming and went back to sleep.

The following

Phakamani was not next to me, I woke up and walked to the bathroom.

I did my daily hygiene routine then I went to the lounge in search of Phakamani.

He was nowhere to be found, I just sat at the lounge and watched T.v. , actually the TV was watching me.

I scratched my head out of frustration, Was was this happening to me.

I couldn't get him of my mind, I missed him.

Am I falling for another man? What if he is trying to destroy my marriage? What if he is one of PK's Enemies?

How could I believe an outsider?

What if he is on a mission?

THE PICTURES! Oh God! Please help me, who should I believe? Phakamani would never do anything to hurt me.

But it was me on that pictures, What if I really have another son? Where is he? Why can't I remember?

But I loved this Lwando guy, that day, that day! He made me feel complete, I still could feel his touch on my body, Am I crazy or what?

I went to the bedroom and searched for my phone.

I found it and called Lwando, it rang several times before he answered.

Him: Hello

Me: Hello

Then I kept quiet, I didn't know what to say

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I had a dream last night, can we meet?

Him: When?

Me: How?

Him: Now???? Where your husband?

Me: I don't know

Him: Limise, we can't risk being seen together.

Me: Let's meet at the house

Him: Do you still remember the way?

Me: I think so

Him: Okay

Me: Let's meet in 15

Him: Sure

I hung up , I locked the house then drove straight to the apartment.

Lwando's car was already parked outside

I got out of the car and went inside, I found him, paging an family album.

I cleared my throat, he looked at me and signed that I should sit next to him.

Him: He was a year old

He showed me a picture of a baby

Me: Lwethu?

He nodded, he showed other, I was holding him.

He kept paging the album showing me more photo, of the four of us, Him, Me, Lwethu and Lutha.

Me: I'm confused yazi....

Him: You will be fine as time goes, well tell me about the dream.

I told him about the dream

Him: You coming to your senses

Me: I was pregnant

Him: And you gave birth

Me: Where is he? Can I meet him? Maybe I will remember

Him: Are you sure? I can take you to him?

I nodded

Him: Let's go...

We drove to this place, I was welcomed by my brother, he looked old.

He hugged me tight, squeezing me tight and Me: You suffocating m

He let go

Him: I missed you....

Me: Is this really you?

Him: Yes in flesh, your Jerry!

I giggled

Me: Its really you

We walked inside, I saw four children playing, running around.

One of them ran to me excitedly yelling "Mama !"

He looked so cute,

Me: Is it him?

He nodded

Him: Wandishiya wena! (You left me)

I could feel tears forming, What hurt me the most was the fact that I still didn't remember him.

Me: I'm sorry

I knelt in front of him and squeezed him tight without uttering further words.

Him: Uphi uLuthando?

I broke from his embrace

Lwando: Come to daddy

Lwethu: Hayi Mama uzondishiya.. (No Mom is gonna leave)

He said with a sad facial expression , that broke my heart into million pieces.

I couldn't help it, tears just escaped.

Lwando: She will come see you everyday

Lwethu: Mama uzondithatha neh? (Mommy are you here to fetch me?)

Lwando: Lwe-

Lwethu: Tata come help me with my bag, My mother is here to fetch me.

That was too much for me to handle, I stormed out of the house.

I was now crying, I was emotional, my heart was paining, I could feel the pain deep down.

He was excited, He thought I knew him but I didn't.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 7

Mini ntoz

I rushed to the car, I stopped when I reached the car.

I cried, I was hurting deep down. He was happy to see me, He thought I'm his nother.

I don't remember having a son, I don't remember getting married before.

What is going on? Why can't I remember my life with them? No something is not adding here.

"Limi..." I felt someone tabbing on my shoulder.

I refused to face him

Him: Do you want to go home?

Me: He thought I was here to fetch him Lwando...The excitement on his eyes....

He turned me around , I landed on his chest, more tears escaped.

He gently brushed my back

Him: Shiii....Don't cry...

Me: I gave him false hope

Him: Shiii....

Few minutes later after crying...

Me: I can't go back there

Him: You want to go home?

I nodded

Him: Okay...wait I will be back okay?

I nodded once again, I unlocked my car meanwhile he was in the house and got in.

I was now calm, my phone rang and it was Phakamani.

I took a deep breath before answering

Me: Baby

Him: Where are you?

Me: I will be home in 15... I went to buy breakfast.

Him: Okay

He hung up, Lwando came back after a short while and we left.

I quickly bought a fruit salad and plain yogurt at the nearest store and drove home.

I still had my gown on, I checked the time it was past 9 am.

The minutes I walked inside the house, Phakamani noticed I have been crying

" What's going on?"

He asked following me to the kitchen, I couldn't face him.

Me: Nothing

I answered still not looking at him, he took out a knife.

I jumped

Him: What?

I nervously shook my head, looking at him as he was about to peel an apple.

I didn't even noticed he had an apple in his hand.

Him: Are you okay?

He inched closer to me

Me: Im...

I swallowed very hard

Me: I'm okay

He shoved a piece of the apple in his mouth and chewed making that "gram...gram " sound then he swallowed.

Him: Are you sure you okay?

I nodded, as I was dropping the fruit salad

Him: You shivering....

Me: I'M NOT OKAY! EVERYTHING IS A MESS!!!!

His eyebrows moved upper, I looked as he tightened his grip on the knife.

Him: What you talking about?

He was moving faster!

Me: I miss them, I miss my mother, I miss my father, I miss my family!

He placed the knife on top of the counter together with the apple.

Him: Come here...

He pulled me closer to his chest, brushing my hair.

Him: I'm here for you and would do anything for you

Me: I miss my family

I cried , I was thinking of what happened earlier.

Later that night...

It was midnight, we were all fast asleep until we were woken by a bucket of ice water.

We both jumped at the same time

PK: What the Fuc....

The lights went on, Two men were standing on top of us disguised.

PK reached for something

Guy1: Looking for this?

He waved a gun in the air, I noticed there were four, Two were standing by the door.

PK: How the hell did you get into my house?

Guy1: You think you are the only Master mind ?

The others laughed, One of them was quite not saying a thing.

PK: What do you want?

He was angry

Guy 2: Mmmm... Boss what do we want? He was referring to the other guy who was quite.

He whispered something to the guy talking

Guy2: That's interesting....

Guy3: I can't wait for this show, were are the pop corns?

PK tried to move, I saw blood in his left leg and he groaned out of pain

PK: Fuck you!

Guy1: I will blow your brain if you attempt to move ...

They shot him, but it was a silence gun

Guy3 : How about we start with his son??

He giggled

Guy1: That will be fun yaz! Kill his son in front of him

PK: What the fuck do you want? MONEY???? Okay I will give you money!

Guy3: Do we look broke?

PK: What do you fucken want?

Guy1: Easy Ta PK...No need to for that....you will die of Heat....

PK: Why are you here?

Guy1: Revenge my brother, revenge!!!!

PK: Who are you?

Guy3: Your worst nightmare!

They giggled, I was shivering. The quiet guy can to my side and started touching me

PK: Don't fucken touch her!

Guy3: Or what???? What you gonna do?

Guy 1: Gents how about we all get a taste of PK's meat?

They laughed

PK: I swear, I will kill you

Guy1: Bla bla bla! Why nomona? Mandela said people shall share

Me: Please, I beg you

My entire body was shivering now, I was begging them with tears in my eyes.

Guy3: Thee mighty PK , fails to save his precious wife

They laughed, while the other guy was trying to take off my P.Js . PK shoved the guy away from me, they shot him again , I don't know where, I just heart groaned and swearing.

I tried to fight the guy but he was too strong for me. He covered the both of us with a blanket and forced his way to my vagina tearing my underwear, he entered without warning. That man was powerful, I could fight him, I guess I'm weak.

He moved back and forth groaning, Tears escaped from my eyes, Pk just closed his eyes. There was nothing he could do, he was in great pain, the other guys

were forcing him to watch while they were looking down , they were not watching us but holding PK tight, forcing him to watch.

He moved faster and faster, until he reached his point of climax.

"Damn!" He exclaimed then he got off me.

When he was done, he stood up and zipped his pants.

Him: I think we are done !

He walked out first

Guy3: Goodnight PK! Poor PK couldn't save his wife!

He laughed then walked out... PK couldn't look at me.

Him: I'm sorry

Tears flowed uncontrollably, Nobody would understand the pain I was feeling.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 8

PK crawled to me

Him: Are you okay?

He was in great pain, groaning

Me: Please dont-

I said as he tried to touch me

Him: Bab-

The emotions took over

Me: get out!

Him: I'm so-

I started crying again

Me: This is your fault, I said get out...

He looked at me with a worried face

Me: GET THE FUCKEN OUT OF HERE! GET OUT!!!!

I was yelling out of anger

I shoved him off the bed, I didn't care about his wounds, I just wanted him out of my presence.

Me: My son...My son....Wait....

I hurried to his room like a mad women, I switch on the light.

He was sleeping, there was blood coming from his mouth.

"No no no....Luthando don't do this me "

He was not responding , I screamed.

Me: Noooooooo!!!

I cried out loud, removing his blanket and he was covered in blood.

I felt mixed sensation, my hands were shivering. PK came limping

Me: We have to take him to the hospital

"I saw Lwethu and Lwando surrounded by fire begging for help"

I held on my head with one hand wandering in the air looking for balance.

"Are you okay?" Said PK's voice and I snapped out of it.

I grabbed PK angrily by his vest

Me: My son is dying!

He picked him up as I ran to look for car keys by the counter , I took the first in my sight and it was Pk's keys. Then hurried to the car and the house door was not locked.

I unlocked the car , PK came fast as if he was not shot.

PK: Boy open your eyes... it's me daddy...

Lutha was not responding

PK: Don't do this to us Okay? Hang on, we taking you to the hospital.

We rushed to the nerest hospital, As soon as we arrived the nurses came to us asking what happen.

Me: Can't you see my son is dying? He has been shot.

They took him and I followed , holding his hand.

Me: Baby please please don't leave me, please fight , I can't lose you.

One of the nurses, pulled me back as they took my son away.

I cried out loud causing a scene,

Me: Promise me he will be okay!!! Please

Nurse: They will do their best...you need to be strong for your son.

She took me back to the reception, PK was not there.

" They took him in as well..." said a female voice.

Nurse: They will be fine...

A while later...

A doctor came to me, he had a sad face, I stood up.

Doc: I have good news and bad news

Me: Spill it out already

Doc: Your husband will be all right , he was not badly injured.

Me: And my son

I could see at his facial expression that my son...

Him: We did everything in our power but it was beyond our control...

Tears formed , causing me to see blurry

Me: Tell me my son is still alive

Him: I'm sorry mam but he didn't make it

I cried out of agony with both hands on my head.

Me: No no no!!!!

Doc: I'm sorry Mam, there was nothing we could do then he left

I have never been hurt like this in my life, there is no pain greater than the pain I was feeling.

The following day...

The police came to the hospital and asked us what happened and I told them everything except the rape part .

I didn't want the world to know about it, I didn't want a reminder.

They opened a case and said they will do their best .

It didn't matter to me because it will not bring my child back or undo the rape.

I just wished they can die a very painful death.

The police went to our house, took photos and fingerprints, then they left, I walked to my sons room and took his T-shirt, I imagined him saying.

" usuke ubenje ke wena Mama" He always said those words when I didn't want to give what he wanted.

I slide down and cried, PK walked in, in bandages, limping.

Me: This is all your fault you kill my son!

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Go to the hospital and tell them to bring back my son.

I saw tears escaping from his eye

Him: He was my son too

Me: But you killed him? Please do me a favour and go back to the hospital and tell them to bring my baby...

I said standing up

Me: My son is not death, maybe they want to see if we can cry.

I removed all the blankets together with the sheet.

Me: I'm gonna wash the blankets so that when he comes back , he will find his room clean.

PK walked closer to me

Me: Hurry up Phakamani, maybe my son is hungry by now.

I took the blankets and washed them with the washing machine. It was only a blanket and a duvet with the sheet.

PK was standing at the passage

Me: Phakamani why you standing there? Go fetch our son!

I walked to his room and tidied the room and walked to our bedroom.

Me: My son can't see blood..

I removed all the blankets, put in a new sheet with a white duvet and white pillows.

Me: Better!

I took the stained blankets to the bathroom and placed them there.

Me: Phakamani are you still here????

Him: He is gone

Me: Don't lie! My son is not dead

I chuckled

Me: You trying to be funny neh? Trevor noah!

Him: Baby you saw it by yourself....please don't do this.

Me: Yabonake???? Asizovana (you see? We not gonna get along) go fetch my son.

I shoved him out of the house and threw him with the car keys

Me: Don't come back here without my son! I locked the house and started cleaning when I was done cleaning I cooked for my son then went to take a bath.

I finished bathing and waited impatiently for them until I fell asleep on the Sofa.

A knock came through the door, I jumped up and went to open.

It was killer holding a sport bag

I smiled

Me: Is that Lutha's clothes?

I peeked outside

Me: Where are they ?

He looked at me confused

Him: Who?

Me: Phakamani and Luthando

Him: I don't know

I giggled

Me: They coming right?

I grabbed the bag without waiting for his response

Me: I'm gonna put his bag in his room . You can come in.

I was losing it, I was in denial that my son was really dead.

I came back and offered him something to drink.

Me: I haven't seen you for a while, where have you been?

Him: East London

Then he took a sip

Later on...

PK came back empty handed

Me: Where is my son?

Him: Baby....He is no more.. He is dead!

Me: Uyaxoka neh?(You lying isn't it?)

I said with s smile on my face

PK: Baby our son is gone , he is in heaven

Me: Then book a plane or a jet whatever the case may be and go fetch my son

Him: He is with God

Me: Tell God to bring my son Phakamani!!!

PK: Wait a minute, Killer when did you arrive?

Him: Few hours ago

PK: What brings you here?

Him: To check on you Bro!

PK: Check on me?

Killer: It's been a while...

PK: But-

Killer: Let's put the past behind us and start a new chapter.

PK: Just like that?

Him: Can you please tell me what's going on?

He told him the whole story

Killer: Any lead ? We must find those dogs and I swear....

He was pacing up and down

PK: I don't even know who they are

Killer: Come on

PK: They were four

Killer: Dude how did they come in?

PK: I don't know and the funny thing they opened with a key . They didn't break in

Killer: I'm sure they have been watching your every move

PK: They raped my wife in front of me and they fucken killed my son! Can you imagine that?

Killer: Relax Ntwana...We will find them and they will pay

PK: Hayi they know how to play this game, they hit were it hurt the most....My family

Killer: We will find them and I will make sure of that. This calls for war without mercy.

To be continued....

Crop ntoz again sorry family

Season 2

Insert 9

"She is traumatized neh...?"

He asked as I was busy cleaning, the already clean house.

I quickly turned to them

Me: I'm not traumatized....My son is still alive

They kept quiet looking at me as if I was a mad woman, Was I?

Me: Don't look at me like that....Luthando will come back, he will never leave me.

PK: Baby please

I started going crazy, I went to my room and locked myself.

They knocked countless times but I didn't answer, I was not myself.

Few days later....

I woke up in a bed, I couldn't move, I was tied to the bed.

I looked around the room , it looked like a hospital.

"My baby.... My baby.....Please save my baby...."

I saw fire...Lwethu was crying , He was crying for help. I couldn't reach to him.

I think a yelled out loud, I saw a nurse running inside my ward.

Me: Please untie me, I need to save my son...they want to kill him.

She sighed

Her: Your son is dead, he is not coming back

Me: He is not dead yet, we can still have them

I was restless trying to release myself

Me: Why am I tied in this bed????

Nurse: We will release you once you behave and act like a normal person

Me: You think I'm crazy?

No no no I'm not crazy I can I be crazy?

Me: I'm not crazy please...they gonna kill them please nurse

She shook her head

Her: I will call your husband

Me: Which husband?

Her: Your husband

Me: Tell him to bring my Son...

Her: Your son is-

She sighed again

Me: See see I'm not crazy , I know my son is alive. Call Lwando and he will believe me

She just left and I was alone , I screamed for help but nobody came to my rescue.

I got tired and started talking to myself till I fell asleep.

"She is getting worse, she doesn't want to accept that her son is dead... And she keeps on Calling Lwando's Name"

I slowly opened my eyes, It was Phakamani and the nurse.

My throat was dry, I was thirsty and my body felt weak.

"Where is my son?" I asked in a low voice and my head hurt as well.

They turn to me and PK rushed to me.

Him: Baby..

Me: I'm tired Phakamani, please tell me my son is alive.

Him: I will I could say he is alive but unfortunately. He is not

Tears escaped

Me: Tell them to untie me, I'm not crazy

Him: I'm sorry baby I can't. You are a danger to yourself and others.

Him: Look!

He exclaimed, showing me a scar on his arm.

I looked at it , it looked painful

Me: What happened?

Him: You did this...You stabbed me with a knife.

Me: You lying

He sat at the edge of the bed next to me

Him: Please baby, he is dead and not coming back...I want to bury my son but I want you sane in that funeral.

Me: You killed him, go ahead and bury him alone

Him: Please baby, please recover, I still need you.

Me: Please leave!

Him: Baby

Me: Go away! I don't want you here....bring my son

I was going insane, the nurse advised him to leave and he left.

Few hours later...

A different nurse walked in with a tray followed by Lwando.

I smiled , he rushed to me

Me: You here to fetch me isn't it?

Nurse: 5 minutes...I don't want trouble

Lwando: 5 minutes, Thank you

The nurse placed the tray down and walked out closing the door .

Him: How you feeling?

Me: What do you think? I'm locked up in this room and tied in this room. Please tell them im not insane

He sighed

Him: Try to calm down, I know you not insane but you in denial, Look Limi ... Luthando is really gone.

I saw tears forming in his eyes but he held them from flowing.

Me: No he is not!

Him: The soiner you release that the better! If you want to get out of here , you must accept that he is really gone and he is not coming back. HE IS GONE!

He emphasised

Me: Get out!

Him: You are a very strong woman and you can conquer this. Lwethu still needs you and I still need you.

Me: Lwethu is in danger, they want to kill him, how did you escape the fire?

I whispered and he smiled

Him: You remember?

Me: Please save him

Him: We didn't burn, they let us go

Me: Really?

He nodded and I smiled

Him: Don't tell Phakamani about the fire please. He will go crazy

I nodded

Me: You believe me?

He nodded and I smiled

He kissed my forehead

Him: I love you...Please fight this

Me: You gonna bring Luthando next time?

His facial expression changed

Him: He is dead, he is not coming back

The nurse walk in looking at his wristwatch

Her: Your time is up

Lwando walked with the nurse and I was left alone again.

Days later...

It was the 12th of May 2012, a Saturday morning. It was his funeral, I was laid to rest today.

It was hard to accept that he is gone and he was really gone.

The nurse escorted me to the bathroom and I took a bath, I finished bathing without causing a scene, my soul was done.

I dresses up in a black dress with a black doek.

I looked like a moaning widow who who just lost her husband.

Actually he I was a widow, Phakamani died in my heart the day he allowed those monsters to kill my son and rape me.

It was all his fault and I will never forgive him for that.

PK arrived at the few minutes later and I was done.

The time was 7:30, the body was arriving 8 am at his house.

We arrived home, everyone was looking at me, There were church people as well.

The body had arrived, I went straight to the coffin, I opened it. He was really dead, my son was really dead, I just lost it. I thought I was ready. I was not, I cried out of agony, My mother in-law tried to calm me down, I was causing a scene. I guess I was not strong enough.

A while later...

I was now calm, the service went well, even though I was crying in between, it was only an hour.

At 9 am we all went to the grave yard, The pastor started talking, the hole was still covered.

I couldn't believe my eyes, it was like I was dreaming. I was waiting for someone to wake me up from this dream.

My baby can't be gone, I snapped out of it, I saw people digging the hole exchanging the tools with each other, giving each other turns. Killer and PK were one of those guys who were digging.

The worst and painful part was seeing his coffin slowly going down, I was there, I saw it, I went insane wanting to stop them, the pain was too much, I was acting out of emotions.

People were stopping me from going to the grave, I went on my knees trying to yank myself from their grip

Me: Phakamani stop them!!!

I yelled with a crying voice, I cried out of agony.

The pain was deep down, I want them to bury me with my son, I saw no other reason to live.

They took me back to the mental hospital because I was out of control.

I was not crazy , it was just that the pain was too much to bare.

Losing a child is not a child's play... It's not easy. Losing your only hope.

They tied me again like a mad woman, I sang a lullaby for him, I sang myself to sleep..

Two weeks later....

I was gonna start my first session with a Therapist.

Lwando said that was the only way to get out of that place.

I agreed , because I was tired of that place, I came to a point I didn't even know if I was sane or really insane, because i kept on having visions married to Lwando, we seemed happy.

I was escorted to the therapist office, I was nervous. There was a white woman, her smile decreased my nerves and relaxed.

I pulled the chair and took a seat and the nurse left.

"I'm doctor Lizzy... I'm here to help you but I need you to Trust me and cooperate with me." She looked her diary in front of her.

Her: Mrs Poni right?

I nodded

Her: Would you mind if I start with few questions?

Me: Okay

She was so calm and spoke with a soft voice

Her: How did you get to this state? What happened?

I kept quiet

Her: I want to help you

Me: If I tell you, I will go home?

Her: It will depend on our sessions

Me: Okay

I told her everything and the visions as well.

Her: So you cheated on your husband?

I stood up and went by the window and stare outside

Me: There is this thing about Lwando...

I said while staring outside

Her: The other man?

Me: Yes

Here: Okay, you may proceed

Me: There is this connection that I can explain. It's like I have know him for ages, It's like...

Her: He said you have a past together right?

I turned and walked back to the chair

Me: He showed me a little boy, he so cute and he called me "Mama" he was so happy to see me. He thought I came to fetch him

Her: That is strange , did you try do a DNA test?

Me: I don't remember being pregnant for him

Her: Where you once sort of car accident or something.?

I shook my head

Her: Did you try ask your husband?

Me: I don't want anything to do with him, he is a murder, thief and he killed my son. He allowed that monster to rape me!

She taking notes as I was talking

Her: I understand your pain and how you feel

Me: You understand nothing!!!! Were you once raped? Did you lose a child?

She kept quiet looking at me

Me: Thought as much!

I exclaimed

Her: He is also hurting , This happened in front of him and he couldn't help you.

Me: This is his fault, he promised to protect us but he failed. Those guys were after him!

Her: Okay

Then there was silence

Her: How did you feel after that night? The rape ? And the murder of your son?

Me: Broken , I wish they killed me instead of him. I feel dirty and cheap, I don't even know him... I feel lonely with my son!

Few minutes later...

We were done with our session , it was not bad as I thought it. I felt a little light.

I went back to my ward , I was not tied now. As a sign I was recovering. I just went to bed and slept.

"Loyiso...Loyiso..." I was crying the room was dark , My father was there.

Dad: I can see you get along now?

Me: Tata why?

Dad: As soon as you give birth , I want the baby...

Me: Tata Ndakwenzani? (what did I do to you)

Lwando walked in, turning the lights

Dad: Do your Job son!

He nodded then Dad left.

Me: Loyiso they want to take my baby away

Him: I will never allow that...

Me: Promise?

He nodded and hugged me

Him: Let's just beat them at their own Game.

Me: How?

Him: Relax, I have a plan

I nodded...

Him: We will run away

Me: Where to?

Him: Doesn't matter now!

Me: I'm scared

Him: Don't be scared, I'm here!

I woke up...

I realised I was dreaming, I started remembering everything from start till this point.

The nurse came to check on me, I was feeling cold. I think it was fever, she bought me an extra blanket because I was shivering.

Her: Lwando is here

Me: O...Okay...

She went out and came back with him.

Lwando: Baby are you okay?

I nodded awkwardly , he came to sit next to me at the edge of the bed.

Him: What's wrong with her?

She was referring to the nurse

Her: I will call a doctor for her

Lwando: Make it quick

She left

Lwando: I have to go before the doctor arrives

Me: Please bring my son with next time Loyiso

He gave me an a shock facial expression

Me: Go, before the doctor arrives

I said shivering and feeling cold, he was surprised. He left with question marks.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 10

(CROP NTOZ)

The nurse arrived with the Doctor, the Doctor checked my temperature and that stuff.

They ran all the necessary test, because they said it was fever and gave me Medicine.

It took three whole days for the fever and cold to disappear.

I felt a lot better at the third day. The nurse came to check on me early in the morning.

She walked in , while I was deep in my thoughts.

Nurse: Good morning Mrs Poni

I looked at her without uttering a word

Her: Haibo Good morning

Me: What is good about this morning ?

She came to stand by side

Her: Are you okay?

Me: How can I be okay???? My life is a mess. I don't know were to start fixing this mess.

Her: God is in control

Me: Sometimes it seems like , He has forgotten about me...

Her: Hey listen...

She was speaking with a soft voice

Her: God will never leave or forsake us, He promised and God is not a man that should lie.

Me: Then why is all of this happening to me?

Her: I wish I had an answer for your question but all I know ,God will never give allow a trail bigger than your strength. Just go back to God and ask him for Strength, He said in his word that When we are weak we are strong. Cry to your God and ask him for Strength to carry on.

Me: Thank you

Her: You are welcome...You have to wake up , take a bath then have breakfast .
Remember you have a session with Doctor Lizzy today.

I nodded then stood up, I went to take a bath. After bathing I ate porridge even though I didn't feel hungry.

I later went to the session with Doctor Lizzy.

Doc: Good morning, how are you feeling today?

She was always calm and friendly.

Me: I getting there

Her: Good... Today I-

I cut her mid sentence

Me: I remember everything...

She looked at me

Her: What do you remember?

Me: My son with Loyiso and our marriage

Her: Who is Loyiso?

Me: Lwando...That's what his late mother used to call him.

Her: So..how did you end up marrying Mr Poni?

I told her the story of my life, I was now standing by the window , staring outside.

She was astonished

Her: Your parents

Me: They died

Her: Did you go to the police?

I walked back to the chair and stood next it and chuckled .

Me: What is the use???

Her: He will be arrested and stay there for a long time

Me: PK arrested? Stay a long time? I wish

Her: Meaning?

Me: He always get away with everything, he was sentenced 25 years in prison but was released few years later .

Her: So , you gonna let this go?

I shook my head then took a seat.

Me: He is gonna pay for everything

Her: Revenge is not a solution

Me: That man DESTROYED ME!

Her: Revenge will leave you still bitter...you have to forgive him, he is still your husband

Me: Forgive him???? I will never and I mean it , I WILL NEVER FORGIVE THAT MAN

Her: Do this for you, If you don't forgive him, you will never find peace. You will be filled with bitterness and that is not good for your health.

Me: I hate him Doc, he wounded me

Her: You once loved him right?

I nodded

Her: Maybe this arranged marriage thing killed him, he felt betrayed by you. Love make people do crazy things

Me: So I should forgive him and play happy family????

Her: I didn't say that

Me: Then what are you saying???

Her: Find healing and forgive yourself and forgive your Parents and your husband. I know it's not gonna be easy but you have to, for your own good!

Me: I can't..

Theirs were flowing

Me: He separated me with my child and my boy was killed because of him.
We continued talking till the time was up, I went back to my ward.

PK came to visit me, I was so pissed of and angry.

Him: Are the sessions helping?

I didn't answer

Him: Please talk to me, I need you, the house feels empty without you.

Me: Please leave before I do something stupid

Him: Baby...

I stood up and shoved him backwards

Me: Get out!

Him: Baby please

Me: Out!

Him: We can conquer this together

Me: Security!!

I yelled

Him: Please don't do this to me...

Me: Hamba Phakamani, Andikufuni Apha! (Go , I don't need you here)

Th security arrived and took him out.

I was super angry, his presence disgusted me.

Later on...

Lwando arrived with my son, I was so happy to see him.

He ran to me, I stretched my arms and he got between them, I squeezed him tight.

Me: I missed you

Him: Mama...I can't breath

I broke the embrace

Me: How have you been?

Him: I missed you mna

Loyiso came to us

Me: I missed you too

Him: Will you leave me again?

Me: Mommy is sick , so I have to stay here but will be back and we can live together again

Lwethu: Really??

He asked excitedly

I nodded

Him: Where is Thando?

Me: Thando is....

Loyiso: Show Mommy what uncle Luvano bought you

He opened his backpack and took out a tablet.

Me: Your uncle is spoiling you

Him: Do you want to play a game with me?

Me: I don't know how

He chuckled

Him: I will show you

I help him climb up and he sat next to me and showed me how to play the game.

Everything was fast , I didn't understand a thing.

I entertained him

Loyiso: Baby

Me: Yes?

Him: I hope you didn't tell him that you remember everything

Me: I chased him away , he was here

Him: He is dangerous and capable of anything

Me: So?

Him: He will kill us

Me: I can't live with that man

Him: I know, but you have to.

Me: What you saying?

Him: We strike him unexpectedly...It needs a lot of wisdom to bring a man like him down.

Me: Presence make me sick

Him: It will be temporary

Me: I can't

Him: You still his wife and remember we divorced.

Me: Loyiso please don't let me go back to that house hle

Him: We don't have a choice

Me: Let's run away

Him: Not this time, I want freedom

Me: Please

Him: Act Normal towards him, until we finish with him .

I shook my head

Him: Ndiyakucela Hlubikazi (Please)

Me: I will think about it

Him: Please

They left later on even though Lwethu didn't want to go and that was painful.

Two weeks later...

I was discharged, PK came to fetch me.

We drove home in silence, When we arrived home, Killer was still there.

Killer: Welcome back

I faked a smile then went to take a seat, they tried cheering me up and I pretended to be cheered up.

Later that day...

It was bed time, I removed some of the pillows and slept.

Every time I closed my eyes, I dreamt of that night.

I sat up straight, I couldn't sleep

"Baby.." The lights went on

PK: Baby what's going on?

Me: I can't sleep

Him: What's the matter?

Me: I keep dreaming of thar night

Him: I will buy another house and move out of this one

Me: He raped me PK

Him: Shiiii

He pulled me to his chest and brushed my hair

Him: Forget about that night...No one will hurt you again that is a promise and I mean it this time.

He switched of the lights and brushed my hair till I fell asleep .

Few days later...

It was a Tuesday morning, I went to see a doctor because I kept having headaches lower back pains .

Him: When last did you have your monthly periods?

I tried to count and think

Me: I don't know...

She sighed and ran a pregnancy test first thing and the results came back positive.

Him: Congratulations, you are 7 weeks pregnant

I jaw dropped

Me: What?

Him: You gonna be a mother

I didn't even know who the father is, that broke my heart.

What if I'm pregnant for that monster ? Or Phakamani?

I left after the results and went back home stressed.

Phakamani was not home, killer was the one home.

"PK went to see a friend in Motherwell "

He said as I walked in

Me: Okay...

I went to my room, I was scared.

I have never killed before but I don't have intentions of keeping this baby.

I don't want anything to remind me of the rape or Phakamani . God will have to forgive me, I can't keep this baby.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 11

Two days later...

I had an appointment with a doctor, I was terminating the pregnancy without doubt.

I woke up early that day, Phakamani was still sleeping.

I slowly removed his arm that was around me, I tiptoed to the bathroom and ran a quick shower.

When I was done , I walked to the kitchen and tried to make myself something to eat, I made cereal. I only ate one spoon then threw away the remaining , because I didn't have appetite.

I felt hands wrapping around my waist , right after finishing washing the bowl.

His warm breath, warmed my neck as he was planning kisses.

I panicked and pushed him away, he gave me an astonish look.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: What's up?

Me: I don't know

He inched closer to me and held my hands..

Him: Look at me

I couldn't look him in the eyes, I wish I could just kill him that moment.

Him: Hey

He lifted my head and made me to face him

Him: They won't come back and you are safe now

I didn't utter a single word

Him: I promise, No one will ever hurt you

Me: You said the same the last time

Him: They caught me off guard and there was nothing I could do.

Tears formed in his eyes

Him: I know I'm not a saint but I love you. I don't know if I'm crazy or what ,but the love I have for is beyond human understanding. I can't even explain it ! I can't help it, the fact that you shared a bed with another man killed me

Wait a minute...

Me: Another man?

Him: Thobela

He still lied to my face, I looked at him.

Him: I promise I will be a good husband from now on forth. I will love and cherish you, I will treat you like a queen. I hurt you countless times, I did things I regret at this stage, but I was doing it out of love

Here again justifying his action

Me: Okay

I notice he was crying but he quickly wiped the tears that were coming out, he didn't want to see me crying.

Him: I'm tired of this life, it cost me many things and took away my son.

Me:

Him: I will be a better man, I promise

He was too late

I nodded, he pulled me to his chest

Him: I love you okay? I would do anything for you even die for you.

He said brushing my hair then plant a soft kiss on my lips.

We heard someone clearing his throat , we broke from each others embrace.

Killer: Like seriously guys?

PK: This is my wife and this is my house...you know that right?

Killer: Mxxm...

He said opening the fridge

PK: You smell fresh

He said referring to me

Me: I showered

Him: Giong somewhere?

I nodded

Him: Where too?

Me: To see a doctor

He gave me a concerned look

Him: What's wrong?

Killer looked at me as well

Me: Headache

PK: Didn't you go the other day for that?

Me: Er...It doesn't want to go away

Him: I will take you

Me: No

Him: I insist!

Me: I said No! What is it with you?

I exclaimed

He looked at me

Him: You hiding something from me

Me: I'm not!

Killer: I will be in my room

He left us standing ,

Him: What's up with you? Today you on ,tomorrow you off. I won't tolerate this nonsense.

Me: Nonsense?

Him: Yes!

Me: Have you ever been raped? Do you know how it feels?

Tears were now forming and my mouth was shivering.

Him: Easy, I'm sorry

I stormed out of the kitchen and went to the bedroom, I just went straight to bed and covered myself.

He walked in and tried talking to me , I ignored him , because I was not in the mood.

He made me even miss my appointment with the doctor.

I stayed in bed the whole day without eating.

The following day...

My tummy felt sick and it was like a have a stuck of hair on my throat. I felt the urge to vomit and I ran to the bathroom.

I came back walking slowly, PK was still sleeping.

I went back to bed and laid down for few hours till Phakamani woke up.

I looked at him

Him: Good morning my cupcake

I faked a smile

Me: Morning baby

I planted a kiss on his lips

Him: Mmm...What was that for?

Me: Do I have to have a reason for kissing my husband?

Him: Okay...

He kissed me again and got on top of me. He kissed my neck, squeezing my breasts , He removed my pyjama and got between my legs.

His manhood was already standing, He entered without warning, Causing me to moan out of pain, all the flash back came back, I pushed him away, to the extant that he fell on the ground.

He was shocked, I was breathing heavily. I covered my eyes , I remembered that day he forced himself on me pointing me with a gun and the night I was raped.

I felt a hand on my shoulder

Him: What is it?

Me: I can't do this

Him: Do what?

Me: I'm not ready...

He sighed

Him: I understand

He placed me on his chest and allowed me to rest my head.

He talked non stop till I fell asleep.

We woke up few hours later, We went the kitchen, he made breakfast but the eggs didn't smell nice.

Me: Why you using old eggs?

He looked at me confused

Him: Old egg?

Killer came to sit next to me by the counter.

Me: Check the expiry date, there is something wrong with the eggs.

He took out the whole box and checked the expiry date

Him: They expire December

Me: Then there must be something, wrong with the eggs

Killer: Dude, this is a sign of pregnancy....the is nothing wrong with the eggs

I looked at him furiously

Me: I'm not pregnant! You hear me!

I exclaimed pointing at him

Him: Relax, I didn't say you pregnant. Just said it's a sign of pregnancy. You should buy a pregnancy test.

This guy was pissing me off

Me: Maybe you are the one pregnant

Pk finished making breakfast and served Killer, I ate cereal.

I was even pissed off by the way killer was chewing.

Me: Stop it!

They both look at me

Me: Stop chewing like that!

Killer: I always chew like this

Me: Stop it, you are a human being not an Animal.

Killer: What's your problem ?

Me: Pk talk to your friend!

I stood up

Me: This eggs smell horrible and make my stomach feel sick!

I left and went to the bedroom, this thing inside me was driving me crazy.

I was planning to remove it that day but PK told me he has a surprise for me.

We took a shower together, we wore similar outfits and went to the Mall. We did shopping, We spent about R10 000 on clothing for the both of us.

I felt dizzy as we were heading to Debonairs, next thing I woke up in a hospital bed.

First thing I saw was PK's face, he was sitting next to me.

The doctor walked in after I woke up

Him: How you feeling Mam?

Me: What happened?

Him: You fainted and your husband bought you here.

Me: How long have I been her?

He smiled, he was a white man in his early 40's I assume.

Him: Long enough

PK : What is wrong with her Doc?

Him: Nothing...she is fine ...

PK: Thank God!

Doc: Congratulations Mr and Mrs Poni , your wife is almost 8 weeks pregnant.

Damn you doctor! Who gave you the right?

I faked an astonish facial expression, A smile formed at PK's face. He was happy and excited.

PK: Thank you Doc

Doc: You welcome...but I have to run a few test first.

I nodded because he was referring to me, then he left.

Few minutes later...

The doctor walked in and insisted to talk to me alone, Pk had to excuse us even though he didn't want to.

The Doctor sighed and gave me feed back.

I was HIV positive, my whole world stood still. I didn't know how to react, I froze and tears were near to the exist.

I felt mixed sounds from far the earth, I could see his lips moving but I could hear his voice.

God why?????

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 12

"Mrs Poni...Mrs Poni... M R S's P O N I!"

I slowly came back to reality, With tears flowing on my eyes.

I blinked once , so that I could see clear and a tear escaped.

Me: This can't be happening... I'm dying

Doc: You not dying, HIV is just a Virus, if you take your medication correctly and behave then you can still Live long.

Me : Live long? Oh my God....

I started panicking

Me: I'm sick, I'm gonna start losing weight and be skinny with cheekbones on live show!

Doc: Calm down Mrs Poni, Take a deep breath... you not gonna be skinny unless you don't take your medication or you in denial. If you want to be healthy and have a long life then you should start by accepting you HIV positive....

I cried, I couldn't control myself. The thought having the Virus made me want to End my life.

The Doctor calmed me down and he was so chilled and kind of gave me hope.

He gave me counselling, I don't want to lie, I was in denial.

Doc: Your husband must come test as well

Me: I was raped , I'm sure I got it from those monsters.

Doc: Did you sleep with your husband after the incident?

I shook my head

Doc: Did you go to the clinic after that incident?

I shook my head

Me: I didn't want to talk about it

Doc: Maybe if you had come to the hospital/ clinic that day, you would have been safe.

Me: So I brought this all to myself?

I asked with a high tone

Doc: No, I was just saying...

Me: Who asked you?

The Doctor tried speaking to me but I told him to go.

He left because he didn't have a choice.

Few minutes later...

I was still crying, laying on my back , staring at the ceiling.

I heard the door opening, foot steps inched to my bed, I didn't look, I focused on what I was doing.

I felt the bed moving as someone sat on the edge of the bed next to me.

"Baby...."

It was Phakamani

Me: Go away

I said without looking at him

Him: You crying, tell me what is going on

Me: I said...go...away

He held my hand , I got angrier and yanked his hand away from mine.

Me: You killed me Phakamani !

Him: Baby tell me what is going on...

I looked at him

Me: The Doctor just told me, IM HIV POSITIVE happy?

He gave me a astonished look, he didn't even know what to say, his jaw dropped from the shock.

Me: No get the hell out of here! This is all your fault!

He didn't utter any words...

Me: Go!!!!!!!!!!

I stood up and pushed him out of the room, he was so weak and didn't even fight.

I shoved him out and closed the door, I paced up and down.

Two days later...

I was sitting at the lounge, drinking coffee. Killer walked in.

Him: What's up with you too? What's with the tension in this house?

PK walked in, he looked weak

Me: I'M HIV POSITIVE

PK looked at me

Me: What?????

I said looking at him, Killer just froze

PK just shook his head and turned back

Killer: No... no...no....

He said scratching his head out of frustration

Me: I'm the one who is HIV positive not you!

Him: YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND!

He said and stormed out of the house , that was odd.

A while later...

I went to the bedroom and found PK sitting on the edge of the bed, he lifted his head as soon as I walked in.

Him: How could you expose our Status like that?

Me: Point of correction

I said walking in

Me: My status, I'm the one who had the Virus

Him: I fucken have it too!!!

Me: What????? How?

Him: I tested yesterday and I'm positive

I froze for a while

Me: How?

Him: I don't know okay!

He stood up and went to the window

Me: Wait a minute, So it's you....

I didn't turn to look at me, I walked to him and turned him around, forcing him to face me

Me: You infected me?

Him: I don't know

Tears started forming

Me: When last did you go for an HIV test?

Him: Yesterday

Me: Beside yesterday

Him: Before I went to prison, I can't remember

Me: Did you have unprotected sex with anyone?

Him: I don't know !

He exclaimed

Me: Why Phakamani? Why? Do you hate me this much?

Him: What about you? Are you a saint?

Me: What?

Him: I'm sorry

He said trying to touch me but I moved back

Me: How dare you?

Him: I'm sorry baby

Me: This is all your fault

I was in tears

Later that night....

What if I'm the one who brought this virus? I slept with Loyiso without protection. What is happening? What if I already had the Virus when I slept with Loyiso? What if I infected him with it?

I'm HIV positive, pregnant and don't know the baby's father. Oh my God!

I was in deep thoughts as I was showering, I finished showering, I walked to the bedroom and applied lotion on my body.

I did that standing by the Mirror, gazing at my body.

PK walked in, wearing his Pj pants and a white vest.

Him: Where is killer?

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: It's been hours and he is not back yet.

I didn't answer, he removed the spare pillows and got under the blankets as I was searching for PJs

Him: You haven't eaten anything

Me: I'm not hungry

Him: Onikayo, you pregnant

Me: So?

I was dressing up now

Him: This is not healthy

Me: I'm gonna terminate this pregnancy, I will not carry a fatherless child , who is HIV positive

Him: That child is not fatherless... You 8 weeks pregnant and which means you got pregnant before the rape.

I looked at him

Him: That is my baby that you carrying and you not gonna terminate my baby

Me: This baby will be infected with HIV

He shook his head

Him: I spoke with the doctor and he explained me everything.

Me: So you spoke with the doctor behind my back? Discussing me?

Him: When I went to test, I asked everything and he said the baby can not be infected you take your medication as soon as possible

Me: So I should start taking medication?

Him: He said we must come see him as soon as possible and he will explain everything.

Me: Why you so chilled about this whole thing?

Him: I'm not but After talking to the doctor, I realised that HIV is not a dead sentence, I will not die.

Me: Mxxm...

Following morning...

I woke up early got in the car and drove to my brothers house.

They were shocked , they were not expecting me.

Lwethu was so happy to see his mother, I picked him up.

Me: Hello boy

He smiled

Him: Daddy told me that I'm a Prince

I smiled

Me: Where is daddy?

Him: He said he will be back by friday to come fetch me.

Me: Okay ... you missed Mommy?

He nodded

Luvano was looking at me , his twins were vandalizing the lounge

Me: Molo Bhuti (greetings)

Him: Is everything okay?

Me: Yes, why you ask?

Him: It's 7am in the morning

Me: : Everyone is up njena

Him: What's up?

His wife walked in and greeted, I greeted back

Her: What a surprise

Me: I will be staying with you for a couple of days

Luvano: Can we talk in private?

He didn't even allow me to answer, I dropped Lwethu and walked to the backyard.

Me: You hurting me

He let go of my arm

Him: Are you crazy?

Me: About?

Him: I don't want PK coming here, causing a scene

Me: I can't go back to that house!

Him: You pretty know how your husband get be!

Me: Why you all scared of him?

Him: That man is insane!

Me: Bhuti please, I don't want to go back to that house, I can't face him anymore!

Him: Did he hurt you?

Me: He hurt me deep this time and I will never and I mean Never forgive him

Him: What happened?

Me: I'm....I'm.....

I just cried, he pulled me to his chest

Me: I'm dying Bhuti

Him: Shiii

He brushed my back, shushing me.

A while later...

We were now sitting on top of the lawn.

Him: What is going on? Tell your Jerry

Me: I'm scared Bhuti

Him: You know you can tell me everything right?

Me: I'm HIV positive

He froze

Me: I know

I started pulling some of the grass, looking down.

"It is not the end of the world " he said lifting my head up.

I couldn't help but tears escaped

Him: You are my little sister and that will never change. I will still treat you the same way I used to.

Me: Why me?

Him: Stop trying to find answers , what is the way forward?

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: Take your medication and stay healthy.

Me: It's easy for you to say

Him: What do you want me to say???? OKAY , Don't take your medication, live as you wish if that suits you

Me: Mxxm

Him: Say that again and I will give you a hot slap on that mouth.

I kept quiet

Him: I'm still older than you!

He exclaimed

Him: You will start taking your medication -

Me: But-

Him: I'm not asking you, I'm telling you!

Me: I'm 8 weeks pregnant, what if I infect my baby

Him: We going to see a doctor tomorrow and he will explain everything. I'm going with you!

Me: Bhuti

Him: PK is gonna pay for this, because I I'm sure he brought this to you

Me: You can't be sure

Him: Unless you are sleeping around

Me: What?

Him: Yes

Me: I slept with Loyiso...

Him: Loyiso is a honest man, I trust him

Me: Okay

I said that Xhosa okay which means the opposite

Him: I'm sorry

He pulled me closer to his chest

Him: I'm truly sorry, I wish I could have protected you , I failed you

Me: No Bhuti

I broke from his embrace

Me: You didn't

Him: I should have never allow you to date Phakamani at the first place

Me: It's not your fault

Him: I love you Onikayo

His eyes were flowing, he was about to cry. No he can't. I can't see my brother crying .

Me: I love you too

He cried, oh yes he did....

Him: This break my heart,

Me: I promise to take my medication and I will go to the doctor with you

I was also crying

Him: You have through lot, when will you get rest? This is too much for a person ...You are strong, you are a conqueror. I salute you! You have been through a lot and it's enough now, this all ends here now. I will never allow anyone to hurt you again

Me: No pain will be compared losing my child and be infected with HIV.

Him: I'm sorry

Me: Don't be

I could see the pain in his eyes, if it was for him, he wished to take the pain way. Only if he could.

Him: come here

I got between his arms and find my way to his chest, I felt safe and protected, I close my eyes.

Him: No one will hurt now....

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 13

"If you not gonna answer it , why don't you switch it off?"

Said Luvano with a pissed tone

Me: ..

I switched the phone off

Him: How long are you gonna keep ignoring the guy? It's been Two hours

Me: You don't understand

Him: Then switch off the Damn phone

The following day...

I woke up early , Lwethu was still sleeping peacefully.

I slowly removed his arm , and tiptoed to the bathroom.

I took a long hot shower, thinking about everything.

I found myself crying, I slowly slide down and cried.

The burden was too much for me, how did I reach this point???? Was I too blind to see this coming?

Wait....Who sees it coming?

Minutes later...

I dried my body and opened the bathroom door.

I found my brother pacing in front of the door.

Me: And then?

With that Xhosa tone

Him: You have been in there for hours...

Me: So?

I gave him a confused facial expression

Him: We gonna be late

Me : Give me 5

He nodded and went to the bedroom. I found Lwethu gazing at the door.

He smiled and jumped out of bed, he embraced my legs tightly.

Him: I thought you left me again

I tickled him, he laughed out loud and let go of my legs.

Me: I will never leave you again

Him: Promise?

I nodded

Him: Ngquba?????

I gave him an Astonished look and he giggled.

Me: Who thought you that?

Him: My uncle

Me: This uncle of yours

I said shaking my head

"2 minutes...." Yelled my brother

Me: Almost done!

I quickly applied lotion and dressed up

Lwethu: Siyaphi? (Where are we going?)

Me: Mommy will be back

Him: You lying, you not gonna come back

I tried to explain but he didn't want to understand

Him: A.a... I'm coming with

I had no choice but to bring him with.

We Left few minutes later , to the Doctors appointment.

I left Lwethu at the reception while we went onside the Doctor's office.

Doc: Mr and Mrs Poni right?

Me: No, He is my brother

The Doctor nodded and we took our seat

Me: Since I'm HIV positive, is it possible that my baby can be infected as well?

I asked before he could say anything

Doc: Well yes , only if you do not take your medication properly.

Me: So if I take my medication, Will my baby be safe?

Doc:Yes, you must take your medication throughout the whole period, even after child birth.

Me: Will I give birth normally or ?

He smiled

Him: Yes, you will give birth like other women, but the baby will be on treatment for six weeks and have to come for check up for 6 months

He explained everything and I felt a little better.

He gave me my medication and told Luvano to remind me everyday.

Later that day...

Luvano's wife was busy preparing dinner at the kitchen, while we were at the lounge watching Tv.

Lwethu: When is Lurhando coming?

He innocently asked

Me: Luthando is not coming any time soon

Him: What does that mean?

Luvano: You will understand when you older....

Him: Can I visit him?

Me: No baby, he is at a peaceful place and he is hap-

Someone knocked at the door, we looked at each other

Me: Expecting someone?

He shook his head and went to open the door.

"You not welcomed here bra!" Said Luvano

"Can I at least speak to my wife?"

Replied PK's voice in the most calm tone

Luvano: If don't go, I swear one of us will be taken to the Mortuary and the other to Jail.

PK: Please Bra , ndiyakucela....

I stood up in anger and went to the door

Me: PK what do you want???? Haven't you caused so much damage? You destroyed my life, you killed my son, you destroyed my marriage , you destroyed me!!!!!!

Tears escaped my eyes

Him: I'm sorry

I saw tears forming in his eyes, I never saw him that weak.

Me: I loved you Phakamani...I gave you my all...It was never my fault that you went to jail. I didn't ask to get married to Loyiso and neither asked to fall in love with him. He was there when you neglected me, he gave me a shoulder to cry, He gave me love when I was longing for love. You chased me away Phakamani....I needed you to save me but you did not.

My eyes were filled with tears, my lips were shivering, I was speaking my heart

Me: You tried to kill my son, you made me choose between you and Lwethu. What kind of human being does that? You heartless, you selfish, you deserve to burn in hell. I will never forgive you for what you did Phakamani, I will NEVER!

I saw tears flowing out of his eyes , he was speechless, he kept whispering my name and "I'm sorry" That didn't move me. I hated him with passion.

Me: Go, I don't need you, I don't want you . GET OUT OF MY LIFE!!!!

Him: Please.... I'm sorry

Me: Bhuti tell him to go!!!!

I exclaimed out of anger, I pushed him away.

I went to take my car keys and threw them at him

Me: Take them, I want nothing to do with you

He stood there, powerless and Speechless , he didn't even try to catch the keys. I removed my wedding ring and threw it at him

Me: Take your stupid ring, I want nothing to do with you. I hate you Phakamani!!!!

After saying those words, I went back inside and cried.

Few weeks later...

It was a Monday morning, I woke up a little late that day.

Lwethu was not next to me, I heard voices at the Lounge.

I stood up, made the bed and did my daily morning routine.

When I was done, I went to the Lounge and found Loyiso sitting there.

Me: Good morning ...

He smiled, he stood up and came to hug me and planted a kiss on my lips.

Luvano: Respect ayikho apha

We giggled

Loyiso: I missed you

Me: I missed you too

Him: I'm here to fetch you guys, You gonna move in with me

I broke from his embrace and looked at my brother.

Loyiso: Are you okay?

I nodded awkwardly

Luu: I will be late for work

Me: Okay

Him: See you later...Remember the truth shall set you free. The sooner the better

I faked a smile

Me: Have a nice day

Him: Thank you

Then he left...

We took our seat

Loyiso: What truth?

I cleared my throat, my heart beating fast

Me: There is something I need to tell you

I said playing with my fingers

Him: Listening

Me: I don't know where to start... I'm afraid

Him: Don't be

He stood up and sat next to me

Him: Relax and talk

Me: I.. I'm...I....Err...Oh God!

I stood up and went to pour myself a glass of water.

I rang up the water and sat at a different sofa.

Loyiso: You scaring me now

I released a sigh , I was nervous, scared and shivering.

Me: I'm...Pregnant...and....

He popped his eyes, I closed mine

Him: You pregnant with his happy?

Me: I don't know

Him: What do you mean you don't know?

Me: I was raped, I slept with you and with PK. I don't know... I'm 12 weeks pregnant, which his 3 months or something

He tightened his jaws

Me: I know

Him: I will you know?

Me: But PK believes that it's his baby....

Him: Okay

Me: And I'm....im....

Tears flowed, I felt his warm arms embracing me.

Him: We in this together, I love you.

Me: I'm HIV positive

He broke the embrace

Him: What???

Me: I'm positive....

Him: How?

Me: I don't know

He looked at me with uttering a word

Me: Please say something

Him: Wow!

Me: Wow????? Wow?????

Him: I..

He collected his keys

Me: Please don't go

Him: ...

Tears formed , I grabbed his arm

Him: Onika please, He couldn't look at me

Me: Please don't leave me

Him: I need some fresh air

He slowly yanked his arm and walked out .

I slowly took a seat and cried myself out.

Few minutes later...

" Onikayo..."

I turned and looked, PK was standing by the passage.

Me: What do you want? How did you get in here?

Him: The door was unlocked

Me: You not welcomed here

He inched closer

Me: Move one step forward and I will scream

Him: I'm not here to fight, I just want to apologise

Me: Apologise for what???? Will it take away the pain?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: SHUT THE HELL UP! SHUT UP !

I went crazy

Me: Give me one valid reason why , I should forgive you???? You caused me pain
Phakamani

Him: I'm truly sorry, please forgive me....I love you

Me: Well I don't

Him: I realise my mistakes and want to be a better man.

Me: It's too late Phakamani....

Him: Allow me to be a good loving husband and father

Me: You had your chance

Him: Everything I did was out of love, I was afraid to lose you... You are my life, my everything, I don't imagine life without you. I love you Hlubikazi

Me: Please go!

Him: O-

Me: I SAID GO!

Him: Please think for our baby

Me: This might not be your child, I slept with Loyiso too

Him: What????

Me: Yes

He tightened his jaws

Him: Right under my noise?

Me: Yes

He calmed down

Him: I'm ready to live with that, I love you and only you....

Me: Please go

I shoved him out and locked the house.

He knocked several times but I did open. I slept almost all day, I woke up when the kids came back from school.

I has plenty missed calls from Luvano and PK but non from Loyiso.

I tried to call him but he would not answer my calls, the next thing he did was to switch off his phone.

Ubomi bunzima!

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 14

Days turned to weeks, I was kinda recovering, although Lwando was still distanced. I was seeing PK often, he was singing the same song and it was irritating.

Well...

It was early morning during the week, I was dressing Lwethu up.

Him: Mommy...

Me: Yes baby

Him: I miss Dad, when will he come see me?

Me: On Friday

I was lying , I didn't know how to explain the situation to him.

I finished dressing him up then we went to the kitchen.

We were renting eMagxaki , One bedroom house with a kitchen , lounge and bathroom.

My brother was paying for the place since I was financially challenged. I wanted my space , My brother didn't approve at first but he had no choice.

I made him cereal, he hate moving his head left and right

Me: I can see you enjoying your cereal

He smiled

Me: Now hurry up before your uncle arrive

He nodded and I packed his school bag so long.

I heard a hooter outside and that was my brother.

Me: Lwethu

Him: Done!

I took his bag and we went to the car, I greeted my brother while Lwethu got in the car.

Me: Have a nice day, I love you

Him: I love you too mommy...

I waved at them as the car was leaving, I got back inside the house after they left.

I took a bath and wore a black dress with black heels, I tied my braids into a neat bun.

When I was done , I took my phone and called PK.

Him: Hello

He answered with a shocked voice

Me: You home?

Him: Ye...yes

Me: Okay, I'm on my way

Then hung up, I locked my house and took a cab to Dwesi, I walked the remaining distance.

I took a deep breath as I reached the door, I calmed down then I knocked.

"Okay" he exclaimed

I waited few seconds then the door opened,

Him: Hi

Me: Hi

We stared at each other

Me: Are you gonna let me in or what?

I pushed him aside, I heard the shower running.

I walked straight to the bedroom, when I got there , I found women clothes on top of the bed.

Him: I can explain

Me: Explain what? You don't owe me an explanation

Him: Baby please

Me: Call me that again and I will slap you

Him: It's not what you think

Me: Stop FUCKEN explaining! I'm not your women!

Him: You still my wife...

Me: Ex wife.... I'm divorcing you

I said turning the room upside down

He grabbed me , I tried yanking myself but his grip was tight

Him: Can you just stop!

Me: Let me go

Him: What you looking for?

He was calm

Me: I'm looking for my documents

Him: They at the last drawer

Me: Okay, now let me go

Him: I'm sorry for everything, I wish I could reverse time and be a good husband to you. I'm sorry for everything I put you through and I wish you will forgive me one day.

Me: I will never forgive you

Him: I will step back let you go....but all I ask for is your forgiveness Onika

Me: Let me go

Him: I love you and always remember that....

He let go of me, I headed to the drawer and search for them.

I heard footsteps heading to the room, I turned and fixed my eyes on the door.

I don't know why but I was kinda jealous and angry.

A women walked in wearing his T-shirt

Me: Does she know???

PK: Onikayo

Me: Answer me!!!!

I walked to the women, she was looking at me.

Wait a minute...It was Bulelwa

Me: Bulelwa?

Her: Hello Onika

She looked different

Me: I thought...

Her: No...He is not cheating

I was embarrassed but did not show them

Me: Oh, Anyways I don't care!!

I took my documents

Her: See Bhuti , I told you to bring me a towel.

PK: Hayisukaa!

Bulie: How are you Onika????

Me: Fine!

Then I stormed out , PK chased me

Him: Please take your car please

Me: I don't want it!

I exclaimed, we were by the road

Him: Please

Me: Why don't you FUCKEN understand? I don't you! I don't want your stupid car, blood money!

Him: I don't live that life anymore, being in this situation made me realise so many things. I don't want to be this monster, I don't want to be a dog....I hurt so many people, I want to change my life, I even accepted christ....I know it won't be easy and it won't be automatic. But I want change, I'm not doing this for you, or for anybody. I'm doing it for me.

Me: Good for you...you hurt people, kill people steal from people, then BOOM!
You born again??? Tshissa Saul!

Him: I wish you forgive me, that is all I ask, only your forgiveness Onika. I will not fight you, I understand you angry and don't love me anymore. I promise to never force you to love me,

Me: Voetsek , voetsek Phakamani uyandiva????

I was angry

Him: I'm sorry

I walked away, leaving him in that position, I took a cab back home.

I got home and locked myself, I thought I was recovering but seeing him again , took me back, I hated him with passion.

I was woken by a knock later on, I checked the time and it was around 1pm, I assumed it was my brother.

I went to open the door, on my surprise, it was not him. It was Loyiso

Me: Hi

Him: I took him for Ice cream first

Me: Okay

He looked at his son

Him: Go to your room

He said as he walked inside, I didn't know how to react.

Me: Can I offer you something to drink?

He shook his head

Me: Okay ...

Him: I'm so for my reactions , I was shocked, I'm still shocked. I don't know how to react, I really don't know.... He look down... I love you yes but...

Me: But?

He stood up

Him: I don't know...What if I'm infected as well?

Me: I advise you to go and test

Him: You should have used a condom with him, how can you be so careless?

Me: Careless?

Him: I'm sorry, I just can't I'm sorry ..

Me: Loyiso...

Him: I'm sorry...I still need time

He stormed out of the house again, that just broke my heart even more!

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 15

" Tata...."

Yelled Lwethu as he rushed to the lounge

Me: Your Daddy had to rush somewhere

He stood still, disappointed with a teary facial expression

Him: But he promised to-

I cut him mid sentence

Me: He said he will come fetch you tomorrow

I said to calm him down

Him: Do you love me

He asked with a low innocent tone that filled my eyes with tears .

Me: Ye..yes...I love you...Why you ask?

I said kneeling in front of him, holding both his hands.

Him: Are you gonna leave again?

I shook my head

Me: I will never leave you again....Never!

Him: Promise?

Me: I promise

I said placing him on my chest, he held me tight

Me: I love you, I would do anything for you

Him: When is Dad coming to stay with us?

I didn't know how to answer him

Me: Soon

Him: What is soon?

Me: He is busy but he will come stay with us

Him: Okay

Me: Now... how was school?

He smiled

Him: Awesome!!!!

Me: Any homework?

Him: Maths

Me: Bring me your book

Him: No Daddy will help me

Me: Daddy is busy baby

Him: He said he will help me

Me: Next time

Him: Call him

Me: He won't be able to answer

Him: Please

He was begging me, Searched for my phone and called Loyiso with my fingers crossed.

It rang several times but no answer, I gave up.

Me: He is not picking up, but I will help you

Him: I want Daddy to help...

Oh God!

Me: He is not coming

Him: Why is Daddy not always home?

One of the difficult thing , is to tell your child that you having problems with his/her Daddy.

Me: You will see Daddy tomorrow

He nodded

Later on...

I was busy cooking supper, a knock came through the main door.

Me: Who is it

"LOYISO " He replied

I wiped my hands and cover the pot, my heart was beating fast.

I slowly went to open the door

Me: Hi

Him: Hi

Then there was awkwardness

Him: May I come in?

I made way for him to come in.

"Tata!!"

Exclaimed Lwethu in a excited tone, I closed the door .

I didn't know how to react, Lwethu ran to bedroom.

Me: I tried to call you

Him: I saw your missed calls

Okey...

Me: It was Lwethu, he said you promised to help him with his home work.

Him: Okay

He took a seat and Lwethu walked in, I went to the kitchen.

My phone from the lounge, I rushed to the lounge and Loyiso already had the phone in his hand.

He looked at me

Him : Ina (Take)

I checked the caller ID and it was PK, I looked at it didn't answer.

Him: Don't let my presence stop you, Answer , your husband is calling...

Then he shift his focus back to his son. I wish I could give him a hot slap across the face.

I threw the phone on top of the sofa and went back to the kitchen.

Although I love him , but I won't tolerate this behaviour anymore.

He must make it clear if he wants to stay or not . A.a I didn't go hunting for HIV, it is not my fault that I'm infected.

I finished cooking then dish out for the three of us.

I went to serve them while they were watching Tv.

Loyiso: I'm not hungry

Me: Okay

I handed Lwethu his plate

Me: Baby bless the food

He instructed us to close our eyes and he bless the food.

I went back to the kitchen to place his food, I took mine and joined them.

Lwethu: Mommy why is Daddy not eating?

I told myself I'm not gonna answer that question .

Loyiso: Daddy is full

Lwethu: But you said Supper is important

Loyiso: I will eat tomorrow

I focused on my plate and ate . When I was done , I washed the dishes then I went to the bedroom.

I undressed and wore my Pjs, my phone rang again.

I checked the caller ID and it was a strange number.

Me: Hello

Caller: Hello...how are you???

It was a female voice

Me: I'm fine thanks, who am I speaking with???

Her: Bulelwa

Me: Oh

Her: Please don't hung up

Me: Why would I do that?

Her: Can we meet tomorrow?

Me: Why?

Her: I want us to fix our friendship

Me: There is nothing to fix

Her: Please Onikayo...I miss you and I need you

Me: 11 years....

Her: I know...I need my friend back

Me: You walked out and pushed me away

Her: I know, that was back then . My marriage is falling apart, nothing seems to go right in my life...that is why you saw me earlier.

Me: Okay... I'm sorry. But without being rude or anything... I have a lot on my plate, my life is a mess as well, I can't carry someone's burden on top of this one.

She begged till I finally agreed

Me: Where are we meeting?

Her: Do you mind if I come to your house?

Me: No I don't

Her: Thank you

Me: Do you know where I stay?

Her: My brother is going to take me

Me: No, Take a cab and get off by the high school , I will be waiting for you

Her: Okay

Me: Just let me know xawukhwele

Her: Okay

We hung up, I got under the covers and read a book.

Few minutes later...

Loyiso walked in, I stared at him surprised.

Me: Leaving?

Him: What if I'm also infected???

Me: I'm sorry

I said closing the book and placing it down.

Him: We didn't use a Condom that day!

Me: You should go and test

Him: How did I get to this point???

Me:...

Him: Why did you allow me to sleep with you without a protection? Ulala njani namadoda amabini without protection???

I tried to stay calm, because he was testing my patience.

Me: Please I'm not in the mood for this

He tightened his jaws

Him: Damn you Pakamani!!! Is it a crime loving you?

Me: No

Him: Why does it damn feels so?

Me: I'm sorry Loyiso

Him: It was first your father! I sacrificed everything for you, But everytime I get pain in return. I almost died in a fire now this???? Why ????

Me: I'm sorry Loyiso, I will understand if you want out, I put you through pain and you deserve better.

Tears formed

Him: On-

I took a deep breath and out

Me: I understand...please don't feel guilty. You can move on, I will be fine

Him: Please stop, who said I'm leaving?

Me: I was just telling you

Him: Limise , I don't want to lie, I'm still shocked and scared. I don't know anymore, I don't want to abandon you but this is too much

Me: I understand

Him: Please give me time

I nodded

Him: The thought of raising another man's baby again and dealing with this HIV thing....

Me: You don't have too

Him: ...

He walked out and came back carrying sleeping Lwethu. He placed him next to me then he undressed.

Me: What you doing?

Him: Putting Lwethu first

Me: What is that supposed to mean?

Him: I don't want my boy to grow up without both his parents in one roof

Me: Thank you

He didn't reply , he finished undressing then he slept.

Following morning....

I woke up early, made breakfast while they were bathing.

When they were done they came to the kitchen.

Lwethu: Mmmm

Me: Only one egg for you!

Him: Yhoo hayi kodwa

Me: Take a seat

I served them but Loyiso refused

Him: I will make myself a cup of coffe

Me: Okay

When Lwethu was done, they left.

I cleaned the house after they left, then Bulelwa arrived later.

Her: You look different

Me: You too

She took a seat

Me: can I offer you something to drink?

Her: Juice please

I poured her a glass of Juice and gave her

Her: Nice place

Me: Thank you

I sat down

Her: How have you been

Me: You don't wanna know trust me and you?

Her: Arg, my life is a mess. My mother hates me, my marriage is falling apart, Luvano doesn't want to give me back my child.

Me: Do you blame him?

Her: I know , I made mistake and I was not there for him but I need him now

Me: Uyavuya wena

Him: Can you please talk to him

Me: Andizingeni! You left your son , Luvano begged you take care of him but you were busy with other stuff

Her: He still my son

Me: Bulelwa you abandon him, you didn't want him . Now you feel like you ready and you want him? Hayi Cc it does not go like that!

Her: I'm a bad mother neh?

Me: Yes, what kind of a mother does that? You disappointed me.

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Don't apologise to me, You need to apologise to Luvano

Her: He doesn't take my calls, He hates me

Me: I don't blame him

Her:....

Me: 13 years Bulelwa....

Her: I want to make things right... I just don't know were to begin. He hates me, they both hate me....

We chated for a long while, then we heard a knock from the door.

I went to open and it was PK

Me: What do you want?

Him: Hello

"I told him to come fetch me"

Me: Oh

He walked in, Bulelwa stood up.

Her: Was nice talking to you

Me: You welcome

We shared a brief hug , Loyiso walked in together with Lwethu.

I crossed my fingers, I could see Loyiso boiling

Loyd: What is he doing here?

Me: He-

Loyd: She doesn't love you, get that in your brain! She loves me

Me: PK please go

Him: I was leaving njena

Loyd: What kind of human being are you????

Phakamani just walked out followed by his sister.

Loyiso stared at me and walked to the bedroom, I could see he was angry but he didn't want to shout me in front of Lwethu.

Everything is a mess, Arg Phakamani! He always brings trouble. I don't understand why Bulelwa called him.

To be continued...

Season 2

Insert 16

Few months later....

It was mid August, I was six months pregnant and my tummy was showing.

I haven't heard from PK from the past few months, no text messages, call backs or missed calls.

Not as if I was complaining but that was unlike him, he doesn't give up early but this time he just amazed me.

Well...

It was Friday afternoon around 2pm or so, I was doing shopping at Greenacres, shopping for the unborn baby.

I felt like someone was following me , I went inside edgars and that guy followed me inside.

"Mrs Poni..."

He said as he passed me, I looked at him and he flashed a smile.

I took my phone and called Loyiso but he did not pick up, we were not close like we used to be before, he was always at work, he was kinda ignoring me and it felt like he didn't want to be with me.

He was not even kissing me or touching me , I know....

As I was about to call my brother, the guy grabbed the phone and showed me a gun.

Him: Be a good girl and not cause a scene.

He said smiling, he was a normal guy , not shady, he was wearing formal.

I swallowed hard , I was literally shivering.

Me: What do you want?

Him: You will see, let's go baby

He pulled me by the waist as we walked out the shop.

We pretended to be a couple until we arrived at the parking area.

Me: Please don't hurt me

Him: Will depend

Me: Please

Him: Stop begging me , I'm following instructions. You begging the wrong person, get in the car Boss is waiting for you.

He opened the door, as he was about to shove me inside, I heard a gun shot, I looked at the guy.

Him: A...

Blood was coming from his mouth and he fell on top of me.

I screamed, I felt someone grabbing me.

" The cops will be here in no time." I was shivering and had blood on my chest.

I looked at the guy as we were driving, actually we were not driving, we were flying.

Me: Phakamani what is going on?

He didn't answer, he focused at the driving. He a tattoo on his neck and lot of tattoos on his left arm.

Me: I'm fucken talking to you!!!!

Him:...

Me: You said you changed!

We arrived at this big house, the gate automatically opened . He drove in and parked the car then released a heavy sigh

Him: You almost died...

Me: What's going on?

Him: Ask your husband

Me: You think I have time for games

Him: Haike Cc , andizingeni (count me out)

He said opening the door, I folded my arms

Him: Funa wena naleyo uyaqwalasela???

He left me in the car and walked in the mansion house . He was so full of himself and didn't look back.

A while later...

It was getting dark, I finally got out of the car and walked inside.

PK was sitting on top of the kitchen counter , loading a gun.

He fixed his eyes on me as I walked in, I was hungry.

Him: I was about to bring you a blanket , I thought you were comfortable in the car.

Me: Please take me home

He smiled

Him: This is your home....

He was polite, ephole aphe head office.

Me: I don't have ti-

He jumped down , I moved back

Him: Phola mdoko! (chill)

He said as he went to pour himself a glass of whiskey.

Him: Yafuna ?(want some)

He said waving his glass

Me: ...

Him: Usis'mithisane kanene! (I forgot you pregnant)

He gulped the the drink

His phone rang, he reached for his phone at the back of the pocket.

Him: mninawa.. (Lil brother)

PK doesn't have a little brother, who is he talking to?

Him: Vrou ilapha...Heeee huzet? (how?) Kancane wena...

He said laughing

Him: Qondile (for sure)...zonke zingo line... (everything is perfect)....Hosh!

Then he hung up

Me: You changed

He just smiled

Me: Take me home Phakamani, I'm warning you

He walked upstairs, but he stopped at the third step , and looked back.

Him: You have to take a bath, the bathroom is at the second door on your left.

Arg whatever, I said under my breath. I took a long shower and had flash back of what happened earlier.

I finished showering and wrapped a towel, when I walked to the kitchen, I found a lady drinking water.

She was wearing a short greenish dress and black stilettos.

She placed the glass down as soon as I walked in. She looked at me from toe to head

Me: Yintoni ?uyandifanisa? (Are you identifying me)

Her: What are you doing in my man's house ?

Me: Ask him!!!!

He walked in and we looked at him

Him: Yintoni nandijonga ingathi ndifumeni clutch?

Me: I don't have anything to wear and don't have toiletries.

Him: Third door on your right, first drawer...and wear anything you want from my closet.

Lady: PK Yintoni le Kaka undenzela yona?

Him: Take your bag , I'm taking you home

Her: What?? That aint happening

Me: I'm not in the mood for this

Him: Go dress up and rest

Her: So, you called me here for this?

Him: Let's go

Her: Uyinja PK (You are a dog)

Him: Hoef hoef!!!!.... Tell me something I don't know...Now let's go!

She stood firmly and folded her arms, I walked upstairs, she pulled me back.

Me: What the F???

PK gave her a hot slap and she fell on the ground.

Her: You slap me

Him: I don't mind doing it again

Her:...

He was dead serious, I was also scared

Him: Don't ever , I mean don't ever...touch her again! Now get up , I want to sleep.

He left with the lady and I slowly went upstairs, I searched for the toiletries and found them.

When I was done , I wore his black T-shirt and boxer.

I went down stairs and made myself a sandwich and juice.

I ate sitting at one of the high chairs, admiring the room, everything was perfect.

I looked at the telephone and called Loyiso but the phone was not working.

"I'm not stupid noko!" I turned and it was PK

Him: Mninawa benyanisile (Lil brother was right)

He said placing his car keys and his phone rang.

Him: Yizo!....Killer is testing my patience...Find him before he finds her...no she is with me now, she is safe with me and killer wouldn't dare coming here...sure sure!

I looked at him after he hung up

Him: Andiyazi! (I don't know)

He said walking upstairs, PK was not the PK I know, there was something odd about him.

I followed him upstairs, I found him half naked.

Him: Temptation Bawo!!!

He said as he threw his gown

Him: Wear it

Me:...

Him: Now!

I wore it

Me: So it was killer?? What does he want?

He shrugged his shoulders

Him: I also want to know

Me: Why do you always put me through this? I curse the day I met you!

Him: Do you know who I am?

Me: Mxxm

Him: I thought as much

Me: What kind of sick game are you playing?

Him: Asilahlwa mfethuu!!! (You don't break up with us) Till dead do us apart!!

He said opening the closet

Me: You are sick , you need medical attention

He giggled hard

Him: Tshissaaaa!

Me: Take me home

Him: Killer is after you, he is mad, ukufuna high and low (He is looking for you high and low)

Me: Why????

Him: I'm gonna ask him xandibona vah?(when I see him)

Me: Mxxm

I was boiling

Him: Utyile uJambase?

He was referring to the baby

Me: I hate you

He smiled

Him: If it suits you

Then he left me standing there, I angrily got under the blankets.

I heard footsteps approaching the room, I lifted my head up, the door slowly opened.

"I gonna kill you! Say your last prayer" it was killer

Me: Please

He smiled

Him: Bye!

I screamed, I woke up in PK's arm's.

Me: He wants to kill me....

He held me tight

Him: It's just a dream, go back to sleep

Me: He was holding a gun, he was standing at the door

Him: No one will hurt you , while I'm around

He placed me down and shush me till he fell asleep.

The following morning...

I heard voices downstairs and my stomach was making a hunger noise.

I stood up, I slowly walked down stairs wearing his gown.

Everyone looked at me PK was holding a gun in his hand....wait....another PK walked in. What is going on here?

Me: PK!

They both looked at me

Me: Phakamani

The one that just walked in looked at me

I walked down

Me: What's going on here?

PK: Bicimba ndinguwe le izolo?

He said smiling

Me: Can someone explain what is going on?

PK: Ndikuncamile awuyazi indoda yakho injani?

Phakamani didn't have tattoos but they looked exactly the same

Phakamani: Onikayo this is my twin brother Phakamisa

Phakamisa: Hosh phakamisa!!!! Ndim lowo!

The other guys laughed

Me: You didn't tell me you have a twin brother

Phakamisa: Ouch!! That hurt. Ndiyafihlwa na?

PK: Hayi jonga shut up wena!(SHUT up)

Phakamisa: I'm older than you, ndinguMkhuluwa wakho(I'm your older brother) with a capital M!

PK: We share the same age and date , suzi nqwenisa!

Phakamisa: Mizuzu yakho!

PK: I'm sorry -

Me: Everything is a lie about you....do you even know the definition of the word Truth?

Him: It's a long story

Me: Arg! I don't care. I just want to go home

PK: It's not safe

Me: What does Killer want?

He pulled me aside

Him: He is the one who raped you , Think he iis also infected

Me: What????

Him: I will protect you

Me: Let me call Loyiso

Him: Mxxm, what will he do?

Me: Were you not born again just yesterday?

Him: I'm still , but this happened...Uze ngamandla uKiller. He wants us both dead and he means businesses.

Me: I hate you! I hate you ! I hate you

I was punching him

"Are you guys playing boxing?"

Said Phakamisa's voice as he walked to us.

I was now in tears

Phakamisa: Kuthi uvuza nje???

Me: What did I do to deserve this?

Phakamisa: Kuphapha !

PK stare at him

Phakamisa: She was 13 when you started dating isn't?

PK: Bhangxekile

Phakamisa: 14?

PK: Bloet , give us space

Him: Esheee aniphole !

He said as he went away

Me: I don't like him, he is rude and thinks he own the world

PK: I promise after this you will be free and can enjoy your life. I want you to be happy that is all. I swear if Killer was not after us, I was not gonna interfere in your life. I hurt you so much , I want want you to live a normal life. I have also given my heart to the Lord, Read the book of John , he says I am the way, the life and the truth and no one-

Me: Will go to the father except by me

He smiled

Him: I'm the vine...

Me: And you are the branches

Him: Those who remains in me , and I in them...

Me: Will bear much fruit

Him: For you can do nothing without me

Me: ...

Him: Nothing is impossible with God

Phakamisa walked in again

Me: Yhuuuu you look so alike, you look like duplicates

Phakamisa: I'm too handsome and Phakamani is the opposite

PK: uHoywe ngubani bro?

Him: Kukhalwa ngam kwela Kapa...PK this PK that! Ndiyibaba uyaqwalasela?

Me: Why are you both PK?

Him: He is actually PK junior

PK: Hayi mandon't you get tired

Phakamisa: Hahaha...just call me bloet

Me: Okay bloet

PK: You need deliverance

Bloet: See , see if you start preaching hereI swear I will call heaven with this gun and you can preach there in peace

Then he walked away

PK: Mxxm

Me: I'm hungry

Him: I bought breakfast

Me: Where is it?

Him: Let's go

We walked in

" Tate gazi!"

Bloet: lyoo

Guy: Tate gazi! (Singing)

Bloet: lyoo

He was dancing , this guy though

To be continued....

Season 2

Insert 17

Mini

PK shook his head as we walked to the kitchen. He gave me a Takeaway box

Me: What is this?

I asked as I was opening

Him: Fish and Chips

Me: Mmmm....

I started eating

" Hosh zikheberesh!" He said walking in the kitchen

Me: Like seriously?

Him: Andilambe ingathi ndimithi (I'm hungry as if I'm pregnant)

PK: Join me

Him: So , you didn't buy for me

PK: Just eat!

Him: Ndizoske ndikuthathe konke okutya , ithi PE! (I can take the whole takeaway, test me!)

PK: Uyadlala ntanga !(You lying)

He said embracing the box

Bloet: Oh?

He tried to grab the box but PK tighten his grip.

Bloet started poking him

PK: Like seriously bro?

Bloet: Shiii...

We looked at him

Him: Where is your gun?

He was referring to PK

PK: What's up?

Bloet: I think we have company

PK took out his gun and moved closer

"HAAAAAA🤪🤪🤪🤪🤪🤪"

We looked back, Bloet had the food

PK: Fuck you man!!!!

Me: Bloet!!!!

Him: What? Yhuuu ningamagwala (You cowards)

PK angrily looked at him

Bloet: Esheee , what does the bible say about swearing? Are you not born again???? You never cease to amaze me!

He said as he was biting the fish

PK: Mxxm Phakamisa Mxm!!!!!!

He chased him, Phakamisa ran upstairs with the food, laughing out loud.

His laugh was laughable, I mean like , His laugh was funny ibasela igcwelwe sisgezo.

PK walked back very pissed

Me: Come..

Him: No I will eat bread instead

He angrily opened the breadbin and made himself sandwich.

Later on...

Phakamisa walked in with Vuyolwethu and two shopping bags.

Me: Baby wam!

He ran to me, I hold him tight. He still had his school attire.

Him: I thought you left me

Me: No, Mommy will never leave you again

Him: Okay!

He was so excited, I made him something to eat.

Him: Tata was angry...he says you selfish!

Like seriously Loyiso?

Phakamisa walked in

Him: Ntwanaz!!!!!!

Lwethu smiled

Bloet: Hlubikazi, I bought you new clothes and toiletries.

Me: Hallelujah!!!

Him: Don't start!

Me: What?

Him: Just don't...

Me: Amen!

Him: Tell PK junior, I'm out

I nodded

Him: You don't even ask ndiyaphi huzet????? (Where im going?)

Me: Ayindifuni (Doesn't concern me?)

Him: I'm your husband's brother

Me: So?

I showed a confused facial expression

Him: Never mind!

Me: Okay

Him: Tell him ndiye kwaChief (I went to Chief)

He walked out, This guy bathong!

I just rolled my eyes, PK joined us later

Him: Where is Phakamisa?

Me: He went to Chief

He hit his forehead

Him: Phakamisa...

He searched for his car keys

Me: Where you going?

Him: To get my brother

Me: Like seriously?

Him: You don't know him...he will cause drama there and...

Me: He wouldn't

Him: My brother likes attention, Injezu in Xhosa ...

Me: Just like you

Him: I'm not like him...

Me: Whatever

Him: Don't open for anyone...I will be back!

He said as he was walking out.

I was left with Lwethu

Him: Mama

Me: Yes

Him: Is Daddy also gonna live with us?

Me: No, but we will go back home to daddy

Him: When?

Me: Soon

Him: When is that?

Me: soon, come here

I pulled him close to my chest

Me: We will go back home don't worry.

A while later...

"They don't know me here!" The door opened, Phakamisa walked in drunk.

Him: Hello family!!!

He smiled

Lwethu: Hayini!

PK closed the door

PK: What picture are you painting for Lwethu?

Bloet: Ayiva le awti uphakamisa...uhambe mosha abantu uphakamisa....(Singing)

Lwethu was giggling

PK: Bloet !!!!!

Him: Let us dance first! Tsibha....TsibhaTsibha....Tsibha

He was doing the tshibha dance with his shoulder up and his head between the shoulders.

Lwethu joined him giggling

I looked at PK

PK: Lord this is beyond my control !

He lifted his hands as a sign of surrender

Me:...

Two days later...

It was Tuesday morning, I made breakfast for everybody.

Lwethu was fully dressed in his school uniform eating cereal.

Phakamisa walked in half naked, he looked hot thought. He patted Lwethu on the head

Lwethu: Morning Tate Gazi!

I stare at Phakamisa and shrugged his shoulder.

Him: It wasn't me!

He said opening the fridge, PK walked in half naked as well.

Bloet closed the fridge

Him: What is this ?competition?? Come on bro!

He poured himself a glass of Juice

PK: What you talking about?

Bloet: I won't take your woman, there was no need to appear half naked

PK: Mxxm ...

Bloet: I know

Lwethu: Why are you looking the same?

Bloet: Me??? Looking like this Ape?

He was pointing at PK

PK: Yazi , you want to look like me, I know I'm hot and you know it!

Bloet: Yhuuuuu yhuuuuuu yhuuuuu!!!

He looked around

Him: Don't ever say that bro, because you are the opposite!

We laughed

PK: Esheee !

We were now watching TV Lwethu was at school with Bloet.

Someone buzz at the gate, PK went to check, He came back with Bulelwa.

Her: Hello

Me:.....

PK: Hello

Bulelwa: I know you mad at me

I stood up

Me: You damn right !

Her: I should have told you

Me: What other lies are you hiding from me?

I looked at both of them

PK: It was my fault, I told her not to tell you

Me: We have been friends since primary but you never told me you have two brothers

Bulelwa: Bhut' Phakamisa is very corrupt and I didn't want you to know about their gangsterism.....If you met Him way back, you would have known their lifestyle.

Me: You not for real

PK: This is no time for this

Phakamisa walked in whistling and we looked at him.

Him: Am I that handsome that the world stand still when I walk in?

PK: Mizuzu yakho

Bloet: Thank you darling ...

He imitated Queen Moroka's voice

We just laughed

Bulelwa: Bhuti wam!

Bloet: Pharizzaaaa ka bhuti wakhe!

Bulie: Yabonake!(See)

Bloet: I'm in a good mood yazi???

We looked at him

Him: Nifane nandijonga , andizonixeleva tuu! (I'm not gonna tell you)

He whistled as he was walking upstairs

PK: As if we wanted to know

He yelled, Phakamisa just laughed

PK received a message

Him: Shit! Phakamisa!!!!

He rushed downstairs

Him: Yintoni wandikhwaza ingathi ndimithise sister wakho?

(Why you calling, as if I impregnated your sister?)

He handed him the phone

Bloet: Bulelwa take her upstairs

PK: God you have to forgive us!

He said taking his gun out

To be continued....

Season 2

Insert 18

I heard Phakamisa's Laugh from up stairs , I looked at Bulelwa.

Me: What's going on?

She shrugged her shoulders

Her: Phakamisa always do that when he is on top of the game

Me: Okay

I went down stairs to check , I just didn't know who is Phakamisa and who is Phakamani because they had the same clothes.

The tatoes were also invisible and they were dead serious now, looking at me.

Me: Hayi, Yintoni? (What?)

I said as I was reaching down

They didn't say a word

Me: Who is who?

PKS: Yizo!

I knew that was Phakamisa, by the way he speaks.

PKJ: Soshayi confusion (We gonna confuse them)

They both laugh out loud

Me: And then?

Junior: Even you, you were also confused.

Senior: Sizi Baba! (We are the bosses)

Junior: Bazomkhomba umzi unotywala! (speaking in proverbs)

Senior: But look, we have to be on top of the game.

Junior: Listening...

Senior indicated that we sit down and we obeyed.

Senior: Killer thinks, he is the boss....nca nca nca....he Doesn't know what we have for him.

Junior: And they don't know I have a twin...

Senior: ibuhlungu kodwa le uyithethayo(That is heart breaking)

Junior: You know I love you bro

Senior: Kodwa ndiyafihlwa?(But you hiding me)

Senior: I had my reasons

Junior: Jonga andingo Makhwapheni wakho kwedini! (Look I'm not your side chick boy!)

Junior smiled

Junior: Esheee , I didn't know I have a twin brother until I was in Matrix.

Senior: You know now

Junior: Une drama kanjani (You have drama)

Senior: Oh really???

Junior: Yhuuu mntana kamama, I love you and there is nothing compared to the love I have for you. You have my back and I have your back.

Senior: Caba ndingu Thontselina? Eliyana lase Bhofolo ke phof!(Am I stupid?)

Junior: Yazi qhoshile! (I can see you blushing)

"Ncooo"

Said Bulelwa as she approached the room

Junior: Ndikukhabe !(I will kick you)

Senior: Ndikudibanise nedonga kemna (And hit you against the wall)

Bulelwa: Why do you always have to be serious? Lonto you look One!

Junior: That's the plan

Senior: Look we don't have time

Junior: AYIYE! (Let's get going)

Phakamani looked me

Him: Let's go fetch Lwethu

Me: What?

Him: Nothing will happen

Phakamisa gave Bulelwa a gun

Junior: Phakamisa I'm warning you...

Senior: Bulelwa knows how to use it!

Junior: Keep her out of this

Senior: She is already in now!

Junior: Mxxm!

We walked out to the car , we were driving a different car.

I buckled my seatbelt and we drove to Lwethu's school.

Junior: Look , stay calm....act normal and don't panic okay? I have your back.

As we were about to approach the school we changed seats, I was now driving and Junior was at the backseat lying low.

I entered the school and Lwethu was waiting for me.

Me: Hello baby

Him: Mama

We walked to the car and got in , I started the engine.

" Drive to Magxaki" Said Junior

Me: Why?

Him: Just do as I'm telling you

I nodded

Lwethu: Why you hiding?

Junior: I'm sick

Lwethu: Okay , don't worry mommy will give you medicine.

Me: My purse is at the house...My medication.

Junior: Relaxjust focus

I noticed that there was a car following us

Me: We are being followed

Junior : That's the plan...Just focus

I don't want to lie, I started to panic

Junior: Relax....Everything is under control...They think you alone

Me: Okay

Junior: Phakamisa is in Blawa (New Brighton) pretending to be me....so they think they wining.

Me: Okay

I arrived at the house , I didn't even have keys.

Lwethu: Yeppyyyy! I'm gonna see Daddy!

Me: I don't have keys Phakamani

He handed me a key

Me: What is this?

Him: Sis'Tixo...Key in English

Me: I can see

Him: Then why ask?

Me: How did you get it?

Him: We don't have time, move

Me: Okay!

I said as we got out of the car, we went inside the house.

Lwethu: I'm hungry

I opened the fridge and check for something to eat.

I just made him cereal

Him: Ayityiwa emini (You don't eat cereal at the afternoon)

Me: Just eat

Knock knock knock.... My body jumped. I swallowed very hard and went to open, trying to stay calm.

I open the door , three guys walked in .

" Finally!"

Said one of the guys as they walked in.

Guy2: Poor PK...he can't protect you now

Guy1: We don't have time let's start moving.

One of them grabbed me

Guy3: And the boy?

Guy1: Shoot!

Me: No!

I heard a gun shot , I covered my eyes.

Then there was shooting, I felt someone grabbing me and walked me to the car and drove.

It was Phakamani

Me: My son ...

Him: Junior has that under control

Me: Who are you?

He lowered his poloneck and I saw the Tatoo.

Me: This is confusing

Him: They didn't see me.... either did they see Junior. He will follow them and will get that pig.

He just dropped me home and left, Lwethu followed with some guy.

He hugged me tight

Him: I'm scared

Me: You okay... No one will hurt you.

Later...

Lwethu was sleeping upstairs , I was panicking at the lounge.

The door opened, They walked in.

Junior: What now?

He said as he sat down

Senior: I want him to die a slow painful death

Junior: What's the plan?

Senior: I will start with his family and kill them in front of him

Junior: Hold it right there...Let's leave the family

Senior: He killed my niece and Raped your wife.

Junior: But still...No bro

Senior: Kutheni ingathi ndizoqala ngawe??? (It seems like I'm gonna start with you!)

He pointed him with the gun

Junior: As if you would dare!

Bulelwa: Stop it!

Senior : Undiqedela njabulo kanjani Phakamani (Phakamani killing my joy) with this Salvation shit! He is becoming soft and I hate it!

Junior: After this I'm done with this life, I'm tired of living like this....

Senior: Shut up! There is no out in this and you know that

Junior: Nothing is impossible with God

Senior: Uzodutyulwa uthi saaa , uthethe izilwini ngomzuzu. (You gonna get shot and begin to speak in tongues) because the gun doesn't ask if you born again or not

Junior: Uyayithethi Kaka kanjani!

Senior showed astonished facial expression.

Senior: Fire!!!! In the name of Jesus!!!

Junior: Go ahead make fun

Senior: You were swearing, so I'm chasing that spirit away for you bro

Junior : Mxxm....

Bulelwa: Remember Killer is in the boot

Senior: Maka pake! (Let him chill)

Junior: Use shit street!!!! (He is in Shit street)

They giggled

Senior: Oh Jesus!

Phakamani stare at him

Senior: What? I'm practising..... you never know

He said going out and brought him in. Actually he was flying, I'm sure he got a fly kick.

Senior: Hallelujah!

Junior: Okay stop it now...

Senior: Killer the guy....the man!

He said walking to him

Killer: Fuck you!

Senior: I love you too

Killer: I should have killed you that night

Senior : I'm Phakamisa kay 1.....uyandibona okanye undithi see? (I'm Phakamisa one time, can you see??)

Junior: Tell him....

Senior: If you touch one of us , you touch the other.

Bulelwa: I will go check on Lwethu

Killer: I don't mind dying, I'm already death

Junior: Who said we gonna kill you? Suphapha! (Don't be foward)

Senior: His Mother or Daughter first?☹️

Junior: Mmm☹️

Killer: Don't involve them

Me: You killed my son!!!!

Killer: You infected me with HIV

Phakamisa was shocked, he looked at Phakamani...

Senior: Heee ntanga awusatsho nyatheli cable! (bro you didn't mention you are HIV positive)

Junior: You didn't ask

Senior: Suzifihla izinto ezinje, yazi bendizokuncedisa utya ARVs ... (Don't hide such thing, I was gonna help you take the medication)

Junior: Bhanxekile (You crazy)

Senior: Besingekho lapho! (We were not there)...😄😄😄😄😄

He started laughing,

Junior: Bro

Senior: Soo Killaz Are you that jealous of PK junior that you went to sleep with his wife....so that you can also be HIV +? Like busithi nam ndiyayifuna le HIV!

He laughed so hard and loud that Killer boiled out of anger.

As he was about to punch Phakamisa, Phakamani pointed him with a gun

Junior: Wrong move! If I were you I wouldn't do that.

He tightened his jaws

Senior: Come, punch me....

Me: Lwethu can't see this...Loyiso will be angry

Killer: Loyiso...

He laughed

Me: What?

Him: Nothing

Senior rubbed his hands together and that meant only one thing.

Senior: How about , we start by cutting his....Penis

Junior: That's a great idea

They smiled at each other

To be continued

It's short I know....I'm sorry

Season 2

Insert 19

"WAIT..."

Said bloet as PK was pulling Killer's pants down .

PK: What?

Bloet: I was thinking...

PK: Okay....

Bloet: I was not there when he raped our Wife

I looked at him

PK: Get to the point

Bloet: Killer van die Killers (Killer of the Killers)...

Killer looked at him

Bloet: Can you please show me , how you raped her

Killer looked at him Amazed

Bloet: What kind? Don't you understand what I'm saying?

Killer: Just fucken kill me

Bloet: That would be easy....Mmmm wait....

He took out his phone and called Someone

Bloet: Who lyk hulle? (howzit?)Kyk hier my brother, ek het n Moetjie vir jou....
(Look my brother I have a lady for you)....Hahaha....Jy wiet(You know)...Naai
man(No man)....Duidelik !

He hung up

PK: Ronnie????

Bloet : Qondile (Yes)

They bust in Laughter

Killer: No no no

PK: Yes yes yes

Bloet: 1 +1?

PK: Yintoni ngoku nge Maths?

Bloet: Nah bro , I'm practising yabo?

PK: Mxm

He went upstairs and came back with Lwethu

PK: And then?

Bloet: He is leaving with Bulelwa , I don't want him to see any of this

PK: Moja (sure)

Bloet: Phaaaaaaa!

PK: Whuuuuu!

They said to frighten him and it worked.

Bloet: Bambolwam kwedini....still remember that film?

He didn't answer

Bulelwa left with Lwethu and I was sitting at one of the high chairs, ready for action.

Killer: Why do you always get away with everything?

He asked PK

PK: Because ndiyibaba kwedini! (Because I'm a boss boy)

Killer: You slept with her, I loved her!!!!!!!

PK: So this is about Amanda? Who came to my house and begged me for my dick?

Killer: I loved her

Me: So you were busy cheating on me?

PK: Not now Hlubikazi

I jumped from the chair and walked to him

Me: I was loyal to you Phakamani....

Bloet: Cut !

He showed the cut signal , we looked at him

Bloet: Bravo!!!

He said clapping his hands

Him: Now, let's focus on him

Killer: I was your loyal friend, I covered for you, I stood by you but WENA!(YOU)
You treated me like your messenger and Toy! Everything was about you. Killer do
this Killer do that....

PK: Bambe apho! (Hold it right there)

Bloet: I think I like this show, can I have some popcorns

He sat sitting at the arm rest

PK: How many time did you double cross me and I forgave you? Were you not
the one that Stole my R25 000? Were you not the one that sold me to the cops?

He showed a shocked facial expression

PK: Oh you think I wouldn't find out?

Killer:....

PK: I took you in , when you had nothing. I bought you a house, car and paid for
your sisters Fees at Varsity didn't I?

He nodded

PK: I'm still your Boss with a capital B ! I trusted you and made you my right hand
man . What did you do?????????

Killer: But still , that didn't give you a right to fuck my woman

PK: Woman?

He giggled

PK: You call THING a woman? Ma8 sesuka phaa (Ma8 also slept with her)

Killer: ...

PK: Nca nca nca boy....You played with fire..

Bloet: Umlilo, Woo PK,Umlilo Uyatshisa uzungawothi! Uzungawothi! (Singing)

We looked at him

Bloet: Yintoni nandijonga ingathi ndiphethi Mic🎤? (Why looking at me as if I'm holding a Mic?)

PK: Uyadelela Killer yazi! (You disrespectful Killer, you know?)

Bloet: What do we do with people like him?

PK: Discipline!!!

Bloet: Yizo!

They fist bumped , someone buzz at the gate. PK went to check and came back followed by a chubby coloured guy with a lot of tattoos.

Bloet & Guy: Aweh!

They said in unison

PK closed the door

Guy: Tate Gazi

Bloet: Iyoooh

The guy started singing the words and Bloet was doing the "Tate Gazi " Dance .

PK: Cut!

He was dead serious

Guy: Wat is met hom (What's with him?)

Bloet: Jealousy

Guy: Jealousy makes you nasty

Bloet: And ugly too!

PK: Whatever!

Bloet: Ronnie...She is all yours

Ronnie put on a nasty look

PK: She is still a virgin

Ronnie smiled

Ronnie: Pragtig! (Perfect!)

Killer: No no no....please guys

PK: He raped my wife, I want you to give him the same experience.

Bloet: Ride him my broer!

Ronnie: Sure sure!

Killer begged but Ronnie walked closer, he pulled him closer. Killer tried to fight but he was over powered.

He undressed him

Bloet: Use protection, he is not clean. HIV is swinging on his blood.

Ronnie: Okay

PK went upstairs and came back with a box of condoms.

PK: Enjoy yourself my broer!

Killer: I'm sorry PK

PK : Mpumlo zam zivalekile andikuva! Uthini?(My nose are blocked can't hear you)

Killer: Please

He begged

Ronnie: Turn around!

I forced him to bend and he inserted Killer jumped and screamed

PK: Njani nalento? Awuyifunu xa isiza kuwe?(You don't like it when it comes to you?)

Bloet: He is just blushing

PK: Oh I see , hayi marn Ronnie

He said imitating a blushing woman's voice and they laughed out loud , enjoying the scene.

Ronnie held him tight moving back and forth.

Me: This is too much for me!

I went upstairs, PK followed

Me: I want to be alone

Him: Are you okay

I nodded

Him: I promise once this is over, you will start living a normal life.

Me: I guess

He pulled me closer to him and placed his lips on mine. We kissed, I quickly broke the kiss and gave him a hot slap

Me: I still hate you !

Him: I still love you , always remember

He let go of me and went back down stairs.

I undressed and wore my p.js and got under blanket. I thought about my life, I'm just a mess , Will I never have a normal life just like everyone else?

I fell asleep in my thoughts

Following morning...

I was woken up by Bloet

Me: I will kill you!

Him: Oh shame... you wish!

Me: Can't someone have peace in this house

Him: Depends

Me: What do you want?

Him: Talk to you

Me: About?

Him: You and PK

Me: No

Him: He loves you....Since niyinyathele noy2 cable-(Since you both HIV positive -)

I cut him mid sentence

Me: Get out

Him: Andifuni (I don't want to)

Me: I'm warning you

Him: or what? You gonna take me to hearing or suspend me?

Me: Phakamisa, I'm not in the mood

Him: Yoy pregnant with his child

Me: Point of correction.... This could be Loyiso's child

Him: Jesus! So....My brother is Joseph? Banjiswe Amalahla? Tshisaaa Maria!

Me: You such irritating

Him: Hayi...This needs prayers....I should fast and pray for you two!

I just stood up and went to the bathroom.

Later on...

I was preparing lunch, Bloet walked dancing

Me: And then?

Him: Ibangathi uyayibambi roof!(Singing) (Hold the roof)

Me: ...

Him: When are you finishing?

Me : I'm not your wife!

Him: Do you know that I'm also your husband?

Me: You wish

Him: When PK dies , I will have to take care of you

"BHANXEKILE!" (YOU MAD!)

Said PK as he walked in

Bloet: Awufunwa ke! (You not wanted)

PK: Iyakufuna? (Does it concern you?)

Bloet: Kunzima (It's difficult!)

He said sighing

PK: You should start getting a wife

Bloet: Yazi nyansile? (You right)

PK: Yeah

Bloet: Onikayo when are you finalising the divorce?

PK: Fuck you!

Bloet: What now?

PK: Stay away from my wife!

He said pointing him with a knife

Bloet: Yhuuu akudlalwa nawe? (Can't someone joke with you)

PK: I'm telling you

Bloet: Fire!!!

PK: Mxxm

I finished cooking and dish out for everyone, Lwethu was also home.

Me: What happened to Killer?

PK: Ronnie is stil playing with him

Me: Are gonna?

PK: Yes but we want him to suffer first

Me: Okay

To be continued....

Season 2

Insert 20

Few days later...

It was a Sunday morning, Everyone was preparing for church. I was busy making breakfast at the kitchen.

Bloet walked in, wearing formal, a navy two piece Suite with a white shirt , he was trying to tie his black tie.

Me: Mmm...

Him: I looked ridicules.... ingathi ndinguMxhaga, popey spinach!

I smiled

Me: Let me help you

I fixed his tie , he was really uncomfortable

Me: There you go...

"Mmmm kumnadi kunxityiswana amaTie" (Mmm... it is nice here, you helping each other with the tie"

Said PK as he walked in

Bloet: Mona Yintoni? (What is the jealousy for?)

PK: Remember you have limitations

Bloet: Oh King! MFAZI Wethu, please fix his as well!

PK: Mxm

Bloet: It's Sunday for Christ sake and it's my first day at church. Can you please not spoil that for me?

PK: ...

Me: I made breakfast

PK was already helping himself

Bloet: Can't I just wear a jean with a t-shirt

Me: Phakamisa you look perfect

PK: iLizwi lethu namhlanje solifumana ku John 5 ...(The word for today , will be in the book of john 5..)

Bloet: Njezu ngeyantoni?

PK: Heee....Worse I'm talking to myself

Me: Don't be jealous PK

PK: Hahaha but Honestly you look funny....

Me: PHAKAMANI!

Bloet: Ndiijike kemnake! (I will change my name)

PK: I was joking, you look like James Bond

Bloet: Caba ndihalf? (So I'm stupid?)

Me: You look like Phakamisa, Phakamani is just jealous

Bloet: I don't need this tie...

He angrily loosen it

PK: Better!

He said biting his bread

Bloet: Fuck you vah?

PK: Nawe!

Me: Like seriously?

I went to check on Lwethu and Bulelwa and they were done.

I wore my heels and took my bag. We went downstairs.

PK was on top of the counter

Me: ...

I just stare at him

Him: It's him!

PK childish ever since Phakamisa arrived

Bloet: I'm driving!

PK: You high !

Bloet: Okay I will drive my own car

PK: Better!

Lwethu: Tate Gazi, can I ride with you?

Bloet: No problem Ntwanaz!

I just walked to the car, Phakamani unlocked it and we drove to church.

We were quit early, We took the third row.

PK went to join the worshiping team, I never heard him sing.

Bloet went after him and took a Mic as well.

I just wish I could disappear into thin air. Let me prophesy...Can I prophesy?

I see a disaster coming!

"Ikhon'iMvana!

Ikhon'iMvana (Ikhon'iMvana)

Yahlatywa ngenxayethu (Yabonwa!)

Yabonwa , ngamaJuda (iLenga)

Ilenga emthini(Singing)

I looked up and that was PK singing, my jaws dropped. I didn't know he could sing.

The keyboard was playing perfect, I just couldn't believe it was really him.

Bloet was singing along lol this dude

"COVER ME MY LORD...COVER ME MY LORD...COVER ME MY LORD."

It was Bloet singing, lol this guy never cease to amaze me. I could see the Shock on peoples faces, questioning each other who Phakamisa was and they could not tell him to sit down. He was already up there and had no intentions of sitting down.

Him: Under your shelter!

Church: Under your shelter..

Him: OH COVER!

we sang and dance, rejoicing. I was just amazed, this was still a surprise for me.
I mean like, why didn't I see this coming?

After a while...

"Jehovah is your Name...." Phakamani started to sing, Everyone started worshipping.

After a while people started to pray , others praying in tongues.

" Ca..ca.cara...cara..Qua...qua...ntum"

I opened my eyes and looked, Bloet was praying pretending to be speaking in tongues.

AMEN! (that Xhosa Amen!)

Bloet: Jesus! GU...GU..SHE...SHE! FIRE!

I was so embarrassed, beyond human understanding.

Later...

We were greetings people after church. I took Bloet by the hand.

Me: You!

Him: People will think I'm your husband , let go of my hand

Me: Mxxm

After a while we drove back home.

PK: And what was that?

Bloet: Andilambe eloxesha! (I'm hungry)

He said walking to the kitchen

PK: Did you had to embarrass me like that? Khona bufuna nton kwi Worshiping Team? (What were you doing at the worshipping team?)

Bloet: I will answer you when I'm done eating!

He yelled, we followed him to the kitchen

Me: Cars really?

Him: People were talking in tongues, so andithandi usheka! (I don't like to be left behind)

He said taking out ham

PK: Cara cara? GUSHESHE?????

Him: Ndiyibaba, they were so blessed!

Me: This is not funny

Bloet: I wasn't laughing

PK: I wish I can....

Bloet: I think I'm ready to take a wife

We looked at him at the same time

We: No!

Him: Yhuuu!

PK: No Phakamisa

Him: She is so beautiful

Me: No

Him: Actually, I was not asking you, I was telling you!

PK: Bro No

Bloet: Cover me my Lord!

He sang as he was biting his sandwich

Him: Yhooo....nindenzela stress bonanje! (You stressing me) why are you looking at me as if ndinivimba isonka?

PK: Back off

Him: Jesus!

The following day...

It was around 9 pm , I was about to go to bed when I heard the Twins arguing.

"Phakamisa, what if this is a trap?"

Bloet: Trap? Don't start

PK: I still need you bro

Bloet: Stop being a sissy...nothing will happen to me

I walked in

Bloet: Since you don't want to come with. Why don't you make things right with your wife?

PK: Bloed!

Him: Bloetwith a small letter t!

PK: Bloed

Him: Mxm

PK: I'm off to sleep

Bloet: You won't even get a cent from this money

PK: ...

He went upstairs

Bloet: Take care of him!

Then he went out.

I went to check on PK ,

Me: Are you okay?

I asked as I walked inside the room

Him: I hate this life...

I sat next to him

Me: Salvation is not automatic

Him: What if I get tempted and....

Me: The Grace of God is sufficient for you.

Him: I'm gonna run out of cash, I have a criminal record and-

I cut him mid sentence

Me: Have faith in God and trust him. Nothing is impossible with God!

Him: What if he doesn't come back?

Me: Let's hope he does

Him: I wish...

He covered his face

Me: Come here

I pulled him close to my chest

Me: I can see you really want to change and I'm proud of you.

Him: I'm leaving

I broke from his embrace

Me: Where too?

He stood up

Him: Somewhere far...where I can start my life afresh .

Me: What about your life here?

Him: I don't have a life here...

Ouch! That hurts

Me: Oh

Him: The Apostle is going to start a new branch in George, so I'm going with him.

Me: Okay

Then there was awkward silence .

Me: What if it is yours?

I asked looking down. He sighed

Him: I don't know

Me: Oh

Him: I hurt you so much, I don't deserve you!

He took out all his guns

Me: What you doing?

Him: I'm gonna destroy them

He said putting them in a black bag

Me: Does Phakamisa knows about this?

He shook

Him: It's time we go our separate way. I choose Life.

He zipped the bag and sighed

Me: Wow!

Him: I'm leaving Friday

Me: So soon?

He moved closer to me

Him: I love you and will never forget you

He cupped my face

Him: I will sign the divorce papers, I spoke to my lawyer.

Me:...

Him: I want you to be free , please do me a favour

Me: What?

Him: Don't give up on Loyiso, he really loves you.

Me: But-

He cut me mid sentence

Him: You deserve the best

He placed his lips on mine, I responded.

He held on my waist, we kissed.

.

.

.

We were now both breathing heavily. He was lying next to me.

I know what I did was wrong but it felt so damn good.

He kissed my forehead, I smiled.

Him: I love you

Me:...

Him: I will miss you

Me: Don't go

Him: If I stay here, I might go back to my old habits.

Me: ...

Him: Find Loyiso and make things right with him.

Me: I'm HIV positive

Him: Love is unconditional...That dude loves you.

Following morning...

PK stood up and picked up the condoms that were lying on the floor and went to the bathroom.

I dressed up and tiptoed out of the room.

" Ayisecace! (Jumpcase) " That was Bloet

Me: Ayikufuni!(Doesn't concern you!)

Bloet: Tshisaaa!

I entered my room and closed the door.

Later on...

We were watching Tv , Lwethu was at school. It was only me and PK.

Someone knocked at the door , we looked at each other.

I shrugged my shoulders, he stood up and went to open , I saw PK reversing with his hands up.

" I was waiting for this day...for a very long time "

Loyiso walked in pointing a gun at PK

To be continued...

Final insert

" Loyiso put the gun down..."

Said PK as he was moving backwards , his hands was still up.

Me: Loyiso!

I was shocked

Him: Lovey dovey , you giggling! Kumnadi

PK: Please put the gun down!

Loyiso closed the door with his foot and it slammed.

Him: Limise after everything????

He was looking at me but kept the gun pointed at PK.

Me: It's not what you think...

I said shivering, PK was so calm

PK: Your hands are shivering

He tightened his grip

PK: I can tell by the way you holding the gun that it's your first time.

Him: Shut up, SHUT UP!

He emphasized the last words

Me: Loyiso, you will go to jail...please

Him: I loved you Limise...I gave you my all...Is this how you repay me?

Me:...

PK: Bra put down the gun before my crazy brother walks in

Him: You think I'm scared of him?

PK: Look Loyiso...He won't think twice shooting you if he may walk in

Him: As if I'm scared of him

PK: Don't say I didn't warn you

PK walked to the Sofa, I heard a gun shot!

My eyes quickly went to PK

PK: Damn...

He held on his thigh , and blood covered his plants. I rushed to him

Me: Are you okay?

I looked at Loyiso , he was panicking

PK: Tell him to go, bloet will be here any minute.

Me: Loyiso please go

Him: Fuck you Phakamani! You destroyed my life , you destroyed my marriage. You almost killed me and my son. He was still young. I WILL NEVER FORGIVE YOU!

PK: I'm sorry for putting you through that but you need to go! GO!

Loyiso: You are a shame to men do you know that?

PK: Loyiso don't let anger ruin your reputation... You are not a murderer.

Him: Shut up!

PK: I'm sorry for everything. I wish one day you can forgive me.

Loyiso: I will never forgive you, NEVER!

PK: I will finalize the divorce , she will be all yours!

Loyiso: I don't want your remnants!

He called me "Remnants?"

PK: I know you still love her, don't let anger destroy everything.

Loyiso: Why you talking like this?

PK: Life is too short ...you don't know tomorrow, Make the best out of today.

He looked at me

Him: I know you still love him, you will need him and he is still angry .

Loyiso: Hello! I'm still here

He said waving his hands

PK: Tell her the truth...

He was referring to Loyiso

Him: What truth?

PK: The truth we both know!

Loyiso: I don't know what you talking about

PK: Onikayo we all make mistakes , he was acting out of anger

Me: What is going on here?

PK: I tested when I was coming from prison. I was negative, I was negative before we got married.

Me: So I infected you?

He looked at Loyiso, he looked away

PK: I knew it was not me but because I loved you. I didn't want you to stress about it. That is why I took the blame... I'm not stupid I know what condoms are for !

Loyiso: I should have killed you!

PK: Come clean Loyiso...the truth will set you free.

Loyiso: Shut up!

Loyiso was pacing up and down, PK was holding his knee in deep pains.

PK: If you don't tell her truth..I

"OKAY OKAY!"

He exclaimed , as he stood at middle of the lounge.

Loyiso: I was drunk....I needed....

He took a deep breath and exhaled.

Him: She was there and everything happened fast....I swear it was not my intentions...

Me: So you cheated on me?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: You slept with another woman without protection?

Him: I-

Me: When did this happen?

I was now standing, I was furious

Him: It was a once off thing, I swear!

He walked closer to me, I moved back.

Me: I trusted you

Tears filled my eyes, I had mixed emotions.

All the memories flashed back, when he didn't want to even touch me and my food. How he blamed me, all along it was him, he brought the virus.

My vision was blur

Me: It was you?

Him: I'm sorry

Me:...

I was slowly breaking inside, I felt sharp pains .

I moaned out of pain, he came close .

Me: Don't!

PK: Take her to the hospital!

He exclaimed, the pain increased.

I was rushed to the hospital

A while later...

It was a false alarm, the Doctor said I'm stressing too much bla bla bla.

I was now resting, looking at the ceiling when I heard the door opening.

I slowly looked at the entrance and It was the Twins.

"You should have let me Kill..." That was Phakamisa, he stopped as our eyes met.

PK: Can you just stop?

Bloet: Mxxxm uyikaka kanjani!

PK:....

He limped to the bed

Him: How are feeling?

Me: I'm okay

Him: I'm sorry

Me: For what?

Him: Earlier ...

Me: Take me with

I said in a low tone

Him: Huh?

Me: I want to go with you to George

He pause for a second

Bloet: Need an interpreter? Or are you deaf?

PK showed him the middle finger

Bloet: The rest of the fingers are pointing at you

PK: Go to hell

Bloet: Right after you

PK: Shut up!

Bloet: I will call Loyiso, to come sort you out

PK : You know what?

Bloet: What?

PK: Get out?

Bloet: As if this your house

He pulled a chair and sat down folding his arms

Bloet: Pull me out!

PK: I'm not gonna argue with you...

He was pissed and he looked at me

Me: What do you say?

He scratched his head

Him: You can't

Me: Why?

Him: Loyiso needs you

I looked away

Me: I love you

He held my hands and sat next to the bed

Him: Onikayo

He said in a soft tone, I looked at him and his eyes reminded me of the first day we met. The first day he told me he love me, our first kiss.

Him: I love you too

Me: So...

Him: I still have demons to deal with, I still have to find myself....

Me: What does that mean?

Him: I can't go with you. You belong to Loyiso

I sat up straight

Me: I belong with you

Him: No...he pulled back my hands that was on his face

Him: I raped you, I caused you pain, You deserve better!

Bloet: I think I should call Ronnie

PK: Can you just mind your own business ?

He exclaimed without looking at him

Bloet: Mouth shut!

PK shift the focus on me

Him: As I was saying...Loyiso loves you. Forgive him, give him a second chance!

Me: He-

He put his finger on my mouth and leaned for a kiss

"Like seriously?" Said Bloet very pissed

PK ignored him, he continued with the kiss.

I wish he wouldn't stop , he held me tight.

Bloet: Arg! I'm out!

I heard the door slamming, then PK pulled back.

I slowly opened my eyes

Him: You will always be in my heart

Me: What does that mean?

Him: Please forgive him, He loves you and he would do anything for you.

Me: No-

Him: Shiiii....Lwethu needs both his parents and this could be his...

He pointed at my tummy

Me: But it could be yours as well

Him: You are a brave woman...And you have been through a lot and still here....surviving.

Me:...

Him: You will be happy trust me.

Following day....

I was discharged, I was going back to my flat, my brother was suppose to come fetch me but he was busy , so PK came to fetch me.

He helped me to the car, he opened the front door, adjusted the seat and I got in. As soon as he was about to enter his side. I heard gun shots and a car speed off .

I rushed to him, he was lying on the floor and there was a pool of Blood.

I knelt down and tried to pick him up, my hands were covered in blood.

Me: Phakamani

Him: I love you

I was panicking, my hands were shivering

Me: HELP!!!!!!

I cried out loud,

Me: PK please don't do this to me

Blood was coming from his mouth

Him: I killed with a gun, I die by a gun...

Me: PK please

He held my hand

Him: At least I know where I'm going....

Me: You not going anywhere, you hear me!

I yelled for help again

Him: Ta...ta..take care...of Lo..Loyiso.

His teeth were covered in blood and more blood came out.

Me: Don't talk....

Security guards came, rushing

Me: I need a Doctor !

PK:Ple...plea...Ph..phak...phaka...misa.....Lo...loyi...so

I was in tears, They took him away, I took my phone and informed Bloet.

He came within seconds as if he was nearby.

"PHAKAMANI!" he yelled as soon as he entered the premises.

Me: They shot him!

He was furious, he was hell

Him: Where is my brother????

He banged at the receptionist's desk

Me: In there!

I pointed , he passed me and headed to the room. The nurses tried to stop him but he was too powerful for them.

"Phakamisa?" Asked the Doctor, he nodded

Doc: He has been calling your name.

He went inside the room.

A while later...

The police were at the hospital, asking questions . I was still traumatized, I didn't answer anything, I never saw bloet so angry , he was a monster, his eyes were red.

Me: What happened?

He didn't answer me, he just walked out.

.

.

.

He came back after a while followed by Loyiso and they went inside the room.

I was so curious, I wanted to see him but they didn't let me in.

Me: I am his wife for Christ sake!

I exclaimed, Bloet and Loyiso walked and I was called in.

Me: Please don't leave me...

I said walking in, I sat next to him

PK: Baby....

Me: Yes it's me

Him: I'm leaving now, Luthando is calling me

Tears filled my eyes

Me: Please fight

He smiled

Him: The-re is is Ti-me for for Every -thing. My time is Up...I lived life, I killed, loved, helped , destroyed . I'M NOT PROUD! I wish I met the Lord earlier.

I had a lump on my throat

Me: I love you too

Him: Forgive Loyiso

He was stuttering

Me: Phakamani !

Him: He will make sure he gives you all the Love you need.

It was like he was running out of breath

Me: Baby please

Him: I left everything in your name...There is money at the basement. Use it wisely....

He kept quiet

Me: Phakamani

Him: Sing me my favourite song

Me: Phakamani no don't leave, promise me

Him: Take care of My brother...

Me: Stop okay!

I exclaimed!

Him: Hold my hands...

I did that

Him: Jerusalem ikhaya lam

He started to sing, I couldn't hold my tears.

I sang the song, he tightened his grip.

I sang the song with tears flowing, I stopped.

Him: Don't stop

I sang , the machine started beeping

Me: Phakamani don't leave...

My voice was shaking, my eyes filled with tears

Him: I love you Hlubikazi, Ndlebentle zombini, Mashwabade...

Me: Nurse!

Bloet rushed in

He was still holding my hands

PK: I love you Bro!

Then the machine stopped

"DONT DO THIS TO ME MAN!"

shouted Bloet as he was rocking him back and forth. Tears escaped from his eyes.

The doctor checked on him and at his watch

Doc: Time of Death...

I cried out of agony with my hands on my head.

They covered him, shook him , hoping he will wake up.

"Phakamani please , don't leave!"

.

.

.

A week later and few days later...

It was Saturday morning, it was his funeral.

I was wearing all black, I still didn't believe he was gone, gone for good, never coming back.

I found myself crying, I had his photo in my hands, he was smiling.

"BHANXEKILE " I heard him say in my mind.

I missed him, " I don't know if you are a half tank , or a quarter tank but surely you one of those" I could hear him saying those word when he was pissed off.

He was not a saint but I loved him.

I had flash backs of the past.

" I love you, always remember that" That is what he said as if he knew he was leaving.

I was now in tears , the glass frame was filled with tears.

I was sobbing, I wish I could wake up from this bad dream.

I felt someone touching me, I just landed on their chest.

"It's okay "

That was bloet, I just kept quiet and didn't utter a single word.

Later on...

We were at the church, the church was so full. There were a lot of people at the funeral.

I was at the front row looking down, People were talking all good stuff about him. I was shocked to see my brother at podium, he spoke about how they grew up , I noticed they were once best friends. He was laughing in between.

Few minutes later...

The pastor started preaching, the message was powerful.

"Wena Thixo ungoxolelayo...(You are a forgiving God)

Wena Thixo ungonomuso..(You are a God of Mercy)

Kukaningi ngikuphoxa wena Nkosi sam(I have disappointed you My God)

Ndenzi zono ...(I sinned)

Namahlazo Nkosi yam (And disgrace you my God)

Kodwa wena Nkosi yam usalibuz'igama lam...(But God, you still Call my name)"

He sang as he went to kneel in front of the coffin.

He was in tears, he sang the song till the end. The keyboard was playing softly, I saw tears escaping my eyes.

After singing he said the following word:

Him: I will keep my promise....I Will quit, I will change, I will be a better person, I will take care of your wife. I will take care of our Mother and Bulelwa. I will be responsible, I will protect them, I will move to P.E...

He couldn't finish he just prayed asking God to change him to become a better man.

That was the day he gave his life to Christ.

At the grave yard...

"Hamba kakuhle, Lisa, Jambase, zangomva eliweni..."

I cried out loud as the choir was humming a song, the coffin was slowly going down.

I was Making a scene , everyone was staring at me others were crying.

Bloet held and hugged me tight.

Few months later...

"Push...." said a nurse

I used all my energy and I heard a baby cry, I was breathing heavily and wet from the sweat.

Bloet was next to me, holding my hand.

Bloet: Wow

That is all he said

I gave birth to a baby girl , I named her Phakama , right after his father.

It was PK's Baby , she looked like Luthando when he was still a baby , she was a female version of Phakamani. She was so tiny and cute.

Few hours later...

Bloet was holding the baby

Him: He looks like me

He said in a low tone

Me: He looks like Phakamani

He smiled

Him: I miss him Onikayo

Me: We all miss him

Him: I promise to take care of you and treat her as mine

Me: Thank you

Him: I promised Phakamani....

I smiled

Him: I'm gonna call her Nomathamsanqa!

I stare at him

Me: Don't start!

He giggled , Loyiso walked in.

Bloet handed me Phakama

Him: I will give you space

He said walking out, Loyiso looked around headed to the bed.

Him: Hi

He was nervous

Me: Hi

I smiled

Him: I heard...

Me: You don't have to stay if you don't want too

Him: I love you and will accept her and raise her as my own. I promised Phakamani

I smiled, life is too short to hold grudges, the death of Phakamani made me realise that

Him:I love you

Me: I love you too

He pecked my lips and cuddle with the baby

Him: She is beautiful

I smiled

Few weeks later...

We bought a house new house , it was big with a swimming pool and a playground.

I used some of the money and started my own business.

Bloet was visiting everyday, that meant Phakama had two Fathers.

Lwethu loved her sister, he would watch her sleeping.

Lebakeng moved in with us , he was still stuying at UJ.

I guess that is the End.....